





lang="en">

Beautiful Wife and Genius Son

Table of Contents

1. [Character Introduction](#)
2. [One](#)
3. [Two](#)
4. [Three](#)
5. [Four](#)
6. [Five](#)
7. [Six](#)
8. [Seven](#)
9. [Eight](#)
10. [Nine](#)
11. [Ten](#)
12. [Eleven](#)
13. [Twelve](#)
14. [Thirteen](#)
15. [Fourteen](#)
16. [Fifteen](#)
17. [Sixteen](#)
18. [Seventeen](#)
19. [Eighteen](#)
20. [Nineteen](#)
21. [Twenty](#)
22. [Twenty-One](#)
23. [Twenty-Two](#)
24. [Twenty-Three & Twenty-Four Summaries](#)
25. [Twenty-Five](#)
26. [Twenty-Six](#)

27. [Twenty-Seven](#)
28. [Twenty-Eight](#)
29. [Twenty-Nine](#)
30. [Thirty](#)
31. [31](#)
32. [32](#)
33. [33](#)
34. [34](#)
35. [35](#)
36. [36](#)
37. [37](#)
38. [38](#)
39. [39](#)
40. [40](#)
41. [41](#)
42. [42](#)
43. [43](#)
44. [44](#)
45. [45](#)
46. [46](#)
47. [47](#)
48. [48](#)
49. [49](#)
50. [50](#)
51. [51](#)
52. [52](#)
53. [53](#)
54. [54](#)
55. [55](#)
56. [56](#)
57. [57](#)
58. [58](#)
59. [59](#)
60. [60](#)

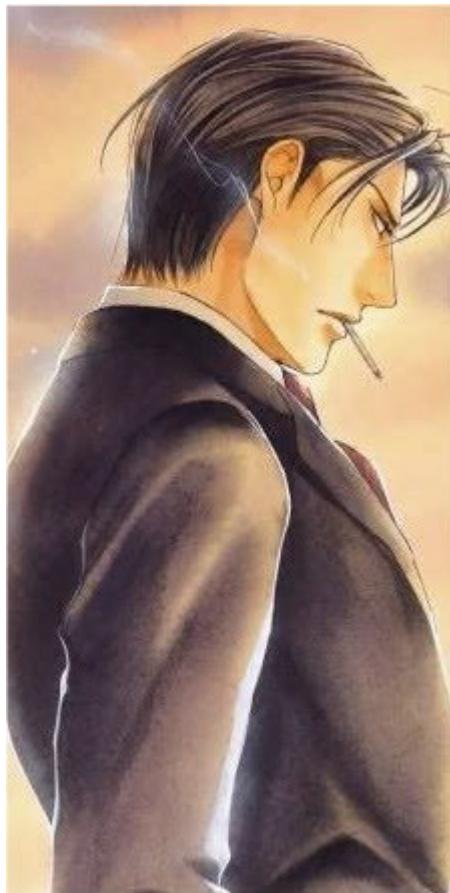
- 61. [part 1](#)
- 62. [part 2](#)
- 63. [part 1](#)
- 64. [part 2](#)
- 65. [63](#)
- 66. [64](#)
- 67. [part 1](#)
- 68. [part 2](#)
- 69. [part 1](#)
- 70. [part 2](#)
- 71. [67](#)
- 72. [68](#)
- 73. [part 1](#)
- 74. [part 2](#)
- 75. [70](#)
- 76. [71](#)
- 77. [72](#)
- 78. [73](#)
- 79. [74](#)
- 80. [75](#)
- 81. [76](#)
- 82. [77](#)
- 83. [78](#)
- 84. [79](#)
- 85. [80](#)
- 86. [81](#)
- 87. [82](#)
- 88. [83](#)
- 89. [84](#)
- 90. [85](#)
- 91. [Side Stories 1 2 3 END](#)

Character Introduction

Beautiful Wife And Genius Son (天才宝贝俏老婆) by

Si Yue Yao Yao (四月妖妖)

85 Chapters + 3 Side Stories Male Lead: Yue Gu Zui



A triad boss, rich, handsome and cold blooded.

Female Lead: Zhen Zhen



A genius scientist, beautiful and has low EQ.

YGZ + ZZ's Son: Zhen Wu



Inherits YGZ's looks and ZZ's intelligence.

Interview

1. What is something you carry everywhere with you?

YGZ: A gun.

ZZ: I prefer being indoors, specifically inside a lab.

ZW: Anything that has access to the internet.

2. What is your favorite hobby?

YGZ: Shooting.

ZZ: Experimenting.

ZW: Hacking.

3. What is your worst fear?

YGZ: My wife's cooking.

ZZ: My lab burning.

ZW: No access to the internet.

4. What is your spirit animal and why?

YGZ: A Bigfoot – has hands to hold a gun.

ZZ: An eagle – has good vision, useful for observing.

ZW: A Spider – can spin a web.

5. What is your biggest regret?

YGZ: Letting my wife escape after our first night.

ZZ: My son being a genius. I chose YGZ to be the father of my child because I thought he was a himbo.

ZW: Not reuniting my parents sooner.

Related

One



Chapter One

Five years ago.

Yue Gu Zui awoken in a hotel room. The morning sunlight shone through the floor-to-ceiling window onto his naked body that made women crazily salivate. Women would willingly drown themselves in the deep intensity of his eyes.

Yue Gu Zui sat up on the bed, rubbed his groggy head and grabbed his phone.

‘Cheng Yi, after three days I don’t want to hear Mr Wan’s name exist in Tao Nan,’ Yue Gu Zui said coldly.

Yue Gu Zui cursed the MF Wan, the MF dared to drug him.

‘Cheng Yi, compensate the woman from last night,’ Yue Gu Zui said.

‘Yes boss,’ Cheng Yi said and hung up the phone.

Cheng Yi loved to see other people in trouble. It was Mr Wan’s own stupidity for daring to drug his boss. Even if Mr Wan wanted Mr Wan’s daughter to crawl into his boss’ bed, Mr Wan’s daughter would never have the chance to be his boss’ wife.

‘Wei Qi, boss said to compensate the woman from last night,’ Cheng Yi said.

‘I received news from the hotel staff that the woman from last night died in a car crash after leaving the hotel,’ Wei Qi said.

‘Ok,’ Cheng Yi said.

Cheng Yi didn’t care the woman from last night died. He saw his boss leaving the lobby and he followed his boss to the car waiting outside the hotel for them.

The woman from last night was Zhen Zhen.

Last night Zhen Zhen dragged Nan Ma to a shady hotel bar.

‘Zhen Zhen are you really going through with your plan?’ Nan Ma asked.

‘Yes,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen had a beautiful heart shaped face. She was 1.65 metres tall and the skinny jeans she wore showed off her slender legs.

‘Ok, go and find your man,’ Nan Ma said.

Yue Gu Zui wore a black suit and he was standing in front of Zhen Zhen and Nan Ma.

‘Boss, Mr Wen is waiting for you in a private room,’ Cheng Yi said.

Yue Gu Zui nodded his head. He ignored the sultry looks women in the bar gave him and walked to the private room.

Unbeknownst to Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zui in that moment fate had secretly planned for their lives to cross.

‘Zhen Zhen, there are many ways you can have a child,’ Nan Ma said. ‘You don’t need to go through with this.’

'Nan Ma, don't worry I've thought this through properly,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Men are untrustworthy. They can leave their wife and child any moment and follow their mistresses. I don't want a man, I only want a child. I've hired a PI to follow this man for many months. The man's an Englishman. He has looks and lacks IQ. In a month he'll be leaving the country for good. I've bribed the barmen and they drugged his drinks. He's in room 1006. I'll wait for the drugs to kick in and I'll go to his room.'

'You drugged-' Nan Ma asked.

Zhen Zhen covered Nan Ma's big mouth.

'Big sister, you don't need to shout,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Lucky no one heard you. I'll call you a taxi.'

Zhen Zhen escorted Nan Ma to a taxi in front of the bar. Then she nervously walked to room '1006.' She pulled out the room key but someone opened the door for her.

Fate had led Zhen Zhen to the wrong room, room 1006 was the opposite room to the room Yue Gu Zui pulled her into.

'What are you doing-' Zhen Zhen asked.

Although Zhen Zhen planned the night, she was an anxious virgin.

Yue Gu Zui closed the door and he dragged Zhen Zhen to the bed.

One minute later...

'Ah... am I dead... why didn't anyone tell me it was this painful?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Half an hour later...

'Feels good...' Zhen Zhen said.

An hour later...

'I have no energy left...' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen vowed she would never drug another man again. She didn't know how potent the drug was.

Zhen Zhen woke up in the middle of the night. She rubbed her sore back,

dressed and left the hotel.

Nine months later...

Nan Ma visited Zhen Zhen at the hospital in the maternity ward.

'Zhen Zhen, are you sure your son's father is an Englishman?' Nan Ma asked.

Nan Ma carried the beautiful baby boy in her arms. She fell in love with her godson at first sight. But her godson didn't look like a half cast child.

'Yes, his ancestors are all Englishmen too,' Zhen Zhen said and bit a red apple.

'Then why does your son look like this?' Nan Ma asked.

'It's ok if my son looks like me,' Zhen Zhen said.

Nan Ma thought Zhen Zhen was beautiful but the baby boy's beauty in her arms surpassed Zhen Zhen by miles.

Five years later...

On a sunny spring day a beautiful five-year-old boy carried a cute small school bag on his back.

'Zhen Zhen, I don't need to go to kindergarten,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Zhen fixed her clothes and she ran to the door where her precious son was waiting for her.

'Don't you know how to call me mum?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Mum do I have to go to kindergarten?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Zhen nodded her head.

Zhen Wu sighed. 'Ok.'

Zhen Wu thought the other children at his kindergarten were naive. His teacher wasn't smart and it annoyed him to death each time his teacher squeezed his cheeks. He would rather die than admit he was a beautiful boy.

In the classroom next to Zhen Wu's classroom was a half cast boy named Bob who had blonde hair and brown eyes. Long ago Zhen Wu's mum told him he was an IVF baby and the sperm donor was an Englishman. Zhen Wu knew his mum wouldn't lie to him about his biological father's heritage but no matter how he

looked at himself, he didn't look like a half cast boy.

Zhen Wu didn't care about being a test tube baby. But he was a little envious of his classmate Xiao Jiang. Xiao Jiang's dad took Xiao Jiang to MacDonald after school. Zhen Wu hated fast food, it was Xiao Jiang having a dad to take Xiao Jiang to places that he envied. Even without his dad in his life, he was grateful he had his mum and godmother.

Zhen Zhen put out her hand. 'Zhen Wu, give me your laptop.'

Zhen Wu reluctantly opened his school bag and passed his laptop to his mum.

'Zhen Zhen, last night an old man sent me a message online,' Zhen Wu said. 'The old man said he's in trouble and needs 500K urgently. He gave me his bank account.'

'Zhen Wu, didn't I warn you that you shouldn't care about strangers online and on the streets?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I only asked him to wait for me and I'll transfer him something when I'm free,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu hacked into the old man's computer system and sent the old man a virus.

'Ok, the bus is here,' Zhen Zhen said and looked at her watch. 'Ah! It's late. I promised I'll meet Nan Ma at eight. Zhen Wu, be careful on the way to school.'

Zhen Wu watched his mum who had an IQ of 200 ran to the garage in a panicked state and shook his head. If his mum didn't have his godmother in his mum's life then he doubted his mum would survive long enough to give birth to him.

Zhen Wu stepped onto the school bus and as expected his teacher annoyed him again by squeezing his cheeks.

On the way to school, the school bus past a mansion and Zhen Wu's eyes lit up.

After school, Zhen Wu got off the school bus in front of the mansion. He pulled out his mini laptop he hid in his school bag and hacked into the mansion's security system.

'Yes!' Zhen Wu cried out.

Zhen Wu finally disabled the mansion's security system after many failed attempts in the past. He climbed over a wall... and landed on a man's shoulders.

'Little friend, can you climb down from my shoulders?' the man asked.

Zhen Wu jumped onto the ground.

'Hello uncle, I'm Zhen Wu from the school nearby,' Zhen Wu greeted politely.
'It's my pleasure to meet uncle.'

'Hello little friend, I'm a teacher,' the man said.

The man held Zhen Wu's hand. He thought Zhen Wu looked exactly like Yue Gu Zui when Yue Gu Zui was Zhen Wu's age. Except Zhen Wu's manners were cuter, it was Louis fault for spoiling Yue Gu Zui.

'Zhen Wu, do you want to eat a candy?' the man offered.

'Uncle, my mum said I can't accept food from strangers,' Zhen Wu said.

'Your mum is right,' the man said and didn't take out the wrapped candy in his pocket.

'But we're friends,' Zhen Wu said. 'Mum said I shouldn't disappoint my friends. I'm happy to accept teacher's candy.'

The man smiled while he watched Zhen Wu eat the candy.

Zhen Wu hated sweets but he acted like he loved eating sweets.

'Little friend, how did you come inside the gates?' the man asked.

There were many security guards and security cameras around the mansion's parameters. The man didn't know how a little boy like Zhen Wu could bypass security undetected.

'Teacher, I'm going to tell you my secret but you have to promise you won't tell anyone,' Zhen Wu said. 'It took me a month to successfully disable the mansion's security system.'

Zhen Wu was a natural genius. The mansion's security system was the first real challenge in his life. But he didn't want to be easily defeated by an ordinary person. It took him the longest time to disable the mansion's security system.

Unbeknownst to Zhen Wu, his grandma Ling Jia was the person who designed the mansion's security system. Ling Jia wouldn't be pleased if she knew her grandson's thought she was an ordinary person.

Zhen Wu pretended to look at his watch. 'Uncle, it's late. I need to go home. I don't want my mum to worry about me.'

The man opened the gates and he watched Zhen Wu leave.

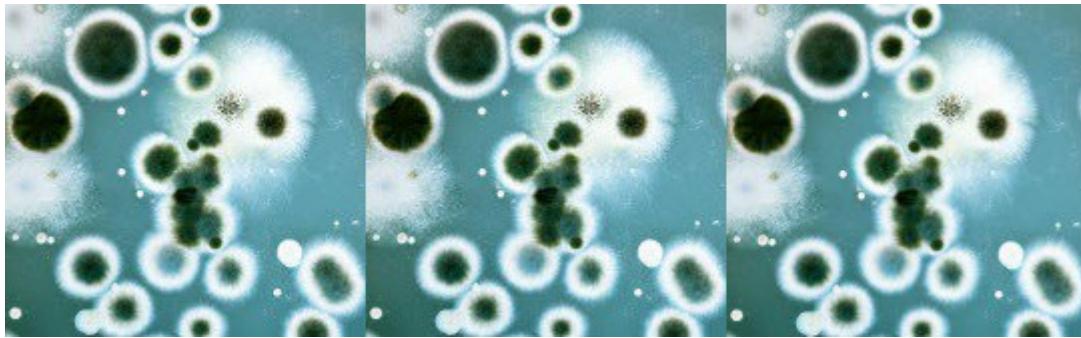
'Cesar, investigate the little boy,' the man said.

'Yes teacher,' Cesar said.

End of Chapter One

Related

Two



Chapter Two

Classical music played in a prestigious restaurant.

'Nan Ma over here,' Zhen Zhen said and waved her hand in the air.

Nan Ma walked to Zhen Zhen's reserved table by a window.

Nan Ma wore tight clothes, she ignored the lustful stares and sat opposite Zhen Zhen.

'Little sister, this isn't your style,' Na Ma said and swept her eyes around the restaurant. 'It's unlike you to waste your time eating at a place like this.'

'It was supervisor Cheng's suggestion,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen could afford eating anywhere but she hated wasting time eating at restaurants.

'Cheng Tian wants to get to know you?' Nan Ma asked.

'Big sister, don't talk about my supervisor like that,' Zhen Zhen said.

'If he asked you to eat here with him then why did you ask me to be the third wheel?' Na Ma asked.

'Big sister, last time you were mad at me for not making time to eat out with you,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I have a new research project. I'll be locked inside my lab for ten to fourteen days. So I wanted to eat with you while I'm free.'

'Little sister, are you saving time by considering this as treating me a proper meal?' Na Ma teased.

Na Ma knew Zhen Zhen for many years. Zhen Zhen was a workaholic and

would forget about everything else while Zhen Zhen worked. Luckily Zhen Wu was a genius and he knew how to take care of himself at a young age. If Zhen Zhen forgot to feed Zhen Wu, Zhen Wu would call Na Ma to cook for him.

Suddenly a man in a suit sat next to Zhen Zhen.

'Are you Zhen Zhen?' the man asked.

'Little sister, do you know this man?' Nan Ma asked.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Hello I'm Reynold,' Reynold said.

Nan Ma got a bad vibe from Reynold.

'Hello,' Zhen Zhen said politely.

'You don't know who I am?' Reynold asked.

'Why would little sister know who you are?' Nan Ma asked.

'I'm the CEO of Lei Thi and I'm Miss Zhen's blind date,' Reynold said.

'Blind date?' Zhen Zhen and Nan Ma asked.

Nan Ma looked at Zhen Zhen's obliviousness and whispered in Zhen Zhen's ear.
'Little sister, what were you doing when Cheng Tian asked you to eat with him?'

'Experimenting,' Zhen Zhen said.

Nan Ma sighed. She knew Zhen Zhen must have been too focused on work and only heard Cheng Tian asked Zhen Zhen to eat at Kylie's restaurant.

'Big sister, what do I do now?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Eat,' Nan Ma said. 'Order the most expensive dishes, he looks like a rich man.'

Zhen Zhen lost her appetite. She endured Reynold talk about Lei Thi. But she knew in a couple of years, Reynold would declare bankruptcy and wouldn't be able to afford a ferry ticket.

After the meal ended Zhen Zhen and Na Ma sighed in relief. They grabbed their bags, stood and walked toward the door.

Zhen Zhen regretted wasting time eating for too long. She pulled out a petri dish from her bag and didn't notice the three men who wore black suits were in

front of her.

'Ah... my bacteria!' Zhen Zhen cried out.

Yue Gu Zui was finalising a deal with Tai Lan's representatives when he heard a woman's cry. He turned around and saw a petri dish and a woman flying toward him. He caught the woman with one arm and his free hand caught the petri dish.

Everyone in the restaurant clapped their hands in awe of the beautiful Yue Gu Zui's swift reaction.

Yue Gu Zui returned the petri dish to Zhen Zhen and left the restaurant.

Zhen Zhen stood and patted her saved petri dish.

The only person in the room who was unhappy Yue Gu Zui saved the day was Reynold. During the commotion a waiter bumped into Yue Gu Zui and the waiter accidentally dropped a cup of water onto Reynold's expensive suit. But what angered Reynold more was seeing everyone's attentions were focused on Yue Gu Zui. Reynold hated not being the centre of attention and he wanted to force Yue Gu Zui to publicly apologize to him.

Zhen Zhen noticed Reynold wanted to chase after the man who saved her petri dish. But the man entered a Lincoln and disappeared.

'Zhen Zhen, do you know that man?' Nan Ma asked.

'No, why would I know him?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Nan Ma didn't know why that man looked familiar but he reminded her of her godson.

'Zhen Zhen, where's my godson?' Nan Ma asked.

'Oh no, I forgot to pick up Zhen Wu from school!' Zhen Zhen said.

End of Chapter Two

Related

Three



Chapter Three

Zhen Zhen and Nan Ma rushed to Zhen Wu's school.

'Big sister, where did Zhen Wu disappear to?' Zhen Zhen asked in a panicked tone.

'Little sister, don't cry,' Nan Ma said. 'Zhen Wu's a genius. He knows his way home.'

Zhen Zhen was happy to hear a familiar ring tone. It was the ring tone Nan Ma saved on Zhen Zhen's phone.

'Zhen Wu?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Mum!' Zhen Wu said. 'I'm home.'

Zhen Wu heard the phone disconnect and ten minutes later his mum was hugging him. From the school to their home was at least thirty minutes. He knew his mum must have sped home.

'Mum why are you crying?' Zhen Wu asked.

'No I'm not crying,' Zhen Zhen denied.

Zhen Zhen didn't want to look like a cry baby in front of her son.

'Mum I knew you forgot to pick me up so I went home on my own,' Zhen Wu said.

'I promise I won't forget to pick you up from school again,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen heard his mum promised him she wouldn't forget too many times. He didn't know when his mum would let him go, his tolerance was waning.

Zhen Zhen wiped her eyes and glanced at Zhen Wu's laptop on the table.

'Zhen Wu, you made a coding error,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Really?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Zhen was happy Zhen Wu was home and safe. She let go of him and walked into her lab.

Zhen Wu knew his mother was still smarter than him so he carefully checked for the coding error.

No one noticed Nan Ma was vomiting outside. She was in the death seat while Zhen Zhen sped like a maniac home.

A month later, apart from eating Zhen Zhen was cooped inside her lab. Her recent research took longer than usual. It wasn't Zhen Wu who disturbed her but the MF Reynold. Reynold kept calling her phone. But she couldn't turn off her phone in case something happened to Zhen Wu.

'Mr Reynold what do you want?' Zhen Zhen asked politely.

'I want to eat dinner with you,' Reynold said.

'If I agree will you stop calling me?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Perhaps,' Reynold asked.

'Ok what time and where?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen hung up the phone and changed into a T-shirt and jeans.

'Xiao Wu tonight eat at aunty Xiao's house,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Tonight I need to meet someone.'

'Is it that uncle?' Zhen Wu asked. 'Does he want to be my dad?'

'Of course not,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, next time if he calls and proposes to you while you're experimenting I hope you'll be alert and careful,' Zhen Wu said.

'Of course,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Wu waited for his mum to leave. Then he called the teacher.

'Hello teacher, mum isn't home,' Zhen Wu said. 'You can ask a driver to pick me up.'

A while later Zhen Zhen arrived at the exclusive Lan Jin restaurant.

A guard stopped Zhen Zhen from entering Lan Jin.

'Miss I need to see you ID,' the guard said.

Zhen Zhen looked into the fancy restaurant of men in suits and women in cocktails. She understood her comfortable T-shirt and tattered jeans wasn't suitable and why the guard stopped her.

'Zhen Zhen!' Reynold called.

Reynold walked to the door and looked at the ghastly way Zhen Zhen dressed.

'How can you come inside dressed like that?' Reynold asked.

'What else should I wear?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen didn't care what she wore as long as she was comfortable.

'This is the most exclusive restaurant in the city,' Reynold said. 'To be a VIP a person needs to pay at least 500k for a VIP card. You can't dress like that and expect to come inside.'

'Ok then let's eat somewhere else,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Of course not,' Reynold said. 'I've reserved a table. I'll take you to buy clothes.'

'No-' Zhen Zhen said.

Reynold dragged Zhen Zhen to the boutique across Lan Jin. The shop assistants looked down at the way Zhen Zhen dressed. But the shop assistants listened to Reynold and helped Zhen Zhen to choose some outfits.

At the counter Reynold pulled out his card but Zhen Zhen stopped him.

'I can pay for my clothes,' Zhen Zhen said.

Reynold didn't think Zhen Zhen could afford to pay for clothes that cost more than 10k. He silently waited for Zhen Zhen to be embarrassed.

Zhen Zhen gave a shop assistant a card. The shop assistant swiped it and was as shocked as Reynold that Zhen Zhen's card was approved.

'Miss please sign your name on the receipt,' the shop assistant said.

Zhen Zhen signed the receipt and the shop assistant returned her card.

'Help me to deliver my clothes to this address,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen admitted Reynold had good taste in clothes. The black knee length dress he chose for her suited her body shape. She let her hair down to shield her bare back.

Reynold led Zhen Zhen back to Lan Jin. Earlier Zhen Zhen looked like a beautiful young woman but after wearing formal wear she looked like an elegant angel.

Reynold and Zhen Zhen were seated at the table and ordered their dishes.

'Mr Reynold I don't understand why you insist I eat dinner with you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'I'm pursuing you,' Reynold said.

'Why?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'You're a beautiful genius who won many science awards,' Reynold said. 'It looks good for me to be seen with you. Also you made me curious why you keep rejecting my dinner invitations.'

'Mr Reynold if I knew why earlier then I would have accepted your dinner invitation the first time you asked so I wouldn't be disturbed,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Everyone says you're weird but I find you interesting,' Reynold said. 'I think I'm falling for you.'

'Mr Reynold I'm sorry I can't accept your good intentions,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Why?' Reynold asked.

'I have a boyfriend,' Zhen Zhen lied.

Zhen Zhen asked the heavens to forgive her for lying. But it was the heavens own fault for sending a troublesome man to disturb her.

'Impossible, I had you investigated and there is no man in your life,' Reynold said.

Zhen Zhen got a headache. She noticed a familiar man was walking toward them and decided to use him as her escape.

'Honey, why are you here?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Honey this is Reynold. Reynold this is my boyfriend.'

Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian saw a familiar woman called their boss her boyfriend but they didn't dare interfere.

Yue Gu Zui felt the woman's cold sweaty hand held his hand and she was smiling pleadingly at him to save her. He pulled her up and wrapped an arm around her shoulder.

'Hello I'm Reynold, Lei Thi's CEO,' Reynold said.

Yue Gu Zui didn't accept Reynold's business card and led the woman in his arm outside Lan Jin.

Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian were shocked to see their boss was leaving Lan Jin with the woman and they quickly followed their boss to the car.

Reynold was angry Bai Yu Tian took Zhen Zhen into a car without accepting his business card.

'Who's he?' Reynold asked a waiter.

'I'm sorry I can't divulge a VIP member's identity,' the waiter said.

Reynold was shocked. He knew Lan Jin had only given out two VIP cards. It made him more curious about Bai Yu Tian's identity.

End of Chapter Three

Related

Four



Chapter Four

'Mr Chen drive to Tao Cang hotel,' Cheng Yi said.

Zhen Zhen was nervous to have to strange men sit across from her stare at her and the man who saved her sat silently next to her.

'I'm Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Thank you... I'm sorry about troubling you earlier.'

None of the men answered Zhen Zhen.

'You can drop me off at the street ahead,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I can take a taxi home.'

Yue Gu Zui opened his eyes. 'Did I say you can leave?'

Zhen Zhen looked at the scary intensity in Yue Gu Zui's eyes. Her heart pounded and she instinctively moved around the round seat closer to Cheng Yi.

'What do you want to do?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'It's illegal to kidnap a person.'

Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian laughed. They couldn't believe Zhen Zhen talked about breaking the law in front of their boss.

'What is there to laugh about?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zui wasn't pleased Zhen Zhen moved closer to Cheng Yi.

'Come here,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian were scared for Zhen Zhen's life. The last person who dared to argue with their boss had disappeared.

'Come here,' Yue Gu Zui said impatiently.

'You don't need to use a scary tone,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen reluctantly moved closer to Yue Gu Zui.

'I need a girlfriend,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'What has that got to do with me?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'You said I'm your boyfriend,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'I had no other choice,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Besides I thanked you.'

'Are you saying you used me?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

'No...' Zhen Zhen denied.

'Ok,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Yue Gu Zui laid his head on Zhen Zhen's thighs. She didn't know what he meant by ok. Why was it ok for him to lay his head on her thighs?

'Hey!' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't move,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Miss Zhen, our boss hasn't slept for three days and three nights,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Can you let him sleep?'

Zhen Zhen thought it was pitiful Yue Gu Zui didn't sleep for three days and three nights. But it had nothing to do with her.

Zhen Zhen looked out the window. Her thighs were numb but she didn't have the heart to move and disturb Yue Gu Zui's sleep. His hair fell over his forehead and she thought he looked like a vulnerable child while he was sleeping. She couldn't stop her hand from brushing his hair behind his ear. Suddenly she felt Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian's eyes were staring strangely at her and she realised the car had stopped for a long time.

'Are we here?' Yue Gu Zui asked. 'Why didn't anyone wake me?'

Yue Gu Zui felt refreshed after a nap.

'It's ok to let them wait,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian and Cheng Yi knew their boss hated the Tao Nan gang inside.

Zhen Zhen wasn't satisfied about how slowly Bai Yu Tian adjusted his clothes. So she helped him button his shirt and felt three pairs of eyes stare at her strangely.

'He was adjusting his clothes too slowly,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I wanted to help him so I can go home earlier.'

Mr Chen opened the door. Yue Gu Zui wrapped an arm around Zhen Zhen and they walked into the Tao Cang hotel. That day Tao Cang was booked exclusively and it added danger to the hotel's atmosphere.

'Go find something to eat in the hotel restaurant,' Yue Gu Zui instructed. 'Don't wander around the hotel.'

Zhen Zhen was annoyed at Yue Gu Zui. But she behaved like a good vase and looked for food to fill her empty stomach. She walked into the hotel restaurant and hundreds of eyes made her too self-conscious to eat so she escaped to the toilet.

Zhen Zhen washed her face, tied hair into a ponytail and felt better after she cursed Yue Gu Zui at least seventeen times.

Zhen Zhen walked out of the toilet. She didn't want to go back to the restaurant and wandered around the hotel. She accidentally heard voices in a private room.

'Mr Yue you've obstructed my business,' a man said. 'Considering I know teacher for many years, you should at least give me face in Tao Nan.'

'Mr Tao, teacher had not been involved in business for many years,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Boss Yue has been in charge for many years.'

Mr Tao understood Bai Yu Tian calling him Mr Tao was giving him enough face.

Yue Gu Zui sat crossed legged on a chair unconcerned.

'I've said whoever buys from Da Tu Li is opposing me,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'You're asking me to stand by and watch you swallow my goods worth a few

millions,' Mr Tao said.

Zhen Zhen had trouble breathing. It was tensed inside the private room.

'Mr Tao then it appears I've swallowed your goods worth a few millions,' Yue Gu Zui said.

More than twenty guns were aimed at Yue Gu Zui and Zhen Zhen covered her mouth to stop from screaming.

Mr Tao held a remote. 'If you continue to be stubborn and refuse to release my goods then I'll make the windows in this room opaque and no one will know what happened to you.'

Suddenly Zhen Zhen couldn't see or hear anything from the private room. She couldn't charge into the room and become a shooting target. She searched her bag. Luckily there was a flask filled with chemicals from a failed experiment.

Zhen Zhen picked up a nearby vase, smashed a window and threw the flask into the private room. An explosion was heard and fumes obstructed the gang's vision.

Yue Gu Zui disarmed Mr Tao while Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian pulled out their guns.

Cheng Yi and Bai Yu Tian ran behind Yue Gu Zui. Outside the private room Yue Gu Zui saw Zhen Zhen, he held her hand and they ran to the car.

Mr Chen sped off after his boss' group entered the car.

'Cheng Yi, contact Huyen's group to deal with them,' Yue Gu Zui said coldly.

'Yes boss,' Cheng Yi said.

Yue Gu Zui looked at Zhen Zhen who buried her head in his chest.

'Did they give you a scare?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

Zhen Zhen raised her head and swallowed her saliva. 'A little.'

Yue Gu Zui didn't say anything else to comfort Zhen Zhen. She was annoyed why he didn't thank her for saving his life so she looked out the window.

'A lot of people are lining up in front of the Yue shop,' Zhen Zhen said. 'They sell the best cheese.'

Zhen Zhen rubbed her pitiful stomach. She would need to settle for a bowl of noodles after she arrived home.

'Are you hungry?' Yue Gu Zui asked. 'Do you like eating cheese?'

'Of course but I haven't had an opportunity to go buy cheese from the Yue shop,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen regretted wasting time going to Lan Jin and the Tao Cang hotel without eating anything.

'Mr Chen stop in front of the Yue shop,' Yue Gu Zui said. 'Cheng Yi buy a box of cheese.'

The car stopped and Cheng Yi ran into the shop.

'Why are you skipping the line?' an angry mob asked.

The women in the angry mob were also a little envious. They thought the handsome Cheng Yi risked his life to buy cheese for his lover.

Cheng Yi ignored the angry mob.

'Take the money,' Cheng Yi said to the shop owner. 'It's more than a few days of your revenue. I only want a box of cheese.'

The shop owner looked at the angry mob then he looked at the thick money notes. He would be a fool if he didn't take the money. He smiled and gave a box of cheese to Cheng Yi.

Zhen Zhen happily ate the box of cheese and thought Yue Gu Zui wasn't completely bad.

The car stopped in front of Zhen Zhen's house. She waved goodbye and hoped she wouldn't see Yue Gu Zui again.

Zhen Zhen walked into her home. Zhen Wu was sleeping in his room. She kissed his forehead and walked to her lab. She thought of Yue Gu Zui as a bad dream... she didn't know their fates were permanently tangled.

End of Chapter Four

Related

Five



Chapter Five

'Teacher, next time don't make me pretend I'm sick,' Zhen Wu said.

'If you're not sick then how can you come here and game online with me?' teacher asked.

'But if I act like a weakling too often Xiao Jiang will call me a sissy,' Zhen Wu said.

'What other way is there?' teacher asked.

'Next time teacher can pretend you're sick and I can visit you,' Zhen Wu said. 'I can play with you and people will praised me for visiting the sick.'

'OK... I lost another thousand to you,' teacher said.

Teacher couldn't believe he was losing to a little boy.

'I don't want to play anymore,' Zhen Wu said. 'Teacher you keep losing.'

'Hey little boy, didn't your mum teach you to give weaker competitors another chance to beat you,' teacher said. 'Don't tell me you never lost before.'

'Since I was born I've only lost to one person,' Zhen Wei said. 'I lost to my mum. Mum said one day I'll beat her at everything. I have confidence I'll beat

mum too.'

'Look at your little tail,' teacher said. 'It's grown up to the sky.'

Teacher rubbed Zhen Wu's head. He was curious about Zhen Wu's mum. Zhen Wu told him his mother was gullible and only understood about science. But he could see in Zhen Wu's eyes that Zhen Wu loved Zhen Wu's mum.

Yue Gu Zui returned home and he wasn't pleased teacher was at home playing online games with a little boy.

Yue Gu Zui sat on the sofa. 'Teacher if you have time to play with a little boy. Then why don't you explain to me how news about Da Tu Li was leaked?'

Zhen Wu turned around and he looked at Yue Gu Zui.

'Teacher, why does uncle's face look identical to mine?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu ran to Yue Gu Zui. Yue Gu Zui felt he was staring at a mirror of his younger self.

'Uncle I admit you're handsome... I'm only a little more handsome,' Zhen Wu said. 'My mum said my dad is an Englishman. Why don't we take a DNA test? Perhaps you do have an adorable son.'

'Who is your mum?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

'Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Wu said.

Cheng Yi was standing in the living room and thought it was too coincidental the little boy's mother had the same name as the young woman in boss' car.

'Teacher give me the little boy's report and I'll let go of the Da Tu Li incident,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'What report?' teacher asked innocently.

'Don't tell me you didn't investigate the little boy,' Yue Gu Zui said. 'I don't want to waste time investigating something you have in your possession.'

Yue Gu Zui carried his son toward the car.

'Will it kill you to ask me nicely?' teacher asked. 'You're not adorable at all. Remember to come home for dinner.'

Yue Gu Zui didn't answer but teacher knew Yue Gu Zui heard.

'Cesar ask the chefs to cook all of young master's favorite dishes like steamed fish,' teacher said.

'Yes teacher,' Cesar said.

Cesar hadn't seen teacher that happy in a long time.

Outside the mansion Zhen Wu was happy to be carried by his dad.

'Uncle where are you taking me?' Zhen Wu asked.

Yue Gu Zui put his son in the car. 'Call me dad.'

'Dad how old are you?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Twenty-eight,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Dad you had me when you were twenty-four,' Zhen Wu said. 'Dad what do you do?'

'I sell weapons,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Wow, Dad is a triad boss!' Zhen Wu said. He was happy his dad was stronger than Xiao Jiang's dad. 'Dad will you teach me how to use a gun?'

'Um, after you turn eighteen,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Dad will you take me to Macdonald after school?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Um,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Wu hugged his dad. 'Dad do you know how to hit mum's bottom?'

'That will need negotiation,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Wu was happy to nap on his dad's shoulder. He thought it was good to have a dad.

End of Chapter Five

Related

Six



Chapter Six

Zhen Zhen heard the doorbell.

Zhen Zhen knew it wasn't Nan Ma or aunty Xiao. They both had spare keys to her house. It was the first time a visitor shamelessly rang the doorbell.

Zhen Zhen reluctantly put down her bowl of noodles, ran to the door and opened the door. She didn't believe her eyes. Yue Gu Zui was in front of the door and her son was sleeping in his arms.

Zhen Zhen led Yue Gu Zui to Zhen Wu's room and he put Zhen Wu to bed.

Then Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zui walked to the living room. He looked at Zhen Wu's baby photos displayed in the glass cabinets.

'I think you need to explain something to me,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Explain what?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zui sat on the sofa and crossed his legs. Zhen Zhen felt like her home shrunk.

'Miss Zhen, I heard you have an IQ of 200,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Zhen admitted she lacked social awareness but she understood Yue Gu Zui's tone was mocking her.

'Mr Yue sometimes I'm a little gullible,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If you have something to say then say it clearly. I'm not your servant so you don't need to act like you're the king inside my home.'

'Don't you think Zhen Wu looks identical to me?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

Louis taught Yue Gu Zui to treat women well otherwise he would have strangled Zhen Zhen.

'Um, you do look like my son,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen realised why Yue Gu Zui looked familiar to her.

'Zhen Wu looks like me because I'm his dad,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Yue Gu Zui looked at the DNA results, Zhen Wu was his son.

'Who are you kidding?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Zhen Wu's dad is an Englishman.'

'Here are the DNA results,' Yue Gu Zui said and passed them to Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen looked at the DNA results. Yue Gu Zui was her son's father. She wondered why her son didn't inherit any physical traits of an Englishman but she didn't care who her son's father was, she loved her son.

'What do you want?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'If you want custody of my son then that will never happen!'

'Miss Zhen, I'm not demanding custody,' Yue Gu Zui said. 'What I'm asking is how you gave birth to my son.'

Zhen Zhen wanted to know how Yue Gu Zui became her son's father too.

'I heard you haven't been taking good care of Zhen Wu's daily life,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Who said that?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Besides, I won't allow my son to be raised as illegitimate child,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'You're saying you want to take my son away... I knew you're a bad person...' Zhen Zhen said and cried.

Zhen Zhen knew if Yue Gu Zui fought for custody of her son then she would lose her son.

Yue Gu Zui knew he was a bad person. His intentions was to take his son home and he thought women were troublesome. But he didn't like seeing Zhen Zhen cry.

'Don't cry,' Yue Gu Zui said.

'Why shouldn't I cry?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Have you changed my son's nappies? Bathed and fed him? Watched him take his first steps and heard him say his first word? You don't know how happy I am to be his mother. Suddenly you appear and want to take him away from me... I hate you-'

Yue Gu Zui kissed Zhen Zhen. He didn't know why but he felt she was born to live in his heart. He also didn't know why he felt overwhelmed and didn't want to hear her say she hated him.

'Starting from tomorrow you and our son will live in my home,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Zhen opened her eyes. 'No.'

Yue Gu Zui thought Zhen Zhen looked like a deer and he wouldn't mind taking care of a deer.

'Tomorrow I'll have removalists help you and our son move to my home,' Yue Gu Zui said. 'If you're not packed by tomorrow then I'll blow up your lab.'

Yue Gu Zui felt good and he walked toward the door.

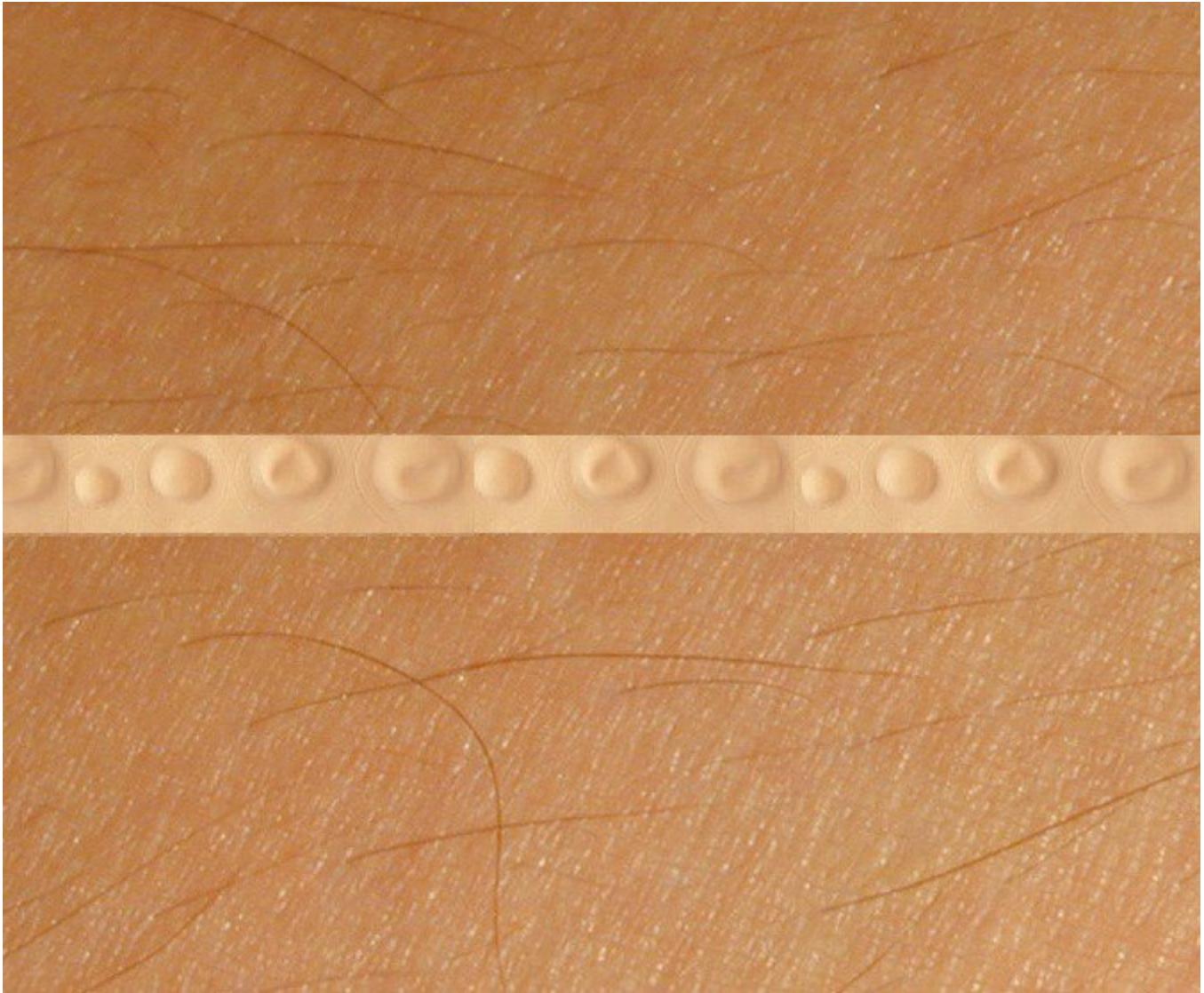
Zhen Zhen was inflamed after she heard Yue Gu Zui threatened her precious lab.

'You gangster!' Zhen Zhen cursed. 'Even if you blackmail me I won't give into you!'

End of Chapter Six

Related

Seven



Chapter Seven

Zhen Zhen packed hers and Zhen Wu's bags.

Zhen Zhen knew the gangster Yue Gu Zui wasn't kidding about blowing up her precious lab if she didn't give into him. Later she thought if she cooperated with him then he would be open to negotiating custody rights over Zhen Wu.

Zhen Zhen brought Zhen Wu to Yue Gu Zui's mansion. What she didn't understand was why there were many rooms in the mansion but her bags were brought into a spacious dark room with a black king size bed that belonged to Yue Gu Zui.

Yue Gu Zui was happy to see Zhen Zhen cheeks turned red like a red fish's cheeks.

'I like to hug someone when I sleep,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Zhen thought his sleeping habits had nothing to do with her.

Zhen Zhen was intimidated by Yue Gu Zui intense eyes so she crawled onto his bed. Then he began to take off her clothes.

'Why do you need to take clothes off to sleep?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I like sleeping naked,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Zhen wanted to protest. It was ok if he liked to sleep naked but it had nothing to do with why he had to take off her clothes too. She reminded herself about her precious lab being blown up and laid naked on his bed.

Zhen Zhen rubbed her hands on Yue Gu Zui's hard chest to feel less taken advantage of.

Yue Gu Zui held Zhen Zhen's wrists. 'If a woman seduces me then she needs to take responsibility.'

'How did you get this scar?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen diverted attention from her shameless hands by asking Yue Gu Zui about the small round scar on his chest.

'When I was eighteen I was shot during a mission,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Yue Gu Zui almost lost his life to Tan Lang's boss.

Zhen Zhen sighed. 'It's a pity.'

'What?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

'I said it's a pity you didn't shoot your enemy dead,' Zhen Zhen lied. 'Did it hurt?'

Zhen Zhen hoped Yue Gu Zui was in deadly pain.

'I've forgotten,' Yue Gu Zui said coldly.

Zhen Zhen had low EQ but she heard Yue Gu Zui's cold tone and she knew he didn't want to discuss about his bullet scar.

'Let's talk about Zhen Wu,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen raised her head and was shocked to see Yue Gu Zui fell asleep. What gangster? He slept like someone who wouldn't know if an assassin killed him in

his sleep.

Zhen Zhen thought Yue Gu Zui wasn't an ordinary beauty. Zhen Wu inherited his looks. She berated herself for shamelessly checking out a man who was sleeping. Her head found a comfortable spot on his chest and she drifted off to sleep.

Zhen Zhen dreamt a puppy was licking her face and made her body feel itchy. Then she jumped onto a man's body and ate him. She thought she didn't need to take responsibility if she ate a man in her dream.

The following morning Zhen Zhen woke up and her whole body ached. There was no sunlight in the room so she didn't know if it was day or night.

Nan Ma was standing in front of Zhen Zhen's house, the locks were changed. She thought Zhen Zhen must have been inside the lab. Sometimes Zhen Zhen forgot to eat and sleep when Zhen Zhen was experimenting.

Zhen Zhen heard a ringing tone and fumbled for her phone.

'Did you die in your lab?' Nan Ma asked. 'MF I've been standing in front of your door for half a day. Open the door.'

'Big sister I can't open the door... and watch your language,' Zhen Zhen said.

'How can I watch my language knowing you and your son in this life?' Nan Ma asked. 'What do you mean you can't open the door? Are you waiting for me to blow up your lab?'

Zhen Zhen thought she should introduce Nan Ma to Yue Gu Zui, they had the same blackmailing style.

'Big sister, I'm not at home,' Zhen Zhen said.

'If you're not at home then are you at Cheng Tian's lab?' Nan Ma asked.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Little sister do you have a fever?' Nan Ma asked.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

'It's not like you to not be inside a lab if you're not sick,' Nan Ma said. 'I must have overworked myself these last two days and I can't hear you properly.'

Zhen Zhen heard Nan Ma's unflattering mumbles and she wanted to protest her innocence.

'Little sister where are you?' Nan Ma asked.

'I'm living with Zhen Wu's dad,' Zhen Zhen said.

'What?' Nan Ma asked. 'Are you saying the Englishman appeared? Was he shocked to know he has a five-year-old son? Zhen Zhen does he want custody of Zhen Wu? Zhen Zhen you have to promise you won't agree to let him have custody of Zhen Wu!'

Zhen Zhen got out of bed and she walked to the bathroom while Nan Ma talked without giving her a chance to reply.

Inside the bathroom Zhen Zhen looked in the mirror and she saw kiss marks on her body.

'Ah!' Zhen Zhen cried out.

Zhen Zhen realised last night wasn't a dream.

'Zhen Zhen, what happened?' Nan Ma asked.

Nan Ma was worried something bad happened to Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen dropped her phone. She wanted to bite her tongue to death. She actually jumped onto Yue Gu Zui and ate him. She reasoned their son was already five years old so she had nothing to be embarrassed about. She looked at the mirror again. The kiss marks on her neck were too visible, she covered her hot face and cried pitifully.

End of Chapter Seven

Related

Eight



Chapter Eight

Yue Gu Zui read reports in the study room.

'Boss looks like he's in a good mood,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Cheng Yi looked at Yue Gu Zui and he couldn't tell what mood Yue Gu Zui was in. He wanted to learn from Bai Yu Tian about how to read their boss' moods. Because the fox Bai Yu Tian knew when to use him as a bullet vest whenever their boss was in a bad mood.

Cheng Yi noticed a devious gleam in the fox Bai Yu Tian's eyes.

'I don't know if boss' good mood will stay after he hears the bad news,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Cheng Yi instinctively moved away from Yue Gu Zui. If Cheng Yi planned to use him as a bullet vest, he feared their boss wouldn't let him leave with an intact corpse.

Huyen Di reported how his group dealt with Mr Tao's gang and he wisely sat on the sofa away from Yue Gu Zui.

'Boss, Louis is injured,' Huyen Di said.

Yue Gu Zui's good mood disappeared and his face turned cold. Who would be able to injure Louis?

'Was it Shu Tang Jue, Tan Lang's gang?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

'Ah!' Zhen Zhen cried out.

Zhen Zhen felt a cold wind passed her neck. It was Yue Gu Zui's knife that was thrown past Zhen Zhen's nose, deflected Huyen Di's knife and landed on the floor.

Zhen Zhen wondered if she explained she was only passing by and she wasn't eavesdropping on them if they would believe her. She was too scared to move.

'Next time be gentler toward my woman,' Yue Gu Zui said and glared at Huyen Di.

'Come here,' Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Zhen understood she couldn't ignore Yue Gu Zui's order. But she thought about how she ate him last night and she blushed.

Bai Yu Tian stood back to let Zhen Zhen walk toward Yue Gu Zui. She thought Bai Yu Tian was a gentleman until he opened his mouth.

'Miss Zhen, why is your face red?' Bai Yu Tian asked. 'And why are you wearing thick clothes on a hot day?'

Zhen Zhen spent a lot of energy to search for a high collar thick top to hide the kiss marks on her neck. She wasn't impressed by Bai Yu Tian's hateful smile.

Zhen Zhen walked past the hateful Bai Yu Tian and Yue Gu Zui shamelessly pulled her onto his lap. She tried to stand but Yue Gu Zui wrapped his arms around her waist and whispered in her ear. 'Don't move. I love it when you take the initiative but now isn't the time.'

'About last night... I didn't do it on purpose...' Zhen Zhen said.

'Are you saying you refuse to take responsibility?' Yue Gu Zui asked.

Zhen Zhen wanted to ask what responsibility. Wasn't it the man who was supposed to take responsibility?

Zhen Zhen laughed awkwardly. 'Let's talk about world news.'

Yue Gu Zui laughed at Zhen Zhen's obvious awkwardness.

Cheng Yi spat his tea onto Huyen Di.

'You're filthy,' Huyen Di said to Cheng Yi.

Yue Gu Zui thought it was hilarious Zhen Zhen wanted him to talk about world news instead of selling and buying weapons. It was like asking him to survive on eating air.

Zhen Zhen felt like she said the wrong thing and she quickly changed the topic of conversation. ‘Where’s Zhen Wu?’

‘Dad took our son to the park,’ Yue Gu Zui said.

‘Um,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen ran out of questions to ask Yue Gu Zui and the room was silent for a while.

‘Zhen Zhen go pack your luggage,’ Yue Gu Zui said.

‘Why?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘Where am I going?’ Her eyes lit up. ‘Can I go home?’

‘Italy,’ Yue Gu Zui said.

Zhen Zhen’s eyes lost its shine, she pouted her lips and softly cursed Yue Gu Zui on the way toward their bedroom. ‘Toxic boss.’

Cheng Yi heard Zhen Zhen’s soft curse and he spat more tea onto Huyen Di. Huyen Di slid along the sofa to avoid Cheng Yi’s unhygienic saliva.

Bai Yu Tian smiled. He pitied Zhen Zhen and deflected attention off her.

‘Boss, I heard Da Tu Li was in Italy,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

Cheng Yi thought the fox Bai Yu Tian knew how to push Yue Gu Zui’s buttons.

‘Huyen Di tell Chu Gian to immediately go to Italy to see me,’ Yue Gu Zui said coldly.

Yue Gu Zui walked past Bai Yu Tian to see if Zhen Zhen finished packing.

Cheng Yi picked up his tea cup and he looked daggers at the fox Bai Yu Tian. He drank his tea, rubbed Bai Yu Tian’s pitiful head and gave him his empty tea cup.

‘Yu Tian, you need to go to Italy too,’ Huyen Di said.

End of Chapter Eight

Related

Nine



Chapter Nine

'Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Wu called.

Zhen Wu kicked the door open. His forehead was sweaty and he showed off the new laptop teacher bought him.

'Mum, take a look,' Zhen Wu said. 'This is the latest model. There are only five hundred of this model that's available in the world.'

'Today did you have fun at the park?' Zhen Zhen asked and wiped sweat of Zhen Wu's forehead.

Zhen Wu nodded and Zhen Zhen's heart ached a little. She knew no matter how mature Zhen Zhen was, he was still a young child who loved to play. But she didn't have enough free time to play with Zhen Zhen and her parents lived far away.

'Zhen Zhen, do you have to go to Italy?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Um, who told you?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I want to go too but dad won't let me,' Zhen Wu said and pouted his lips.

'Of course you can't go,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You need to go to school.'

'Why do I need to go to school?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'My little classmates are good but they're naive like the class teacher who squeezes my cheeks each day. The class teacher doesn't teach science, Xiao Jiang draws on the classroom walls but the class teacher praises his drawings are beautiful and creative.' He sighed and rubbed his head. 'It's lonely being a genius.'

'Mr Genius, creativity is important to make new inventions,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Yes, yes,' Zhen Wu said. 'Zhen Zhen you need to take care of yourself in Italy. You need to remember to eat and take guards with you outside the hotel.'

'Don't worry,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll be ok.'

'Of course you'll be ok,' Zhen Wu said. 'You have dad to protect you. I'm only scared you'll get lost in Italy.'

'I know,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You don't need to nag.'

'It's true,' Zhen Wu said. 'Not everyone can understand a genius.'

'Can I trouble Mr Genius?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Move your genius bottom to the side.'

'Mrs Yue, it's my pleasure,' Zhen Wu teased and he noticed Zhen Zhen's underwear. 'Zhen Zhen, you can't wear plain underwear.'

Zhen Wu's words almost made Zhen Zhen vomit blood.

'Why?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen have always worn plain underwear.

'Today is not like the past,' Zhen Wu said. 'If you wear plain underwear than how are you going to seduce dad?'

'Why do I need to seduce your dad?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Wu looked pitifully at Zhen Zhen. 'Mum, don't you love dad?'

The sudden strange question made Zhen Zhen think for a while. How should she explain about her relationship with Zhen Wu's dad?

'I've only known your dad for a short period,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I don't dislike your dad.'

Zhen Wu's eyes lit up. 'If you live together with dad for a long time then will you love dad?'

Zhen Zhen saw hope in Zhen Wu's eyes and she didn't have the heart to dash his hope.

'Maybe...' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mum, let's pinky swear,' Zhen Wu said. 'You have to promise you'll try to love dad, ok?'

Zhen Zhen's complex eyes looked at Zhen Wu. 'Zhen Wu, do you really like your dad?'

'Yes!' Zhen Wu said. 'Dad's an ace!'

Zhen Zhen didn't want to break Zhen Wu's heart, he must have always wished for a dad in his life.

'Ok, I'll pinky swear with you,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I promise I'll try to love your dad.'

'Mum, you need to get dad to love you too,' Zhen Wu advised.

Zhen Zhen didn't think Zhen Wu's wish was hard and she impulsively promised to grant his wish.

It wasn't until Zhen Zhen boarded the plane to Italy did she regret her impulsive promise. Why didn't she think about how she was supposed to seduce Yue Gu Zai before she promised Zhen Wu? It would be faster for her to seduce bacteria.

'What are you thinking about?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen was deep in thought and she impulsively opened her mouth. 'I'm thinking about how to seduce you.'

Yue Gu Zai stopped breathing and the anticipation in his eyes jolted Zhen Zhen out of her thoughts. She realised she spat out the truth and smiled awkwardly at him.

'About what I said... can you agree to pretend you didn't hear me say anything?' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai narrowed his eyes and he sat upright on his seat. 'In this world there is one golden rule. A promise is worth millions. If you make a promise then you need to honor it or your tongue will be chopped off and used as shark bait.'

Zhen Zhen blinked and covered her mouth. 'My tongue is too small. It won't be appetizing... besides, I'm not part of yours and your minions' world. Why do I need to follow your golden rule?'

'Miss Zhen Zhen, what world do you think I belong to?' Yue Gu Zai teased.

Zhen Zhen thought for a long time then she deflected the question to Cheng Yi.

'Big brother Cheng Yi, what world do you belong to?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Cheng Yi hid somewhere else on the plane and he secretly laughed.

Zhen Zhen's eyes circled the plane to search for Cheng Yi while Yue Gu Zai and Bai Yu Tian were smiling widely and Huyen Di closed his eyes like he didn't see anything.

Zhen Zhen thought the men could laugh to death at her expense.

'Regardless, I'm not a triad member,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If you men are honorable then you wouldn't swallow your clients' goods.'

Cheng Yi's laughter ceased, Huyen Di's eyes were wide open, Yue Gu Zai's smile disappeared and only Bai Yu Tian was smiling.

Zhen Zhen regretted opening her mouth.

Everyone knew Zhen Zhen was talking about Mr Tao's situation.

Bai Yu Tian adjusted his glasses. 'Miss Zhen Zhen, do you call letting someone else swallow your goods honorable? What about if someone else killed your sworn brothers unprovoked and tried to kill you many times? Do you think you can still talk reasonably with that person? How can you talk honor with someone else who almost killed you with one knife stab?'

Bai Yu Tian secretly glanced at Yue Gu Zai and he knew he said enough.

Zhen Zhen thought in the future it was safest for her not to disagree with Yue

Gu Zai otherwise she would continue to talk impulsively in a panicked state. In the past she had planned to keep her distance from Yue Gu Zai, but she didn't want to disappoint Zhen Wu. Zhen Wu's wish echoed in her head, 'mum, you need to get dad to love you.'

Zhen Zhen moved her bottom closer to Yue Gu Zai and she spoke softly. 'Were you almost killed by Mr Tao?'

'In this world apart from Shu Tang Jue, no one else can take my life,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen's heart ached for Yue Gu Zai. She turned her head around and glared at the hateful Bai Yui Tian for making her fearful about Yue Gu Zai losing his life. When she thought Yue Gu Zai almost lost his life, her heart panicked strangely.

'Who is Shu Tang Jue?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'He's Tan Lang's boss,' Cheng Yi said. 'Boss and the Tan Lang gang have been enemies for a long time. I heard teacher said that the feud was started by boss' mum. Boss had tried to end the feud but failed.'

'Cheng Yi, you've said too much,' Yue Gu Zai warned the smiling Cheng Yi.

'Honestly Tan Lang's boss should thank boss' mum,' Cheng Yi said. 'If boss' mum didn't play with Tan Lang's boss' dad then Tan Lang's boss wouldn't have become Tan Lang's boss that early.'

Zhen Zhen thought 'play' in the triad world meant playing a person until they were crippled. Zhen Wu's hopeful voice echoed in her head again, 'mum, you need to get dad to love you.' For Zhen Wu, if she had to climb on top of Yue Gu Zai's tiger mum's back then she would. If she was close to Yue Gu Zai's mum then Yue Gu Zai's mum would deal with Yue Gu Zai on her behalf.

'Yue Gu Zai, how is your mum's health?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'One day I need to greet your heroic mum.'

At the mention of Yue Gu Zai's mum, his body gave off a cold aura. Zhen Zhen retreated and asked Bai Yui Tian softly about Yue Gu Zai's mum.

'Doesn't he get along with his mum?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Doesn't he love his

mum?’

Bai Yui Tian laughed. ‘It’s the opposite. Boss loves his mum. But... you need to ask boss about his relationship with his mum.’

Zhen Zhen thought it was pointless asking Bai Yui Tian. If she could ask Yue Gu Zai about Yue Gu Zai’s mum then she wouldn’t have bothered to ask Bai Yui Tian about Yue Gu Zai’s mum. She was curious what sort of woman Yue Gu Zai’s mum was. Yue Gu Zai was a beautiful man so his mum must be an extraordinary beauty.

If Ling Jia knew someone was praising her looks then she would be smiling in her sleep.

End of Chapter Nine

Related

Ten



Chapter Ten

Italy's a beautiful country full of romantic landscapes.

As classic as Italian love stories was the infamous Italian Mafia.

The plane landed in Florence, a prosperous city with colourful blooms.

Outside the plane, Zhen Zhen saw five cars. In front of the cars was a beautiful blonde woman who had blue eyes, red lips and surplus cleavage under a tight dress. Zhen Zhen knew her breasts were a bit fuller after she gave birth to Zhen Wu. But compared to the blonde woman, Zhen Zhen's breasts were like eggs while the blonde woman's breasts were like boulders.

'Yue,' the blonde woman said in a seductive tone.

Goosebumps popped up on Zhen Zhen's ears at the sound of the blond woman's flirty voice. Zhen Zhen glanced at Yue Gu Zai, she was impressed he wasn't affected by the blonde woman's seductiveness.

The blonde woman swayed her hips, stepped toward Yue Gu Zai until her breasts were levelled with his upper arms.

Zhen Zhen immediately stepped back from Yue Gu Zai and the blonde woman. Zhen Zhen telepathically apologized to Zhen Wu, 'Zhen Wu, it's not that I didn't try to get your dad to love me, but I'm not on par with the blond woman.'

Yue Gu Zai was unhappy to see Zhen Zhen was standing far away from him.

‘Zhen Zhen, come here,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen didn’t know why Yue Gu Zai was calling her to stand next to him. Didn’t he see the blonde beauty was glaring at her as if she was weak prey easily killed? Zhen Zhen couldn’t retreat, the couple in front of her was fierce. The man was a deadly lion and the woman was a carnivorous tiger. Asking Zhen Zhen to approach the fierce couple was like asking her to stick her head in a net trap. She knew if she didn’t stand next to the deadly lion then she’d be dead meat so she reluctantly stood next to Yue Gu Zai.

‘Yue, who is she?’ the blonde woman asked.

‘None of your business,’ Yue Gu Zai said coldly.

‘Yue!’ the blonde woman sulked.

‘Miss Da Tu Li, what are you doing here?’ Bai Yu Tian asked. ‘If I’m not mistaken this is an exclusive private airport.’

Bai Yu Tian held Da Tu Li’s hands, he kissed her lips and let go of her hands.

‘Yu Tian if I didn’t have Yue then I would love you,’ Da Tu Li said.

‘Miss Da Tu Li, thank you for the praise,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian decided he was going to change security management at boss’ private airport in Florence.

‘Who can stop me from going to any place I want to?’ Da Tu Li asked.

Da Tu Li linked arms with Yue Gu Zai.

‘Let go of my arm,’ Yue Gu Zai ordered.

‘Yue you’re still cold as usual,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘Do you really want me to let go of your arm? I heard your uncle Louis is poisoned. Only Shu Tang Jue has the antidote. Shu Tang Jue is gentler toward women but I love you more. Think about us carefully and I can help your uncle Louis.’

Da Tu Li blew into Yue Gu Zai’s ear. ‘Your uncle Louis’ weakened body can’t wait too long for you to think.’

‘Boss,’ Huyen Di called.

Huyen Di was burning to use the gun in his hand to shoot. But Yue Gu Zai signalled not to shoot and Da Tu Li left the airport alive.

'What an atrocious woman,' Cheng Yi said. 'It's the first time I've seen someone dared to threaten boss.'

Cheng Yi noticed Bai Yu Tian was using a handkerchief to vigorously wipe lips that kissed Da Tu Li.

Zhen Zhen thought Bai Yu Tian was fickle. If he didn't want to kiss Da Tu Li then he shouldn't have kissed Da Tu Li. He was wiping his lips like bacteria contaminated his lips.

Bai Yu Tian felt his lips weren't disinfected enough.

'Cheng Yi, do you have a bottle of water?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

Cheng Yi passed Bai Yu Tian a bottle of water.

'Pitiful man, don't kiss if you don't want to kiss,' Cheng Yi said.

'I like kissing,' Bai Yu Tian teased.

Cheng Yi was speechless.

Yue Gu Zai was still unhappy about Zhen Zhen not standing within arm distance from him earlier. He dragged her to the car and they sat next to each other in the back seat but he felt their bodies weren't close enough.

'Drive straight to the main house,' Yue Gu Zai instructed the driver.

Zhen Zhen couldn't admire the beautiful sceneries outside the window. A cold air-conditioner sat next to her and his cold aura prevented her from being immersed in the sceneries.

A while later the car parked in front of the main house. Zhen Zhen didn't think it looked like a house, it was a messy bird nest. She walked inside the house. Inside was bigger than it looked on the outside, but it was still a messy bird nest. She thought rich people were eccentric if they liked to live in messy bird nests.

Zhen Zhen met Louis. He was laying on a bed, he looked weak and his breaths were unsteady.

'Uncle Louis is older than forty years,' Cheng Yi said softly to Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen was shocked. Louis like teacher looked like young men. She thought gang members must have a bizarre way of staying youthful.

Bai Yu Tian carefully examined Louis' body.

'How's his condition?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Da Tu Li wasn't lying,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'The knife wound on uncle Louis' arm is minor. But the knife was poisoned and he needs the antidote soon.'

'Don't you have another solution?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'There is an alternative way to save uncle Louis but his body doesn't have enough time to wait,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian passed Yue Gu Zai a syringe and Yue Gu Zai strode out of Louis' room.

'Where is he going?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen's heart felt strange. It was the first time Yue Gu Zai went somewhere without taking her with him.

'Boss is going to Da Tu Li's place,' Cheng Yi said. 'Yu Tian, what did you give boss?'

'He gave something for boss to blackmail Da Tu Li,' Huyen Di said.

Huyen Di sat on a chair with his eyes closed.

'What?' Cheng Yi asked. 'When did Yu Tian poison Da Tu Li?'

'Of course he poisoned Da Tu Li,' Huyen Di said. 'She needs to suffer for daring to threaten boss.'

'Huyen Di, did you see Yu Tian poison Da Tu Li?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Only a dummy didn't see,' Huyen Di said.

Cheng Yi's heart was insulted Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian were mocking him and neither of them explained what happened at the airport.

Zhen Zhen couldn't believe she was a dummy. She didn't see how Bai Yu Tian poisoned Da Tu Li but everyone else witnessed it. She realised if she wanted to stay alive then she should distance herself from Bai Yu Tian.

End of Chapter Ten

Related

Eleven



Chapter Eleven

Yue Gu Zai drove to the Da Mansion.

At the Da Mansion, Yue Gu Zai barged into the living room.

'Mr Yue, mistress is in the bathroom,' Chu Bai said. 'Please take a seat.'

Yue Gu Zai strode to the bathroom and kicked the door down.

Da Tu Li lowered her body under the bubble bath.

'Mistress,' Chu Bai said.

'You can leave,' Da Tu Li said.

'Yes mistress,' Chu Bai said.

After the butler left, Da Tu Li stood in front of Yue Gu Zai. Her naked body didn't affect Yue Gu Zai.

'I knew you would come,' Da Tu Li said.

'Give me the antidote,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'You're hateful,' Da Tu Li said. 'You have a beauty in front of you, but you don't know how to sweet talk. Many men scheme to crawl on my bed yet you don't even look my way. But I love your coldness.'

‘Antidote,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘If you want the antidote then you need to pry it out of my mouth,’ Da Tu Li said.

Yue Gu Zai twisted Da Tu Li’s arm.

‘How aggressive,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘There’s no rush.’

‘You know you don’t have much time left,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Without an antidote then the Da business will fall into your uncle’s hands.’

Da Tu Li finally noticed her hand turned a black shade.

‘MF Bai Yu Tian!’ Da Tu Li cursed.

Da Tu Li gritted her teeth, dressed and grabbed the antidote from her room.

Yue Gu Zai exchanged antidotes with Da Tu Li. He didn’t doubt it was the real antidote, because she was someone who kept her promises.

‘Your little maid is not bad,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘I want to invite her here as a guest.’

Yue Gu Zai narrowed his eyes and his complexion darkened.

‘I’m only warning you once,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Don’t lay a finger on her.’

While Da Tu Li was surprised to see Yue Gu Zai angry, he had left her home.

‘Mistress, you have a phone call,’ Chu Bai said. ‘It’s Da Fu Li.’

‘What does he want?’ Da Tu Li asked.

‘He lost money at Hong’s Casino in Las Vegas,’ Chu Bai said. ‘They’re detaining him.’

Da Tu Li laughed coldly. ‘The Hong family isn’t someone he should offend. I’ll take the call.’

Da Tu Li accepted the phone from Chu Bai. On the other end she heard her brother’s pathetic cry.

‘Big sister!’ Da Fu Li pleaded. ‘Save me!’

‘Hello Miss Da,’ Mr Hong said. ‘You and your little brother must have a close relationship. He asked me to call you first before calling his father. I can see why a young woman like you is in charge of the Da business.’

‘Mr Hong, why don’t you cut to the chase,’ Da Fu Li said. ‘Considering the relations between the Da family and your family, we can negotiate a deal to satisfy you.’

‘Ok, I want the Da’s district in Tai,’ Mr Hong said.

‘Mr Hong, you should at least let me make enough to feed myself,’ Da Tu Li said.

Da Tu Li thought Mr Hong was a greedy bastard. Did he want her to starve to death?

‘Miss Da, you’re too modest,’ Mr Hong said. ‘Everyone knows excluding Shu Tang Jue and Yue Gu Zai’s businesses, the Da business owns one third of the black market.’

‘Are you saying there’s no room for negotiation?’ Da Tu Li asked. ‘It’s not that I can’t save the little shit, but everyone knows his father and I don’t get along.’

‘I’m not worried I’ll make a lost,’ Mr Hong said. ‘His father wouldn’t let his only son die easily. I don’t mind giving his father a call. But do you want to waste years of building your close relationship with your little brother?’

Da Tu Li thought Mr Hong was an old fox.

‘Ok, I’ll compromise,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘You can have one third of the Da district in Tai.’

‘Good, Miss Da, you can send someone to pick up your little brother,’ Mr Hong said.

Da Tu Li hung up and smashed the phone on the floor.

‘Mistress, don’t be upset,’ Chu Bai said.

‘Don’t let my uncle find out about this,’ Da Tu Li said.

‘Yes, mistress,’ Chu Bai said.

A few days later at the main house, Zhen Zhen got to know Louis while Yue Gu Zai was busy working around Florence.

Zhen Zhen peeled an apple for Louis. She thought he was an eccentric man like teacher.

'Are you thinking about Yue Gu Zai?' Louis asked.

Zhen Zhen blushed. 'Who's thinking about that toxic man?'

'Toxic?' Louis teased.

Zhen Zhen thought she said too much. 'I mean...'

'Gu Zai wasn't like this when he was a child,' Louis said.

Zhen Zhen was curious to hear what Yue Gu Zai was like as a child.

'What was he like as a child?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Energetic, mischievous and adorable,' Louis said.

'What?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Adorable?'

Zhen Zhen thought no matter how she looked at Yue Gu Zai's face, she couldn't see anything adorable about him.

'He only changed after he took over Ni Sheng,' Louis said. 'Honestly teacher and I had no intentions of letting him take over Ni Sheng. We only want him to live a happy life. He didn't want to take over Ni Sheng either. But he's been stubborn since he was a child.'

'If he doesn't want to be in charge of Ni Sheng then why did he accept the head position?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Louis smiled a bitter sweet smile. 'His mum. His mum loves the homes in the districts Ni Sheng owns. His way of protecting places his mum loves is by taking charge of Ni Sheng.'

'His mum must be incredibly gentle and beautiful,' Zhen Zhen said.

Louis laughed uncontrollably for a long time.

'Perhaps other people don't think Xiao Ling is gentle and beautiful,' Louis said. 'Yes, she's petty, unreasonable and a reckless troublemaker. But in my heart she's the most beautiful person.'

Zhen Zhen thought there was loneliness in the way Louis was smiling.

'Where is she living?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Gu Zai said that she's living a happy life,' Louis said. 'That's enough for me.'

Zhen Zhen realised Louis loved Yue Gu Zai's mum. She didn't understand why Louis didn't want to live with someone he loved. Why did Louis still love someone who left him a long time ago and was content as long as Yue Gu Zai's mum was happy. She thought love was too complicated.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, I can see Gu Zai cares about you,' Louis said. 'Help me take good care of him.'

'It's not like that... he... it's not what you're thinking...' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen didn't think Yue Gu Zai cared about her. He didn't care about her opinion and expected her to follow his lead. Neither of them knew they conceived Zhen Wu together for years. Even if Yue Gu Zai cared about her, it was because they have a son together.

Zhen Zhen silently reasoned why Yue Gu Zai didn't care about her for a while. When she raised her head, Louis was sleeping. She sighed and decided if she couldn't explain properly why Yue Gu Zai didn't care about her then she should at least let Louis have a good sleep. She covered Louis' body with the bedsheet and left Louis' room.

End of Chapter Eleven

Related

Twelve



Chapter Twelve

On a sunny day.

Zhen Zhen dressed and visited Louis. She chatted with him about sightseeing in Florence. He arranged for a trusted driver to take her sightseeing.

The driver drove around the city to tourist attraction sites. Zhen Zhen thought the architecture and natural landscapes were beautiful. After sightseeing she asked the driver to take her to an international book shop.

At the book shop, Zhen Zhen selected a book and read for more than an hour. She didn't want to make the driver continue waiting so she brought the book to the counter.

'Miss, it's one hundred and thirty-four euro,' the shop assistant said.

Zhen Zhen searched her bag but found only yuan notes.

'Can I pay using credit card?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Yes,' the shop assistant said.

Zhen Zhen passed a credit card to the shop assistant. While the shop assistant processed payment, Zhen Zhen noticed a suspicious man dressed in a black suit was standing next to her. She looked away after he noticed her staring at him.

'Miss, here is your book,' the shop assistant said. 'Mr, here is your book.'

Zhen Zhen dropped the book bag she bought. She picked it up and accidentally bumped into the suspicious man and they both dropped their book bags.

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Zhen apologized.

The suspicious man glared coldly at Zhen Zhen like he could kill her, but the second man in a black suit called him from behind.

'Jia Ha,' the second man said.

Jia Ha grabbed a fallen book bag, stood and left the shop.

Outside in a black car, Jia Ha sat across his handsome boss.

'Did you receive the goods?' boss asked.

Jia Ha passed the book bag to boss. But neither of them expected to see a book about 'life encounters with bacteria.'

'Boss, I'm sorry,' Jia Ha apologized. 'I deserve punishment.'

Boss tossed the book on the floor. 'What happened inside the shop?'

'Earlier I bumped into a girl and I must have picked up her book by mistake,' Jia Ha said.

Jia Ha noticed Zhen Zhen entered a car in front of him.

'Boss, she's the girl,' Jia Ha said.

'Follow her car,' boss instructed the driver.

Jia Ha's body broke in cold sweat. He knew he seriously screwed up.

Inside Zhen Zhen's car, she asked the driver to show her famous cathedrals. The driver stopped in front of Saint Mary of the Flower cathedral.

Zhen Zhen entered the peaceful cathedral and she sat in front of a confession booth. She read the signage, inside the booth was Father William.

'Father William,' Zhen Zhen called.

'Yes,' a familiar suspicious voice said.

'Father, my new lifestyle is making feel confused,' Zhen Zhen said.

'What are your worries?' the suspicious voice asked.

'I don't know,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I thought it's clear I hate someone. But I don't know why I don't want to be separated from that person... Father William...'

what's love-'

Zhen Zhen didn't finish her confession, she was kidnapped.

At Ni Sheng's secret headquarters in Florence.

Inside no one dared to breathe loudly. Yue Gu Zai was interrogating the members who didn't protect Louis properly and let Louis be poisoned. The members' fearful eyes pleaded Bai Yu Tian to save them from Yue Gu Zai.

'Isn't there anyone who can explained how this happened?' Yue Gu Zai asked coldly.

Everyone knew Yue Gu Zai threatened if no one gave him an acceptable explanation then he'd punish everyone together.

'Boss, you have a phone call,' Elder Chen said.

Yue Gu Zai frowned. He knew Elder Chen wouldn't interrupt unless it was an emergency.

Everyone was temporarily relieved. They didn't care who called Yue Gu Zai as long as his attention was off them. But their relief was brief, Yue Gu Zai looked like he could kill everyone instantly.

'Everyone based here will be disciplined for one month,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai rushed to the car while everyone were perplexed. They didn't know what happened to anger Yue Gu Zai to the extent of punishing them for a month. But no one dared to protest.

Inside Yue Gu Zai's car, Zhen Zhen's driver's face was sweating.

'What happened?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'This morning Miss Zhen Zhen asked to go sightseeing,' the driver said. 'The last place she visited was a cathedral. I waited in the car for a long time but I didn't see her come out.'

'Did anything happen before she disappeared?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Nothing unusual,' the driver said. 'Miss Zhen Zhen bought a book before visiting the cathedral.'

The driver passed Zhen Zhen's book bag to Yue Gu Zai. Yue Gu Zai opened the

book and found two suspicious sealed test tubes.

‘Starting from today, you won’t be working at the main house,’ Yue Gu Zai said coldly.

‘Yes,’ the driver said.

The driver was grateful his heart was still alive and beating.

End of Chapter Twelve

Related

Thirteen



Chapter Thirteen

The back of Zhen Zhen's head hurt.

Zhen Zhen opened her eyes. Something was injected into her scalp and there was someone in front of a window. It was a man in a black suit who tied his long hair behind his back. He turned around, his face was handsome but he had an aura of a messenger of death lurking in the shadows.

'What did you do to me?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'It's a new poison that hasn't been tested,' the man said.

The man helped Zhen Zhen sit upright on the chair like they were close friends for many years, and he spoke like he gave her something nutritious to eat.

'Father William?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'You have good hearing,' the man said. 'But I'm not Father William. I'm Shu Tang Jue.'

Zhen Zhen thought Shu Tang Jue was a familiar name. 'Are you Shu Tang Jue, Tan Lang's boss?'

Although Zhen Zhen's energy was drained, she could slowly say one word at a time.

'It's a pleasure to have a beauty know who I am,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'Where's Father William?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I think Father William is in a happy place,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'Somewhere

close to God and angels.'

Shu Tang Jue poured a glass of water for Zhen Zhen.

'Do you want to drink water?' Shu Tang Jue asked.

Zhen Zhen wasn't deceived by Shu Tang Jue's hypnotic voice. She knew he was someone who didn't value a person's life.

'What poison did you give me?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, you have a poor memory,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'I gave you a new untested poison.'

'Will I die?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I don't know if you'll die,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'Why?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Why must you kill innocent people?'

'Innocent?' Shu Tang Jue asked. 'In the last year I wasted ten million dollars to invest in biological weapons. But at the final step, you lost my investment. It's your fault for being Yue Gu Zai's woman too.'

'I didn't see any of your weapons,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen remembered she went sightseeing that day so there wasn't a possibility of her crossing paths with Shu Tang Jue's weapons... unless it happened at the book shop.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, do you remember now?' Shu Tang Jue asked.

Zhen Zhen realised she must have picked up the wrong book bag.

'Even if I accidentally took it,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Why did you kill Father William? He hasn't wronged you.'

Zhen Zhen felt guilty. If she didn't enter the cathedral then Father William would be alive.

'You don't need to pity Father William,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'He dared to sell opium in my district. You made it convenient for me to kill him.'

Shu Tang Jue looked at his watch. 'It's time. It's been fun chatting with you.'

After Shu Tang Jue kissed Zhen Zhen's forehead she became unconscious.

'I hope we'll meet again,' Shu Tang Jue said and disappeared.

Yue Gu Zai kicked the door down. Bai Yu Tian and Huyen Di were behind Yue Gu Zai. They only saw Zhen Zhen's unconscious body and the window was opened.

The phone on a table rang and Yue Gu Zai picked up the phone.

'You arrived quicker than I expected,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'What did you do to her?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'What happened to small talk?' Shu Tang Jue asked.

'Don't forget your weapons are in my hands,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Think of them as gifts for Miss Zhen Zhen,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'Before I forget, there's a bomb in the room that will detonate in thirty seconds.'

Yue Gu Zai carried Zhen Zhen in his arms.

'There's a bomb,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian didn't hesitate to shield Yue Gu Zai's back as they jumped out the window.

The bomb in the room detonated.

Yue Gu Zai didn't care about anything except protecting Zhen Zhen.

Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian turned around and they saw flames were burning the building. They thought Shu Tang Jue did nothing half-heartedly.

Yue Gu Zai shielded Zhen Zhen from the smoke. He turned his head around and saw fire trucks and police cars.

'Surrender, you're surrounded,' a cop said.

The three men looked at their surroundings. They were surrounded by more than twenty cops who all pointed loaded guns at their bodies.

'We received a tip-off terrorists planted a bomb and held a hostage inside the building,' the cop said. 'All of you need to cooperate and come with us to the station for interrogation.'

'MF Shu Tang Jue!' Bai Yu Tian cursed.

At the police station a cop questioned Yue Gu Zai first.

‘Tell me your name and why you appeared at the crime scene,’ the cop said.
‘Did you plant the bomb? Why did you detain the hostage?’

Yue Gu Zai sat crossed legs with his hands in his pockets. ‘I want to make a call.’

‘Ok, you have the right to call a lawyer,’ the cop said. ‘Even if the lawyer doesn’t come, we have all the evidence here.’

After Yue Gu Zai made a phone call, he didn’t say anything else to the cop.

The cop didn’t want to wait for the lawyer, but he was happy even if the lawyer showed up the lawyer couldn’t help Yue Gu Zai, Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian.

‘Chief, you have a call,’ a junior cop said.

The cop looked suspiciously at Yue Gu Zai and left the room to take the call.

A while later the cop returned and reluctantly freed Yue Gu Zai, Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian.

‘You’re free to leave,’ the cop said.

Yue Gu Zai stood and he towered over the cops. The cops couldn’t help but take a step back.

Yue Gu Zai walked out of the station. Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian were supporting Zhen Zhen and waiting for him.

A black car appeared. Yue Gu Zai carried Zhen Zhen into the car and Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian followed behind.

The cops saw a glimpse of a man in a general’s uniform in the black car, and they were grateful they didn’t use excessive force otherwise they would have lost their lives.

Inside the black car the general looked concerned at Yue Gu Zai.

‘What happened?’ the general asked. ‘Why did the cops detain you?’

‘It’s nothing,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Someone set me up.’

‘Mr Yue, in the future if you want to fight with someone then do it in another

country,’ the general said. ‘Don’t come here to fight. There are some things I have no control over. A bomb today and a shooting tomorrow will cause havoc among the citizens. The citizens will be scared it’s a terrorist attack and point fingers at the national army for not protecting them from terrorist attacks.’

‘General, I trust you can take care of this incident,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I hope your juniors won’t investigate this incident.’

‘Ok, I’ll take care of this incident,’ the general said.

‘In the future we still have business here and I hope we won’t need to experience sitting behind bars here again,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

‘I’ll discipline my juniors to satisfy Mr Yue for detaining him,’ the general said.

‘Recently has your army bought biological weapons from someone?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘No, Mr Yue, you know my army buys all our weapons from Ni Sheng,’ the general said. ‘And we wouldn’t buy biological weapons. Why?’

‘It doesn’t matter,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Mr Yue, what about the weapons my army ordered?’ the general asked.

‘Ni Sheng will deliver the weapons ordered to Italy,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

The black car stopped in front of the main house and Yue Gu Zai carried Zhen Zhen inside.

Huyen Di and Bai Yu Tian silently followed Yue Gu Zai, they knew Yue Gu Zai was beyond angry.

End of Chapter Thirteen

Related

Fourteen



Chapter Fourteen

At the main house.

Yue Gu Zai read the doctors' reports about Zhen Zhen's body condition. He wouldn't be happy until she woke up even though the reports indicated her body was in a stable condition.

'Boss, there is a 0.1% chance Miss Zhen Zhen is in pain,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'It's good news she's not in a critical condition and she'll wake up soon.'

Yue Gu Zai stayed in bed with Zhen Zhen until she woke up the following morning.

Zhen Zhen opened her doe eyes and she saw an unfamiliar room. Her doe eyes became teary and she heard a cold voice next to her ear.

'Don't cry,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen turned her head and she saw a beautiful man. But he looked fierce so she swallowed her tears.

'Who are you?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Why are you this fierce?'

Yue Gu Zai thought Zhen Zhen looked pitiful and he softened his tone.

'Do you know where you are?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen shook her head.

'Do you remember my name?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Do you remember your name?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen shook her head.

'I'm Yue Gu Zai and you're Zhen Zhen,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen pointed at Yue Gu Zai. 'Yue Gu Zai.'

Zhen Zhen pointed at herself. 'Zhen Zhen.'

'Gu Zai, Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Zhen recited.

'That's right,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai saw Zhen Zhen smile and he couldn't stay angry. Her adorable dimple made him smile.

Yue Gu Zai got out of bed, passed Zhen Zhen's clothes to her and he dressed.

After Yue Gu Zai was dressed, Zhen Zhen was still holding her clothes so he helped her put on her pants and buttoned her shirt.

'Gu Zai is a good person,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I love Gu Zai.'

Zhen Zhen loved Yue Gu Zai because he helped her dressed.

Yue Gu Zai stared at Zhen Zhen's eyes and she mimicked him by staring at his eyes. Afterward she kissed his cheek and startled him.

'I love Gu Zai,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai stroked Zhen Zhen's hair.

'Good,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai helped Zhen Zhen sit on a chair then he called Bai Yu Tian into the room to examine Zhen Zhen.

Cheng Yi and Huyen Di followed Bai Yu Tian into the room.

Zhen Zhen carefully watched Bai Yu Tian examine her. Afterward she looked at Yue Gu Zai and held her hands out.

'Gu Zai, hug me,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai immediately sat on Zhen Zhen's chair and hugged her.

'How is she?' Yue Gu Zai asked Bai Yu Tian.

'Her body is in good condition apart from her fever,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'The Miss Zhen Zhen we're seeing is herself regressing to her childhood.'

'Is that possible?' Cheng Yi asked.

Zhen Zhen sensed someone was staring at her. She looked up and saw Cheng Yi. She smiled at Cheng Yi.

Cheng Yi was mesmerized by Zhen Zhen's smile, but Yue Gu Zai gave him a warning glare and he looked somewhere else.

'We should look for Shu Tang Jue and ask him what he gave Zhen Zhen,' Cheng Yi suggested.

Bai Yu Tian adjusted his glasses. 'Cheng Yi, you don't have to look for Shu Tang Jue.'

'Why?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Your logic is at the same level as Miss Zhen Zhen now,' Huyen Di explained.

'Boss, they're bullying me,' Cheng Yi joked.

Zhen Zhen laughed at Cheng Yi.

'I've decided, I like Cheng Yi,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Thank you Miss Zhen Zhen,' Cheng Yi said. 'But it's better if you don't like me.'

Cheng Yi didn't want Yue Gu Zai to kill him.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, why don't you like me and Huyen Di but you like Cheng Yi?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

Zhen Zhen pointed at Huyen Di. 'I don't like him because he's too cold, not adorable.'

Zhen Zhen pointed at Bai Yu Tian. 'I don't like you. You're smiling but it's a fake smile.'

Bai Yu Tian's body tensed. Everyone knew what Zhen Zhen said was true but it was an unspoken truth, because most people were scared of him and Huyen Di. He thought the naive and honest Zhen Zhen was adorable.

Cheng Yi's stomach hurt from holding in his laughter. He was happy finally the Bai fox tasted bitter medicine.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, thank you for the compliment,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Zhen Zhen didn't know why Bai Yu Tian wasn't angry. Instead he thanked her for insulting him.

Zhen Zhen turned to Yue Gu Zai and she spoke softly to him. 'Bai Yu Tian is a weird man.'

Cheng Yi couldn't hold back his laughter anymore and he laughed loudly.

Bai Yu Tian calmly picked up an injection to reduce Zhen Zhen's fever.

Zhen Zhen saw the sharp needle and she hugged Yue Gu Zai tightly.

'I don't want a shot!' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai stroked Zhen Zhen's hair.

'It doesn't hurt,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Cheng Yi wanted to say Yue Gu Zai shouldn't look serious while comforting another person.

'Gu Zai, I don't want a shot,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen cried and Yue Gu Zai patted her back.

'Don't cry,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Tell me why you're scared of needles.'

Zhen Zhen shook her head.

'From experience I think Miss Zhen Zhen's fear stems from a past traumatic experience involving needles-' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Boss, the ICT system is attacked by a virus,' a gang member reported at the door.

Everyone followed the gang member to the ICT room. The screens were black. Cheng Yi entered a code and Yue Gu Zai stopped Cheng Yi typing after a message from Shu Tang Jue was visible on the screens, 'Yue Gu Zai, are you satisfied with the gifts? Even though the biological weapons plan failed, but the experiments yielded unexpected results. Yue Gu Zai, hope you're appreciating the gifts.'

‘Cheng Yi, Tan Lang’s experiments are stored on their master computer,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘Can you search for the antivirus?’

Cheng Yi’s ten fingers typed in a code for ten minutes.

‘Did you find anything?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘They know we would hack into their system so they put extra walls up,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘I need more time to find the antivirus.’

While Cheng Yi was thinking of a way to get through Tan Lang’s defences, Zhen Zhen’s fingers typed in a code. A minute later she smiled at Cheng Yi.

‘Take a look,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Cheng Yi happily knocked on the table. He forgot Zhen Zhen was a genius.

‘You did a good job,’ Yue Gu Zai praised and rubbed Zhen Zhen’s head.

Zhen Zhen was happy to hear Yue Gu Zai praise her and she offered him the bun she was eating.

‘It’s delicious,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai opened his mouth and Zhen Zhen fed him the bun.

Cheng Yi was used to being ignored after a victory so he was surprised Zhen Zhen high five the hand he held up.

‘Zhen Zhen, let’s go,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Um,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen walked three steps with Yue Gu Zai and she turned her head around. She saw a deeply moved Cheng Yi.

Cheng Yi was deeply moved because after many years he finally met another person who understood his struggles.

End of Chapter Fourteen

Related

Fifteen



Chapter Fifteen

The main house garden.

On a sunny afternoon, Bai Yu Tian looked like he was relaxing in the garden reading a book and drinking tea while the other gang members were working. But the reality was Yue Gu Zai forced Bai Yu Tian to stay at the main house to look after Zhen Zhen when Yue Gu Zai was working outside the main house. Each time Yue Gu Zai left the main house, Zhen Zhen would cry and Bai Yu Tian easily stopped her crying. Bai Yu Tian would show her a needle and she would stop crying and play games.

Cheng Yi returned to the main house after completing a mission. He saw Zhen Zhen playing online games and Bai Yu Tian was reading and drinking tea next to her.

'You must be enjoying your holiday,' Cheng Yi said.

Bai Yu Tian turned the page. 'I don't mind if we switch. You can look after Miss Zhen Zhen and I'll work outside. What's happening in North America?'

Cheng Yi sat on a chair and propped his legs on the table.

‘No development,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘Mr Tao is relying on Shu Tang Jue’s support and spread the rumor Ni Sheng swallowed Mr Tao’s goods unprovoked. Shu Tang Jue used it as an excuse to detain some of Ni Sheng’s goods.’

‘How did Mr Tao manage to escape that day?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

‘How would I know?’ Cheng Yi. ‘You should ask Huyen Di. Usually Huyen Di never fails his missions, but...’

Suddenly Cheng Yi remembered what was special about that day.

‘I heard Chu Gian will visit you today,’ Cheng Yi said.

Bai Yu Tian turned the page and he looked unaffected.

‘What were saying about Huyen Di?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

‘Chu Gian!’ Cheng Yi called.

‘Do you think I’ll fall for your trick a second time?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

Cheng Yi smiled smugly.

‘What trick?’ Chu Gian asked.

‘I warned Bai Yu Tian that he has no time left to escape,’ Cheng Yi joked. ‘Chu Gian, you can catch up with Bai Yu Tian in private. I’ll take Miss Zhen Zhen out.’

Chu Gian’s red hair like a phoenix and she wore a black outfit.

A smile appeared on Chu Gian’s beautiful face. ‘Do you want to escape? I didn’t know Bai Yu Tian who’s usually calm would run away when he sees me.’

Bai Yu Tian put the book on the table and crossed his arms. ‘Run away? When did you see me run away?’

Chu Gian shrugged her shoulders. ‘It doesn’t matter. In the past I agreed to give you a year to think clearly so I willingly travelled to South America to work. Now your year of thinking has lapsed. I don’t need to know your decision, because from today onward you’re my man. Unless...’

Chu Gian opened Bai Yu Tian’s white shirt and a phoenix birthmark was exposed.

'You remove your birthmark and neutralise the curse,' Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian kissed Bai Yu Tian's lips and left the main house without giving him a chance to reject her.

Bai Yu Tian rubbed his lips and smiled. He couldn't believe he didn't get to see Chu Gian for a year. He looked at the phoenix birthmark on his chest and he remembered what happened a year ago. The tenacious Chu Gian declared she wanted to be his woman. According to the Chu legend, the Chu's ancestors cursed the Bai's ancestors. The Chu cursed that one of the Bai's descendants would give birth to a boy with a phoenix birthmark and if the boy married someone who wasn't a Chu's descendant then the boy would die less than seven days after the boy's wedding day.

Bai Yu Tian didn't know why he had to be the boy in the Chu legend. But he fell in love at first sight the moment he met Chu Gian. He thought of subtle ways to attract Chu Gian, but he didn't want her to marry him because of the Chu legend. He wanted her to marry him out of love so he agreed to let her believe he needed a year to think about her being his woman. But he didn't expect they would be separated for a year. Luckily after a year she didn't change her mind.

It was a pity no one witnessed how handsome Bai Yu Tian looked when he smiled sincerely.

Bai Yu Tian's phoenix birthmark reminded him of Chu Gian's parting words. Unless he removed the phoenix birthmark then Chu Gian was going to be his woman. He thought Chu Gian was a dummy. He didn't know when the dummy would realise she always had his heart. But he was enjoying being pursued by the dummy.

Nearby the main house, Cheng Yi walked aimlessly with Zhen Zhen.

'Cheng Yi, where are we going?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Cheng Yi only wanted to let the Bai fox spend private time with Chu Gian. Cheng Yi didn't have a specific place he wanted to take Zhen Zhen.

'I want to go to the amusement park,' Zhen Zhen said.

'We can't go to there,' Cheng Yi said. 'If boss comes home and he doesn't see you then he'll send me off to be disciplined in a remote place.'

‘We can come home before Gu Zai’s back,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Gu Zai won’t find out. Can we go to the amusement park? I’ll cry if you don’t take me there and I’ll tell Gu Zai you bullied me then you’ll be sent off to a remote place.’

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, how can you say I bullied you when you’re bullying me?’ Cheng Yi joked.

Cheng Yi saw Zhen Zhen’s teary eyes and he sighed helplessly.

‘Ok, I’ll take you there but you can’t run around on your own,’ Cheng Yi said.

‘Cheng Yi is the best,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Cheng Yi thought Confucius was right about women were hard to deal with. He didn’t know how to deal with children either. If people found out he was babysitting at an amusement park then his manly image would disappear.

At Cavallino Matto, Cheng Yi regretted his decision.

‘Cheng Yi, let’s go on the roller coaster again,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, let’s take a break and let me breathe,’ Cheng Yi begged.

Cheng Yi felt it was more tiring to entertain a child than fighting an enemy.

Zhen Zhen saw a bright merry-go-round and she ran off. The children on the merry-go-round were having fun. But it was crowded in front of the merry-go-round so she walked to a less crowded spot to take a closer look at the merry-go-round. She craned her neck then suddenly someone struck her neck and she lost consciousness.

Chapter Fifteen

Related

Sixteen



Chapter Sixteen

In a dusty room.

Two men put Zhen Zhen onto the floor and she woke up.

'Let me go!' Zhen Zhen said. 'I want to go home. I want Gu Zai.'

Da Fu Li looked at Zhen Zhen, she wasn't the woman he asked the two men to kidnap.

Da Fu Li crouched in front of Zhen Zhen and he slapped her right cheek. Her right cheek became swollen, the corner of her lips bled and it hurt for her to open her mouth.

Da Fu Li wasn't satisfied, he slapped the two men too.

'Idiots!' Da Fu Li said. 'I asked you two to kidnap the woman wearing a pink shirt, but you two brought me a dummy girl.'

'Master Da, you said to kidnap the woman wearing a red shirt,' the first man said.

Da Fu Li's cheeks were sunken from being a heroin addict, but his scabby hand that slapped Zhen Zhen and the men was still forceful.

'You dare talk back?' Da Fu Li asked.

'Master Da, what do you want us to do now?' the second man asked.

Da Fu Li looked at the frightened Zhen Zhen and he smiled lewdly at her.

'The dummy girl's looks aren't bad,' Da Fu Li said. 'Let me play with her while you two go kidnap the right woman.'

'Yes Master Da,' the two men said.

Zhen Zhen moved back into a corner to avoid Da Fu Li who was coming toward her. She was scared and couldn't do anything except cry.

'Stay away from me!' Zhen Zhen said.

Da Fu Li slapped Zhen Zhen's left cheek and his scabby hands rubbed her soft swollen cheeks.

'If you're good and let me play with you then you won't suffer,' Da Fu Li said.

Da Fu Li restrained Zhen Zhen's wrists with one hand and used his other hand to take off her jeans. But jeans didn't come off easily and she bit his scabby hand hard.

'Ah!' Da Fu Li cried out.

Da Fu Li looked at his bitten hand, it was bleeding.

'MF! You dare bite me?' Da Fu Li said. 'I'm going to shoot you dead!'

Da Fu Li let go of Zhen Zhen, stood and pulled out his gun. But while he was preparing to shoot Yue Gu Zai leapt into the room and shielded Zhen Zhen's body.

Da Fu Li's bullet missed its target instead the bullet lodged into Yue Gu Zai's arm.

Zhen Zhen didn't sense anything except the man in her heart had came to save her and held her protectively in his arms.

'Gu Zai...' Zhen Zhen called and cried.

'It's ok,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai's tone was stern, but he held Zhen Zhen tightly and her heart was comforted.

Huyen Di twisted Da Fu Li's arms painfully behind Da Fu Li's back.

'Who are you people?' Da Fu Li asked. 'Do you know who I am? My older sister is Da Tu Li. If you people dare to offend me then you'll all die!'

Bai Yu Tian laughed coldly. 'Huyen Di, I think he's threatening us.'

'If you people are scared then hurry up and let go of me,' Da Fu Li said. 'I'll consider sparing your low lives.'

Zhen Zhen held onto Yue Gu Zai's arms, but she felt blood in one of her hands.

'Blood!' Zhen Zhen said. 'Gu Zai, blood!'

Bai Yu Tian rushed to Yue Gu Zai and he wanted to apply pressure on Yue Gu Zai's arm to stop the bleeding.

'I'm ok,' Yue Gu Zai said to reassure Zhen Zhen.

Yue Gu Zai was more concerned about Zhen Zhen's swollen cheeks. He gently touched her right cheek but she still winced.

'Do your cheeks hurt?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'It doesn't hurt anymore,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen didn't care if her cheeks hurt as long as Yue Gu Zai was with her.

Yue Gu Zai turned his head around and he glared darkly at Da Fu Li.

'What did you use to hit her?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Da Fu Li didn't want to show that he was scared of Yue Gu Zai's deadly eyes.

'Why do I need to tell you?' Da Fu Li asked.

'You're not going to tell me?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'Ok, I'll cut off your hands.'

Yue Gu Zai was about to grab a knife, but Bai Yu Tian stopped him.

'Boss, let me,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Recently I read how to smoothly cut off a person's skin. It's a good chance to practice what I learnt. I read exposing flesh is more painful than dying.'

'Ok, I'll give him to you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai left with Zhen Zhen.

'Huyen Di, are you staying to watch the show?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'I don't need to watch,' Huyen Di said.

Huyen Di spoke calmly but if Bai Yu Tian looked closely at his eyes then it would be obvious he was nauseous. Huyen Di quickly left. Last time he witnessed Bai Yu

Tian performed a free surgery for a charity, he lost his appetite for a month.

Bai Yu Tian put on gloves and he jabbed an injection into Da Fu Li's arm.

'I gave you a drug that mobilizes your body,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'But it'll intensify the feeling of pain five times... don't worry, it won't be too painful...'

Bai Yu Tian cut off the skin of Da Fu Li's scabby hands while he explained the drug's effects.

'Ah, ah, Ah!' Da Fu Li cried out.

'Don't worry, it's a quick surgery,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Boss is waiting for me to bandage his wound. Honestly your hands are ugly and shrivelled. You must be a heroin addict.'

Bai Yu Tian finished cutting off the skin of Da Fu Li's hands and shook his head in disgust while Da Fu Li cried out in pain and sweated.

'Do you know what happens when someone dares to injure boss?' Bai Yu Tian asked. 'Killing you is too merciful.' He bandaged Da Fu Li's hands enough to keep Da Fu Li alive. 'Don't worry, I won't let you die easily.'

Before Da Fu Li fell unconscious, he thought Bai Yu Tian's calm tone sounded like a guide leading him to hell.

At the main house, Yue Gu Zai didn't fault Bai Yu Tian for returning two minutes later than him.

Bai Yu Tian walked into the main house wearing a white lab coat and carrying a suitcase of sanitized surgical equipment.

When Bai Yu Tian was about to inject an anaesthetic into Yue Gu Zai's arm, Zhen Zhen stopped him. In that moment Bai Yu Tian would have struck her unconscious if Yue Gu Zai wasn't conscious.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, I promise I won't let boss feel pain,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'This anaesthetic is to help boss not to feel pain.'

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen was scared the drug would hurt Yue Gu Zai.

'It's ok, I don't need anaesthetic,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Bai Yu Tian sighed and he put the anaesthetic on the table. ‘Boss, you’ll need to endure pain.’

Bai Yu Tian picked up the scalpel, but Zhen Zhen stopped him again.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, do you want boss to bleed to death?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

‘But... it looks painful,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Zhen Zhen, go outside and wait for me,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai knew he would bleed to death if Zhen Zhen stayed in the room.

‘No,’ Zhen Zhen said and pouted her lips. ‘I want to stay here with you. I promise I won’t interfere anymore.’

While Zhen Zhen was distracted Bai Yu Tian injected the anaesthetic into Yue Gu Zai’s arm. The moment Yue Gu Zai was unconscious, Bai Yu Tian struck Zhen Zhen unconscious otherwise her crying would distract him while he removed the bullet.

After Bai Yu Tian successfully removed the bullet from Yue Gu Zai’s arm, Chu Gian entered the room and she leaned on a wall.

Chu Gian looked at the unconscious Zhen Zhen and she shook her head. ‘Yu Tian, don’t you know how to treat a precious jade?’

Bai Yu Tian shrugged his shoulders. ‘Where’s Cheng Yi?’

‘Cheng Yi... he’s been kneeling at the back of the house since he found out boss and Zhen Zhen were hurt,’ Chu Gian said. She helped Bai Yu Tian take off the lab coat. ‘If boss had chased after him then he wouldn’t have energy to kneel.’

‘It’s Cheng Yi’s fault for being careless while on duty,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

‘You’re the one who always has to play bad cop and clean up his mess,’ Chu Gian said and walked in the direction of her car.

‘Where are you going?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

‘Going outside for fresh air,’ Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian wasn’t going to let Yue Gu Zai’s injury and Zhen Zhen’s kidnapping incident slide. Chu Gian was going to make the Da Household’s gang pay. She sat in her red Ferrari and sped off.

End of Chapter Sixteen

Related

Seventeen



Chapter Seventeen

In the evening at the main house.

Yue Gu Zai was awoken by a heavy pressure that was tossing and turning on top of him.

Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen opened their eyes at the same time. Her frown changed to a smile after she saw his face.

'Did you have a nightmare?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai helped Zhen Zhen find a more comfortable position to lay on his chest.

'I dreamt Gu Zai was angry at me and left me,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Gu Zai, don't be angry. I promise I won't play all the time.'

'Ok, I won't be angry,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai remembered he didn't think about risks when he saved Zhen Zhen. He couldn't believe he loved seeing Zhen Zhen smile more each day.

'I need to grow up faster,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I want to marry Gu Zai.'

Yue Gu Zai was happy to hear Zhen Zhen wanted to marry him. 'Why do you want to marry me?'

'Because I love Gu Zai,' Zhen Zhen said. 'The Bai fox said sooner or later Gu Zai will get married. After Gu Zai is married, Gu Zai won't love me anymore. I want Gu Zai to love me forever so I want to be Gu Zai's wife.'

Yue Gu Zai smiled. ‘If you want to marry me, you don’t need to wait. You can marry me now.’

‘Really?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Of course,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai raised Zhen Zhen’s chin and he looked into her eyes.

‘Promise you won’t regret it?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai knew he wanted to lie to himself that Zhen Zhen would make an informed decision.

Zhen Zhen didn’t know what Yue Gu Zai’s words meant but she nodded her head.

‘I promise,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai didn’t care about his unhealed wound. He stood, held Zhen Zhen’s hand and they left their room together.

Bai Yu Tian was guarding outside the room. ‘Boss, where do you want to go?’

‘To register a marriage,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Boss, you shouldn’t go outside,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘Your wound will take longer to heal. You don’t need to leave the house to register a marriage.’

‘Ok, I’ll give you an hour to prepare the wedding ceremony,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Yes boss,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

An hour later a frightened registered celebrant arrived at the main house.

‘I need the bride and groom to provide proof of their identities and the completed marriage registration form-’ the celebrant said.

‘How is boss supposed to give you everything you requested now?’ Huyen Di asked. ‘You only need to perform the ceremony and witness boss and Miss Zhen Zhen sign the marriage registration form.’

The celebrant didn’t dare open his mouth. It was them who asked him to perform a proper wedding ceremony. He wisely pulled out a blank authorised marriage registration form.

'If the bride and groom are willing to register their marriage then sign at the bottom of this form,' the celebrant said.

Yue Gu Zai quickly signed the form while Zhen Zhen pointed at the form.

'Do I only need to sign?' Zhen Zhen asked.

The celebrant thought Zhen Zhen was tricked into marrying Yue Gu Zai. But Huyen Di gave him a warning look and he didn't dare voice his concerns.

Bai Yu Tian opened a box of a pair of wedding rings. The celebrant was envious of the wedding rings. Even though the ring designs were simple, but they were expensive rings and it was his girlfriend's favorite design. He would buy the same rings when he married his girlfriend if he could afford the rings.

Yue Gu Zai put the ring on Zhen Zhen's ring finger.

'Why do I need to wear this ring?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'You're not allowed to take it off.' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Oh, if we wear matching rings, does it mean Gu Zai is my man?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen mimicked Yue Gu Zai's actions, she put the other ring on his finger.

Yue Gu Zai kissed the top of Zhen Zhen's head.

'That's right, I'm your man,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen was satisfied with Yue Gu Zai's answer and she smiled.

The celebrant was certain either the child bride had low IQ or she was tricked into marrying Yue Gu Zai.

After the celebrant officiated the wedding ceremony, Bai Yu Tian presented the celebrant a box of a wedding cup cake.

'You've worked hard and earned this,' Bai Yu Tian joked.

'It's ok, no need for gifts,' the celebrant said.

The celebrant didn't dare to eat anything given by anyone related to the groom.

'You don't need to be courteous, take it,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'It's ok, I don't need any gifts,' the celebrant said.

Bai Yu Tian thought the celebrant's refusal was rude.

'Our boss always follow protocols,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'He asked me to prepare the wedding ceremony. I brought you here to perform the wedding ceremony, bought rings and prepared wedding cupcakes for wedding guests. Everyone here hates eating sweets, but they are eating the cupcakes to celebrate boss' wedding day. You refusing to eat the cupcake will ruin boss' good mood.'

The celebrant didn't want to offend the groom who looked like he was a mafia boss so he quickly accepted the box.

'Of course I want to eat,' the celebrant lied. 'I wish eternal happiness for the newlyweds.'

'Thank you for wishing boss a happy marriage,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Let me ask a driver to drive you home.'

'It's ok, everyone here is busy,' the celebrant said. 'I don't' want to inconvenience anyone. I'll make my own way home.'

The celebrant didn't dare have a mafia mobster drive him home.

'If you're adamant then I won't insist,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Outside the main house, the celebrant regretted his decision. Earlier he was too frightened to notice the route to the main house. He finally noticed the remote location of the main house. It was above a high mountain and there were no cars on the private road. It would take him a few hours to walk to the foot of the mountain. He turned around to ask for a driver, but the front gates were closed and he didn't dare to press the intercom. He had no choice left but to slowly walk down the mountain.

Inside the main house, Chu Gian pitied the celebrant walking down the mountain.

'Did he offend you?' Chu Gian asked Bai Yu Tian.

'It's his fault,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'He delayed performing the wedding ceremony for thirty-seconds. I almost failed to prepare the wedding ceremony within the hour boss requested. Honestly I didn't do anything to him. Didn't you hear he

wanted to find his own way home?’

Chu Gian laughed and Bai Yu Tian looked sincerely at her.

‘Marriage looks like an ideal dream,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

Chu Gian did love Bai Yu Tian, but she didn’t want to marry and have children at a young age.

‘I never thought about marrying and having children this soon,’ Chu Gian said.

‘It’s ok, I don’t mind marrying into your family,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

Chu Gian stayed silent. She looked at the calm Bai Yu Tian. She knew he was a prideful man so she didn’t understand why he was willing to let go of his pride to marry her and change his family name.

End of Chapter Seventeen

Related

Eighteen



Chapter Eighteen

Da Tu Li's red polish fingernails hid one of the side effects of years of smoking.

'Uncle, you can't blame me for my inability to help you,' Da Tu Li said. 'This time your precious son offended Yue Gu Zai. Besides, I believe uncle has a solution to rescue your son.'

Da Wan Quan had a diagonal scar below his eyes. He felt the Da Household's power was yielded from his years of hard work. But he couldn't accept Da Tu Li's father letting the little girl Da Tu Li lead the Da Household instead of him.

Da Wan Quan had visited Ni Sheng's headquarters in China, but the guards refused to let him see Yue Gu Zai because he wasn't the head of the Da Household. He wouldn't have looked for Da Tu Li if Da Fu Li wasn't his only son. After his son was born the doctors told him that he couldn't have any more children. He didn't expect his only son would grow up to cause catastrophes for him.

'If you didn't spoil my son since he was a boy then he wouldn't turn out this way,' Da Wan Quan said.

Da Tu Li laughed coldly. ‘Uncle, it’s unfair to blame me for his mistakes. Uncle, you’re the one who is infamous for spoiling your son. Besides, he is my little brother. What am I supposed to do each time he asks me to rescue him, let him die?’

‘What will it take for you to save him?’ Da Wan Quan asked.

‘Uncle, you know what I want,’ Da Tu Li said.

‘OK, I’ll hand over my districts in South East Asia and South America,’ Da Wan Quan said.

Da Tu Li shook her forefinger. ‘No, no, no. Uncle, honestly you’ve worked hard half your lifespan. You should leave the world for young people to deal with. Uncle, you’ve withered, aged and it’s a struggle for you to move about. Uncle, have you thought about retiring?’ She gestured for an assistant to give the prepared documents to Da Wan Quan. ‘The truth is I’ve prepared a retirement island home for uncle. It’s by the seaside, it’s tropical all year round. I bought the whole island. There are no paparazzi on the island to disturb uncle. Uncle, what do you think about this ideal early retirement plan?’

‘You!’ Da Wan Quan said.

Da Wan Quan glared contemptuously at Da Tu Li and thought about his son for more than a minute.

‘OK, if you can bring him back in one piece then I’ll retire,’ Da Wan Quan surrendered.

‘OK, but I can’t promise I can bring him back in one piece after he offended Yue Gu Zai,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘I can only promise I’ll bring him home. After all he is my only little brother.’

‘OK,’ Da Wan Quan agreed.

On the other side of the world, Yue Gu Zai happily took his wife on a honeymoon. Before departing Italy for his honeymoon, he assigned all his duties to Cheng Yi. Everyone knew it was Cheng Yi’s belated punishment to be an overworked slave.

After Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen returned home from their honeymoon, Cheng

Yi was exhausted to death in bed.

Cheng Yi had to deal with the Da Household causing trouble in South America for Ni Sheng, as well as Shu Tang Jue and Mr Tao's gangs. Even the almighty Huyen Di had to play a cat and mouse chase with Shu Tang Jue while Bai Yu Tian was busy making an antidote for Zhen Zhen.

Since Yue Gu Zai's gang members were all busy with their missions, they didn't reunite until after Yue Gu Zai returned home from his honeymoon.

'How's the antidote coming along?' Cheng Yi asked Bai Yu Tian.

'What do you think?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

Cheng Yi didn't need to voice what he thought.

'I gave the antidote to boss,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'But I forgot to tell boss about a tiny side effect.'

Huyen Di scoffed. 'Forgot?'

Chu Gian laughed and drank tea.

Only the heavens knew whether Bai Yu Tian forgot or intentionally forgot.

Three days after the reunion, Zhen Wu and teacher returned home from an outing and they heard Zhen Zhen's piercing shriek.

Zhen Wu slowly walked to his parents' bedroom, his parents were lying bed together. His dad wore a dark expression while his mum continued to shriek loudly.

Yue Gu Zai couldn't stand his wife's shriek. 'Zhen Zhen, be quiet!'

'You... me...' Zhen Zhen mumbled for half a day.

Zhen Zhen didn't know why she was home. Her last conscious memory was Bai Yu Tian injecting a poison into her body.

'Am I really not dead?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Wu sighed and looked at his dad. 'Dad, deal with your wife on your own.'

Zhen Wu dragged the peeping tom teacher who was eavesdropping at the door away from his parents' bedroom.

‘Xiao Wu, let me see the entertaining play a bit longer,’ teacher pleaded. ‘Your mum is impressive. I haven’t seen Gu Zai’s cold face expressed a different emotion for a long time.’

‘Teacher, don’t you know it’s not honorable to eavesdrop?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘OK, but later you have to promise you’ll let me win a game by at least one thousand points,’ teacher negotiated.

‘Teacher, how old are you?’ Zhen Wu asked. ‘Aren’t you ashamed of yourself asking me to let you win all the time?’

Inside Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen’s bedroom, Zhen Zhen was still in shock.

‘Am I really not dead?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen was overjoyed to be alive, she kissed Yue Gu Zai’s cheek, and his bad mood disappeared.

‘How did we travel home?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘What happened to Shu Tang Jue? How did you find me?’

Zhen Zhen shot countless questions at Yue Gu Zai, and his bad mood returned. His wife had forgotten everything, including their wedding day, honeymoon and the extent she was attached to him.

Yue Gu Zai silently fumed, got out of bed, dressed and strode to the study room.

Zhen Zhen thought Yu Gu Zai was a difficult man to please. She didn’t know why he didn’t explain how he rescued her, but only left their room in an angry state.

Zhen Zhen’s thoughts were distracted by her best friend Nan Ma. She prepared mentally before calling Nan Ma, she knew Nan Ma would nag her for not being out of contact for a long time.

‘Nan,’ Zhen Zhen said softly.

‘Yes?’ a familiar man’s voice answered Nan Ma’s phone.

Zhen Zhen thought she called the wrong phone number. She checked the phone number, it was Nan Ma’s number.

'Hello, I want to talk to Nan Ma,' Zhen Zhen said.

Unbeknownst to Zhen Zhen, the familiar man's voice belonged to Shu Tang Jue.

'Miss, please wait,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'Small rice grain, you have a call.'

Thirty seconds later, Zhen Zhen heard Nan Ma threatened the man.

'Do you want to die?' Nan Ma asked Shu Tang Jue. 'Why did you dare answer my phone? And you dropped it in the bath tub too.' She picked up her wet phone. 'Who is it?'

'Nan,' Zhen Zhen said softly.

'You little shit, you still know how to call me?' Nan Ma scolded. 'Do you know how worried I was about a little shit like you who has no conscience? Where's my godson? I must have owed you and your son in a previous life, which is why in this life I'm cursed to worry endlessly about you and your son.'

Zhen Zhen didn't dare to open her mouth, and let Nan Ma scold her until Nan Ma was satisfied.

A while later, Zhen Zhen opened her mouth, but Nan Ma's phone disconnected. It bugged her why the man who answered Nan Ma's phone sounded so familiar.

'You little shit, say something!' Nan Ma said to her dead phone.

Nan Ma remembered her phone fell into the bath tub, and reasoned the battery must have died. She looked enviously at Shu Tang Jue's long hair that was naturally smoother than hers. But she was too angry to admit she was envious. 'It's all your fault. You dropped my phone in the bath tub.'

Shu Tang Jue calmly buttoned his shirt and kissed Nan Ma's cheek. 'It's my fault. Later today I'll buy you a new phone. What do you want to eat for breakfast? I'll go cook it immediately.'

'Do you have money to buy me a new phone?' Nan Ma asked.

Nan Ma admired Shu Tang Jue's hot body and young handsome face. Strangers could easily deduce she was his sugar mummy. It was her fault for bringing a toy boy home to live with her.

'Go finish taking your bath while I make your breakfast otherwise you'll be late for work,' Shu Tang Jue said in a gentle tone of voice.

Nan Ma glanced at the clock on the wall, Shu Tang Jue was right, she would be late for work if she didn't hurry. She thought it was Shu Tang Jue's fault she was always late to work each week.

'I want toast and omelette for breakfast,' Nan Ma ordered and ran to the bathroom.

'OK,' Shu Tang Jue said.

Inside the bathroom, Nan Ma thought at least her toy boy was obedient, and a good cook so it was worth while keeping a toy boy home. Besides, she had a salary big enough to support several toy boys.

Shu Tang Jue happily rolled up his sleeves and cooked in the kitchen.

After Nan Ma walked into the dining room, Shu Tang Jue was unhappy to see her wear a tight blouse tucked in a short pastel yellow skirt. Her outfit accentuated her soft breasts and sexy legs.

Shu Tang Jue suppressed his displeasure and spoke in a sour voice. 'I warmed up a glass of milk for you too. You should eat breakfast and drink milk while it's hot.'

'OK,' Nan Ma said.

Shu Tang Jue frowned after he saw Nan Ma searched for birth control pills.

Nan Ma remembered she bought birth control pills since the second day Shu Tang Jue moved in with her. To her, sleeping with a toy boy was one thing but being knocked up at a young age was a separate matter. She was deep in thought when Shu Tang Jue knocked the glass of milk on her skirt.

'My clothes!' Nan Ma said and looked accusingly at Shu Tang Jue.

'I'm really sorry,' Shu Tang Jue lied. 'I didn't do it on purpose. You should eat breakfast first. I'll go prepare another outfit for you so you won't be late for work.'

Nan Ma sighed and ate breakfast quickly. After breakfast, she walked into the bathroom and was surprised to see Shu Tang Jue chose an out of style

conservative outfit. But there was no time for her to be fussy, she changed into the outfit he chose.

Afterward Nan Ma ran to the front door, and didn't forget to give Shu Tang Jue instructions. 'Stay home and don't run around. You can watch TV comfortably. If you want to go outside, there's a set of spare keys hidden in the flower pot and-'

'And you left money on top of the bedside table,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'I know. You should go or you'll really be late for work.'

Nan Ma nodded and rushed to work.

Shu Tang Jue picked up Nan Ma's soiled outfit and put it in the washing machine. Then he changed their bedsheets and decided to throw away his sweaty clothes. On the way to the bin, he picked up Nan Ma's forgotten birth control pills and tossed them into the bin with his sweaty clothes.

After Shu Tang Jue changed clothes, his phone rang. 'What is it?' He listened to his assistant's report. 'OK, bring the documents here. Also, you don't have to trail the Da Household anymore.'

Shu Tang Jue hung up and turned on the laptop. He worked during the mornings when Nan Ma was at work.

Three in the afternoon, Shu Tang Jue rubbed his strained eyes, saved his files and turned off the laptop. He grabbed some of the money on top of the bedside table and smiled. To him it was an amusing notion to be mistaken as a pauper by his lover. Afterward he grabbed the keys from the flower pot and walked outside to the supermarkets to buy ingredients for dinner.

Outside Shu Tang Jue greeted Aunty Wang.

'Xiao Tang, are you going to the supermarkets?' Aunty Wang asked. 'Xiao Nan is a lucky woman.'

Aunty Wang sighed enviously. Shu Tang Jue was handsome, a domesticated man and considerate toward Nan Ma. Aunty Wang thought it was a lost opportunity her daughter didn't meet a man like Shu Tang Jue.

Shu Tang Jue nodded politely. His thoughts were preoccupied about what to make for dinner. Recently he steamed spicy fish and chestnut desserts. His small

rice grain was a picky eater who loved eating spicy food. It hurt his brain to think of healthy spicy recipes to please his small rice grain.

End of Chapter Eighteen

Related

Nineteen



Chapter Nineteen

Da Tu Li sashayed into Yue Gu Zai's study room.

Zhen Zhen was eating cheese in Yue Gu Zai's study room, but she choked at the sight of Da Tu Li's cleavage and long legs in a skimpy red tank top and tight red shorts. Zhen Zhen thought her body insecurities worsened each time she saw Da Tu Li.

Zhen Wu was reading in a corner of his dad's study room. He heard the sounds of heels and looked up, a tall lady in red was strutting toward his dad.

'It appears dad likes this type of woman,' Zhen Wu said. 'Mum, I think you should consider consulting plastic surgeons about increasing your A cup to B cup.'

'Who said I'm A cup?' Zhen Zhen denied. 'I'm at least B cup.'

Zhen Wu shook his head after he saw Da Tu Li's red lips were approaching his dad's lips.

'Mum, I bet dad won't let that lady kiss him,' Zhen Wu said. 'The loser has to be the winner's slave for a week.'

‘OK, as if your dad would reject a kiss from a beautiful woman,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Zhen Wu, close your eyes. It’s not appropriate for you to see them kissing.’

Zhen Wu pulled his mum’s hand away from his eyes. ‘Mum, if you cover my eyes then how will I know if dad let the lady kiss him or not?’

The green vein on Yue Gu Zai’s forehead almost jumped out. He heard his wife and son betting at his expense.

‘Go outside,’ Yue Gu Zai ordered his wife and son.

Zhen Zhen and Zhen Wu stood and they walked toward the door.

Zhen Zhen turned around, smiled and apologized. ‘We won’t bother your private time together. Although we were here first, we’ll leave and let you two continue.’

Da Tu Li laughed after Zhen Zhen and Zhen Wu left the study room.

‘You have an interesting little girlfriend,’ Da Tu Li praised.

Yue Gu Zai saw Da Tu Li coming toward him and he glared coldly at her. ‘Stay far away from me.’

‘What a cold man,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘Do you really don’t want me? You and Shu Tang Yue are at stalemate. If you marry me, I’ll hand over the reign of the Da Household to you as a dowry. I won’t mind if you have a mistress. Why don’t you think about my offer?’

‘I don’t need to rely on a woman at work,’ Yue Gu Zai said coldly. ‘You didn’t come here to talk rubbish.’

‘Of course, I came here to beg you to release Da Fu Li,’ Da Tu Li said.

‘Not possible,’ Yue Gu Zai rejected.

‘I don’t know why Fu Li dared to offend you,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘I know no one stays alive after offending you. But can you give me face and release Fu Li this time. I’ll take him back and the Da Household will discipline him. Think about it, if you exchange a half dead boy, you’ll get a profitable favor from the Da Household in return.’

Yue Gu Zai thought about the offer for a while. ‘OK, it’s possible.’

'I knew you would agree,' Da Tu Li said.

Da Tu Li walked toward the door, turned around and blew Yue Gu Zai an air kiss. 'I'm happy to welcome you whenever you decide the little deer can't satisfy you.'

Outside in the living room, Zhen Zhen received a call from her supervisor Jiang.

'Hello supervisor Jiang,' Zhen Zhen greeted.

'Zhen Zhen, you've been sick with a stomach ulcer for more than two months,' Jiang lamented. 'Although having a healthy body is a priority, but even if you have ten stomach ulcers, they would have been healed by now. Zhen Zhen, you can't keep neglecting your scientific research. My boss wants to check on your progress. And they asked me to ask you to setup a suitable time to see you.'

Zhen Zhen didn't know she had a stomach ulcer. But it wasn't important as her research. 'Supervisor Jiang, it's my fault. Tomorrow I'll return to the lab and complete my research.'

On the other side of the phone, Jiang was happy to hear good news about Zhen Zhen returning to work. But on Zhen Zhen's end, she was stressing while she walked back to Yue Gu Zai's study. She didn't know what happened during the two month period she lost her memory. Regardless of Yue Gu Zai being considerate enough to ask supervisor Jiang for her sick leave, Yue Gu Zai didn't have the right to control her freedom. But her confidence waned after she stood in front of Yue Gu Zai.

Yue Gu Zai looked up from his reports. 'Zhen Zhen, did something happen?'

'Tomorrow I'll be going back to the lab,' Zhen Zhen said weakly.

'OK, I'll ask Cheng Yi to go with you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I don't mean going there for a visit,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I mean I need to go back to work.'

Yue Gu Zai tossed the reports on the table. 'Do you think I can't support you?'

'The issue isn't about whether you can support me or not,' Zhen Zhen said. 'What's important to me is that this is the career I've chosen for myself. Besides, I'm not your woman. Why do you need to support me?'

‘We’re married,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘You’re my legal wife. Can you say you’re not my woman?’

‘Liar!’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘When did I marry you?’

Yue Gu Zai picked up his and Zhen Zhen’s framed marriage certificate and showed it to Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen looked in disbelief at her signature next to Yue Gu Zai’s signature at the bottom of their marriage certificate.

‘This doesn’t count,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘You must have used an opportunity while my head was muddled to trick me to marry you. Also, for a marriage to count, there needs to be a wedding ceremony, a wedding cake and a honeymoon after the wedding. But I don’t remember any events about marrying you.’

Zhen Zhen refused to admit she vaguely remembered marrying Yue Gu Zai.

‘Are you saying you want a proper wedding ceremony and a honeymoon for our marriage to count?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘That’s not what I meant,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen was on the verge of going insane. She strode out of the triad boss’ study. It didn’t matter if Yue Gu Zai was the father of her son, her career was still important to her. Regardless whether Yue Gu Zai agreed about her returning to work, she was determined to finish her research the following day.

End of Chapter Nineteen

Related

Twenty



Chapter Twenty

Zhen Zhen turned on her laptop.

A while later Zhen Zhen was smiling in front of her laptop screen, she unlocked Yue Gu Zai's security system.

Unbeknownst to Zhen Zhen, Yue Gu Zai was watching her movements on the camera screen in the study room. If he didn't order the guards not to patrol the front gate in the morning then Zhen Zhen wouldn't have been able to leave easily. As long as Zhen Zhen was happy, he would let her work.

After Yue Gu Zai couldn't see Zhen Zhen on the camera screen, he turned it off and sign off on reviewed reports.

'You'll be in charge of wedding planning,' Yue Gu Zai said to Bai Yu Tian.

'Boss, it's a complicated matter,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'If you want to satisfy Miss Zhen Zhen, I think you should ask what wedding style she likes. Does she want a western or an eastern style wedding? Who she wants to invite to the wedding, who boss wants to invite and...'

'And?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Boss, you need to meet Miss Zhen Zhen's parents,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Is it important for me to meet my wife's parents?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Boss, it's very important to meet your wife's parents,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'If you

want to give your wife a proper wedding ceremony and reception, you need to ask for your wife's parents' blessing to give away their daughter to you.'

Yue Gu Zai thought about meeting Zhen Zhen's parents and nodded. 'OK, you can leave.'

'Yes, boss,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Outside the oblivious Zhen Zhen relaxed the moment she escaped undetected, like a free uncaged bird. She happily hailed a taxi to work.

At work Zhen Zhen put on her lab coat and her colleagues she hadn't seen for a long time all greeted her.

'Zhen Zhen, how is your health?' a chorus of colleagues asked.

Zhen Zhen politely nodded.

'Zhen Zhen, how was your stomach surgery?' another chorus of colleagues asked.

Zhen Zhen coughed awkwardly. 'I'm healthier.'

'Zhen Zhen, why did you let your stomach ulcer deteriorate to such a bad condition...' more questions were shot at Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen could only politely smile and nod.

Zhen Zhen walked faster to her assigned lab.

Inside Zhen Zhen's lab, supervisor Jiang was waiting for her since early morning. He was happy to see her, she was like a daughter to him as well as the research company's biggest asset. So her health was important, without her at work, her research experiments were halted.

'Supervisor Jiang, I've fully recovered my health,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Let's discuss the final stage of my research.'

'OK,' Jiang said.

Later that day, Zhen Zhen was busy finishing her experiments that she forgot to eat. At lunch time her stomach ached, but she was keener to continue experimenting than eating.

After lunch time, Jiang entered Zhen Zhen's lab. 'Zhen Zhen, what's your

impression of Reynold?’

‘Who’s Reynold?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘He’s the man you had an arranged lunch date with a while ago,’ Jiang said.

Zhen Zhen was busy checking lab equipment and she didn’t pay attention to supervisor Jiang’s questions. ‘Not bad.’

‘Really?’ Jiang asked. ‘That little boy isn’t bad. Although in the past he’s a player. But after he met you, he’s been smitten with you. He’s handsome and rich. Since you were on sick leave, he’s been calling here to ask about your health. I’ll let him know you have a good impression of him.’

‘Good,’ Zhen Zhen said carelessly.

Zhen Zhen was thinking about why an experiment failed. She wasn’t listening to what supervisor Jiang was saying and gave him simple one word replies.

Zhen Zhen turned around to ask supervisor Jiang why the experiment failed, but he disappeared.

Later Jiang returned to Zhen Zhen’s lab while she was packing lab equipment.

‘What are you still doing here?’ Jiang asked. ‘Didn’t you agree to eat a meal with Reynold? Reynold’s been waiting outside a long time for you.’

‘Eat a meal?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘When did I agree?’

‘This little girl,’ Jiang said. ‘Earlier you agreed. Hurry and go eat with Reynold.’

Jiang dragged Zhen Zhen to Reynold’s Hummer. Before she could protest, she was buckled in the front passenger seat and Reynold drove off.

‘What’s happening?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, long time no see,’ Reynold said.

‘Reynold?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘I’m happy you remembered my name,’ Reynold said.

Zhen Zhen didn’t want to remember Reynold’s name, she blamed it on her photographic memory.

‘Where do you want to eat?’ Reynold asked.

Reynold did go on many blind dates with other women, but he couldn't forget Zhen Zhen. He planned on dating Zhen Zhen and marrying her if they were compatible.

'If I remembered correctly, I didn't agree to eat with you,' Zhen Zhen said.
'Stop the car and let me leave.'

Reynold braked suddenly and Zhen Zhen's body jerked forward.

'Don't you like me?' Reynold asked.

'When did I like you?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Your supervisor Jiang said...' Reynold said. He paused and realised what happened. 'It doesn't matter. Eventually you'll like me. Let's go and eat first.'

Zhen Zhen was worried about leaving without Yue Gu Zai's permission. She'd been at work for a long time, the sky was dark and she knew Yue Gu Zai would be angry. But she skipped lunch and reasoned it was the right time to eat dinner.

Reynold parked in front of a restaurant and led Zhen Zhen to a reserved table. His past girlfriends were enamored by him so he talked confidently during dinner.

Zhen Zhen tuned out Reynold's chattering about business ventures, sports cars and modern trends.

'Zhen Zhen,' a familiar voice called.

Zhen Zhen looked up from her plate. 'San Mac?'

'What a coincidence,' San Mac said.

San Mac's happiness to see Zhen Zhen made Reynold guarded.

'It is,' Zhen Zhen said. 'It's been a long time. How are you?'

'Good, I'm working at R&D,' San Mac said. 'What about you?'

'After graduation I specialised in the scientific research field,' Zhen Zhen said.

San Mac thought Zhen Zhen hadn't changed since college. 'I read your in depth research articles.'

Reynold coughed. 'Hello, I'm Reynold.'

San Mac finally noticed Reynold was sitting at Zhen Zhen's table. 'Hello, I'm San Mac.'

San Mac took out his phone and looked at Zhen Zhen. 'Zhen Zhen, do you have a phone number?'

Zhen Zhen read her phone number to San Mac.

'OK, I won't intrude on your dinner anymore,' San Mac said. 'I'll see you another time.'

'OK,' Zhen Zhen said.

San Mac left and Reynold frowned. 'Does San Mac like you?'

'Don't say nonsense,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He's my friend from college.'

Reynold didn't spend a lot of time with Zhen Zhen, but he understood her lack of perception. He didn't like her obliviousness.

Zhen Zhen's phone rang, it was Zhen Wu.

'Mum, as your filial son,' Zhen Wu said. 'It's my duty to inform you, earlier dad found out you're eating dinner with another man. Dad was very angry and left home to pick you up. I think dad's nearly at the restaurant. Mum, you can't say I didn't give warn you. I'm hanging up.'

'Hey!' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen thought her son had no conscience, he could have warned her sooner. She looked at the entrance and saw Bai Yu Tian enter the restaurant.

Zhen Zhen stood abruptly and apologised to Reynold. 'I'm sorry, I need to go to the toilet.'

But Bai Yu Tian's legs were faster than Zhen Zhen's legs. 'Miss Zhen Zhen, if you want to go out tomorrow then you need to let me escort you home.'

'Of course I want to go home,' Zhen Zhen said and immediately followed Bai Yu Tian outside.

'Zhen Zhen!' Reynold called and chased Zhen Zhen.

'Thank you for inviting me to eat dinner,' Zhen Zhen said.

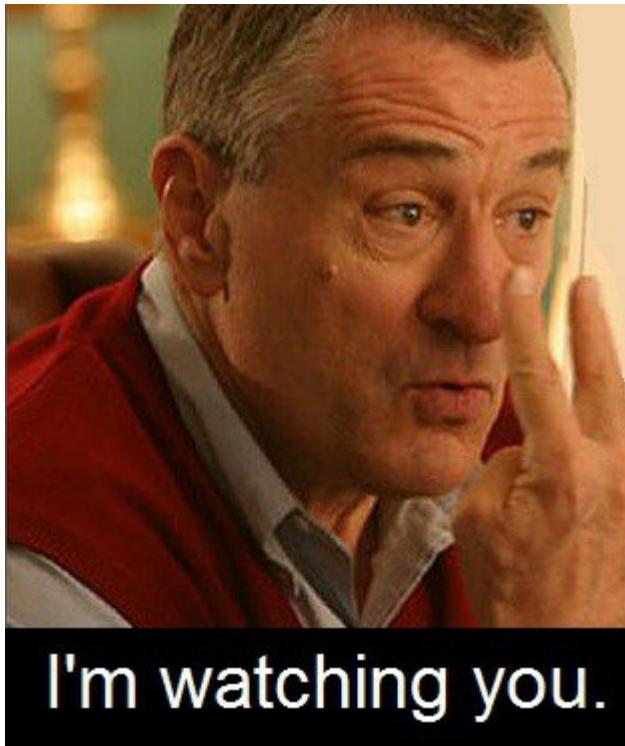
Bai Yu Tian smiled politely at Reynold and he escorted Zhen Zhen to the car.

Reynold watched Zhen Zhen enter a black car. He saw Yue Gu Zai and men armed with guns inside the car. He wondered about Yue Gu Zai and the men's identities.

End of Chapter Twenty

Related

Twenty-One



I'm watching you.

Chapter Twenty-One

The car trip home was tensed.

Zhen Zhen knew Yue Gu Zai was angry about her running off to work, but he didn't own her freedom.

'Who's that man?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Oh, he's Reynold,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You met before.'

Yue Gu Zai couldn't remember someone irrelevant like Reynold.

'Did you eat dinner with him?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

It was true Zhen Zhen did eat dinner with Reynold even if he was an irrelevant man. But she didn't know how to answer Yue Gu Zai's question without making him angrier.

'I usually eat dinner with you,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai didn't say anything else and the tension in the car intensified. Only Bai Yu Tian was unaffected.

'Tomorrow I'll escort you to see your parents,' Yue Gu Zai said suddenly.

The hair on Zhen Zhen's body all rose. 'No! My parents are ordinary civilians. A boss like you would scare my parents.'

'I've prepared everything to meet your parents,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'We'll leave early in the morning to go to your parents' house.'

Zhen Zhen pouted her lips and mumbled, 'toxic man.'

Later that evening, Zhen Zhen was too upset with Yue Gu Zai. She slept on the bed with her back facing Yue Gu Zai the whole night, but he didn't change his mind.

Early the following morning, Zhen Zhen's back was sore from sleeping in an awkward position. On the way to her parents' house, Yue Gu Zai massaged her back but her back was still sore.

At Zhen Zhen's parents' house, Zhen Zhen's mum opened the door and was surprised to see Zhen Zhen.

'Old man, your daughter's home,' Mrs Zhen said.

'Old woman, there's no reason for you to be emotional just because she's home,' Mr Zhen lied.

Mr Zhen missed his daughter. He hadn't seen his daughter for a long time, but he spoke calmly, 'You finally decide to visit. I thought you don't know how to part with your lab. Where's my grandson?'

'Dad, Zhen Wu's at school,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen was too happy to see her parents that she forgot about Yue Gu Zai.

'What's so good about school?' Mr Zhen said. 'My grandson is smart enough to go to college. Missing a day at school isn't an issue. I think you didn't let him visit, because you're scared I'll monopolise him.'

'Old man, what are you saying to your daughter?' Mrs Zhen asked and glared at Mr Zhen.

Mrs Zhen noticed a tall man was standing behind her daughter. 'Who is this gentleman?'

'Hello aunty, my name is Yue Gu Zai,' Yue Gu Zai greeted. 'I'm Zhen Zhen's

husband.'

'Husband...' Mrs Zhen said in a startled tone of voice.

'Mum, don't listen to his nonsense... he's... my boyfriend,' Zhen Zhen lied.

Zhen Zhen was scared to tell her parents the truth about being married to Yue Gu Zai, but if she said she had no relations with Yue Gu Zai then Yue Gu Zai would be angry.

'Mum, dad, aren't you two always nagging me about being in the lab all day long?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Now I'm bringing my boyfriend home to meet mum and dad.'

'Oh... then come inside,' Mrs Zhen said.

Inside Mr and Mrs Zhen's house, Yue Gu Zai presented the gifts he asked Bai Yu Tian to buy.

'Aunt, these are tickets to see the comedy show at the theatre next Monday evening,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Uncle, I hope you like this vintage painting from France.'

'You didn't need to bring any gifts,' Mrs Zhen said. 'It's enough you came to visit us.'

Mrs Zhen thought the little boy Gu Zai was a sincere boy. The tickets he gave her were VIP tickets to the comedy show she wanted to see, but the tickets were sold out.

'Have the two of you eaten?' Mrs Zhen asked. 'Why don't you two stay for dinner?'

Zhen Zhen couldn't believe Yue Gu Zai investigated her parents to find out her parents' interests. She thought Yue Gu Zai used the gifts to buy her parents' approval.

Mr Zhen silently assessed the little boy Gu Zai. He admitted Gu Zai looked like a good specimen. But he was going to give his future son-in-law a hard time to keep Gu Zai on his toes.

'Little boy, what do you do for a living?' Mr Zhen asked.

'Dad, he owns a business,' Zhen Zhen said.

Mr Zhen gave his daughter a warning look and she closed her mouth.

Mr Zhen knew Gu Zai was a successful boss if Gu Zai could afford to buy a rare expensive painting to give to him.

'Little boy, what type of business do you run?' Mr Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai secretly glanced at Zhen Zhen. She gave him a warning look, if he dared to say he sold weapons then she would dump him. But she knew he didn't want to lie to her parents. Besides, to him there was no difference between selling weapons and selling fruits and vegetables.

'I own a trading business,' Yue Gu Zai said diplomatically.

Zhen Zhen let out a tensed breath, luckily Yue Gu Zai didn't say he sold weapons.

Mr Zhen nodded and accepted Gu Zai's explanation. 'Where do you live? Where do your parents work?'

'My parents are no longer living here,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Mr Zhen thought Gu Zai meant his parents weren't alive instead of living overseas. So Mr Zhen was relieved, his daughter wouldn't be bullied by wicked in-laws if Gu Zai's parents weren't alive.

'Do you know about my grandson?' Mr Zhen asked.

Mr Zhen saw Gu Zai nodded. He was happy Gu Zai didn't mind about his daughter's past. As long as his daughter liked Gu Zai, he wasn't going to give Gu Zai grief.

'In the past my daughter was blind and chose the wrong man,' Mr Zhen said. 'I regret I didn't get to teach that bastard a lesson. In the future you better treat my daughter well, understand?'

Yue Gu Zai wanted to ask what Mr Zhen meant by Zhen Zhen being blind and choosing the wrong man.

'Dad, he understands,' Zhen Zhen interrupted before Yue Gu Zai could open his mouth.

'Enough, everyone should eat dinner,' Mrs Zhen said.

'Yes, yes, eat dinner,' Zhen Zhen hastily agreed.

Yue Gu Zai knew Zhen Zhen was hiding a secret from him, but he didn't voice his suspicions and let Zhen Zhen drag him to the dining table.

'Gu Zai, you should eat a lot,' Mrs Zhen said. 'I hope you'll excuse my poor cooking skills.'

'Aunt, the food is delicious,' Yue Gu Zai praised honestly.

Yue Gu Zai wasn't someone who forced himself to eat food that wasn't delicious, but he knew it didn't hurt to suck up to his mother-in-law.

Mrs Zhen was happy to hear her future son-in-law praise her cooking. She put more food into Gu Zai's bowl.

Yue Gu Zai hated someone else putting food into his bowl. But Bai Yu Tian advised him it was important to make his wife's parents happy so he forced himself to eat the food Mrs Zhen put in his bowl.

'My daughter is impulsive and lacks good judgement,' Mrs Zhen said. 'I hope you won't mind her flaws.'

'Mum, why are you picking on me?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'If you're not an impulsive person then in the past you wouldn't have met that bastard who abandoned you after giving birth to Zhen Wu!' Mr Zhen said. 'You better not ever let me meet that bastard. If I meet that bastard, I'll give him a beating!'

Mr Zhen was always upset when he was reminded about Zhen Wu's irresponsible and heartless father. He could still remember clearly the day his precious daughter ran home crying and telling him she was pregnant but the child's father ran off. At that time he was both angry and worried for his daughter's future, he suggested she abort the child. If she didn't insist on keeping the child then he wouldn't get to be his precious Zhen Wu's granddad.

The truth was Zhen Zhen didn't dare tell her parents that she planned a one night stand to conceive Zhen Wu. If she told her parents the truth, her parents would have beaten her to death. So she lied and said Zhen Wu's dad abandoned

her since it was common for men to abandon their pregnant lovers. In the past she didn't think she would see Zhen Wu's dad again. But Yue Gu Zhen found her... he was sitting next to her and looked like he wanted to skin her.

Unexpectedly Yue Gu Zai calmly put his bowl and chopsticks on the dining table.

'Uncle, aunt, I'm Zhen Wu's biological father,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Mr Zhen couldn't believe what he heard. He looked closely at Gu Zai and realised why Gu Zai looked so familiar to him, Gu Zai looked exactly like his precious Zhen Wu. Gu Zai was the bastard that abandoned his precious daughter and Zhen Wu! What did Gu Zai want? Did Gu Zai want custody of Zhen Wu? Gu Zai shouldn't even dream about it!

'You bastard!' Mr Zhen cursed. 'Leave! I don't want to see your face!'

'Uncle, please listen to my explanation,' Yue Gu Zai said calmly.

'I don't want to listen to your explanation!' Mr Zhen said. 'If you want custody of Zhen Wu, I want you know I'll never let that happen! You abandoned my daughter. I'll never accept you. Leave!'

Mr Zhen was gasping for air and his old chest pain relapsed.

Yue Gu Zai knew if he stayed any longer, Mr and Mrs Zhen wouldn't give their blessing for him to be with Zhen Zhen.

'Uncle, I'll leave first and I'll visit you another time,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Leave!' Mr Zhen yelled. 'You're not welcome here! You don't need to come back here again!'

'Old man, calm down,' Mrs Zhen said. 'You need to take care of your health.'

Zhen Zhen rubbed her dad's chest. 'Dad...'

Zhen Zhen was relieved to see Yue Gu Zai leave, but she felt guilty about her parents misunderstanding him.

'I'm warning you,' Mr Zhen said to Zhen Zhen. 'You're not allowed to see that bastard again!'

Mrs Zhen helped Mr Zhen walked to their bedroom while Zhen Zhen was upset

why everything turned into a mess.

End of Chapter Twenty-One

Related

Twenty-Two



Reality = Catching A Cold

Reelity = Catching A Love Bug

Chapter Twenty-Two

Despite Mr Zhen giving Yue Gu Zai the boot, Yue Gu Zai walked to the car in a dignified fashion.

Inside the car, Yue Gu Zai acted his usual calm self except he wore a sour expression and emitted a dissatisfied vibe.

Of course the Bai fox could hear Yue Gu Zai's dismal meeting with Mr and Mrs Zhen, he was eavesdropping at the door. The Bai fox didn't feel an ounce of guilt, it was his duty to understand his boss' moods and know what advice to give when necessary.

'Boss, if you want Mr Zhen to accept you as a son-in-law, you need the support of three people,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'The first person is Miss Zhen Zhen. As long as she supports you, Mr Zhen can't overlook his daughter's happiness and overtime he'll accept you. But Miss Zhen Zhen isn't aware of her own heart so she's not a feasible solution.'

Yue Gu Zai rubbed his eyelids, Bai Yu Tian holding back laughter was detected by his sharp eyes. Even if the heavens and earth were in chaos, Bai Yu Tian wouldn't disappoint his years of training Bai Yu Tian.

'The second person is young master Zhen Wu,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Mr Zhen definitely loves his grandson. If young master Zhen Wu sulks and put in a good

word for boss, there'll be two possible outcomes. One, it'll soften Mr Zhen's heart or two, Mr Zhen will be more guarded toward boss because he'll think you want to take his grandson away from him. Two is the most likely outcome. It's hard for Mr Zhen to understand why an irresponsible man who abandoned his daughter would suddenly have a change of heart and want to get back in his good books. Mr Zhen can only reason boss wants to steal his beloved grandson.'

Yue Gu Zai hated to hear himself being accused as an irresponsible man abandoning a pregnant Zhen Zhen. His eyes darkened while the eavesdropper Bai Yu Tian was caught and knew Bai Yu Tian's next mission would be somewhere remote.

'The third person and the most vital is boss,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Yue Gu Zai creased his eyebrows, he was curious about Bai Yu Tian's reasoning.

'Boss, there's a book called striking the psychological heart,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'And a saying called sincerity can overcome tribulations. Mr Zhen is someone raised from the old school era. If boss makes the effort to show Mr Zhen your sincerity and other good traits then you'll achieve your goal. Overtime, Mr Zhen will naturally accept you.'

'What good traits am I supposed to show?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Hmmm... boss is a responsible man...' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian's eyes gleamed brightly. 'A good man... is someone who'll sacrifice his body for the woman he loves and makes her a ring by hand even if it looks ugly.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't understand the meaning of sacrificing body and making a ring.

'Boss, if you want to be a good man, you need to show sincerity,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'A good man is also a man who would fight with a group of crooks to protect the woman he loves even if he can't defeat the crooks on his own.'

Yue Gu Zai was skeptical about losing a fight. For years, he hadn't lost a fight with another person. Why wouldn't he be able to defeat a group of crooks on his own? It wasn't possible. Was he supposed to pretend to lose to another person? That would be a hard task, his muscles were too trained and would automatically

counteract another person's strikes.

'Boss, honestly a good man is just someone who always protects the woman he loves,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Yue Gu Zai looked skeptically at Bai Yu Tian.

'On a rainy night, a good man would stand in the rain below the bedroom window of the woman he loves,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'He'll ring her phone and tell her that he forgot his keys. After she throws the keys out the window, she'll find out he's standing in the rain, holding a bouquet of roses and she'll call out his name.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't think it was a practical plan. He and his wife lived in a home that used security codes instead of keys. How was Zhen Zhen supposed to throw him keys?

'Boss, this is called a good man is a romantic man,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'A good man will slip a gold card under his lover's pillow while she's sleeping. He can't give the gold card to her directly otherwise it'll look like he's calling her a gold digger.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't know what gold card to give to Zhen Zhen. Whenever he was out he never needed to use a gold card. It was Bai Yu Tian who managed his bills. Where was he supposed to find a gold card?

'Boss, a good man is someone who takes care of his woman,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'He knows how to cook, do housework and doesn't have a cold face like boss' face right now.'

Yue Gu Zai leaned back on his seat and acted like he didn't hear Bai Yu Tian's advice. But he silently thought about how he could show he was a good man.

Later that night, Yue Gu Zai naively stayed awake thinking about when it would rain at night. He looked out the window for a minute, it was raining. He grabbed the car keys and sped to Zhen Zhen's parents' house.

At Zhen Zhen's parents' house, Zhen Zhen was lying in bed thinking about what happened after her dad found out Yue Gu Zai was Zhen Wu's dad. Her dad looked like he wanted to pick up a blade and behead her. She admitted she was a chicken and didn't dare to tell her dad the truth. If her dad knew she lied to him

for years, he would beat her to death. Then she thought about her dad kicking a triad boss like Yue Gu Zai out the door, she was worried Yue Gu Zai's pride was hurt. Yue Gu Zai was a prideful man who would hate to be accused of being an irresponsible man. She felt like she wasn't human, but a pig head.

Zhen Zhen hugged a bed pillow and continued to berate herself. Suddenly she heard someone softly knocking on the back door beneath her bedroom. She didn't know who would knock on a door in the middle of night while it was raining. A gust of wind collided with the window and produced a scary noise. It reminded her of a scary movie she watched, a murderer crept through the victim's bedroom window on a stormy night. She was too scared to look at the bedroom window.

Zhen Zhen pretended she didn't hear anything and played dead on the bed. But the soft knocking on the door continued and made her heart beat in a panicked rhythm. A bright lightning forced her to look out the window and she saw an outline of a person below the window. She wished she had fainted. If she was unconscious then she wouldn't see anything, because she was too scared to face that person.

After Yue Gu Zai broke through Zhen Zhen's window, she panicked.

'Oh, good timing,' Zhen Zhen lied.

Zhen Zhen wanted to bite off her tongue. What good timing? Why would a full belly person have nothing better to do than running to her parents' house to climb through a bedroom window?

Yue Gu Zai's body was drenched in rain water. He wanted to strangle the Bai fox to death. What good was standing in the rain below his wife's bedroom window?

'You're wet,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Do you want to shower and change into dry clothes?'

Zhen Zhen regretted her chicken words. What shower? What change clothes? She should have been brave enough to ask Yue Gu Zai what was wrong with him to make him run to her parents' house and stand in the rain. But she was a chicken and didn't have the guts to demand an explanation and kick him outside.

Yue Gu Zai nodded and Zhen Zhen smiled sweetly at him.

‘Let me help you find dry clothes to wear,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen found one of her dad’s nightclothes in the dryer and snuck back to her bedroom the same time Yue Gu Zai came out of the bathroom. His body was wet and he wrapped a bath towel around his waist. Her face and ears turned red. She put her dad’s nightclothes on a table, grabbed another towel to help dry his wet hair.

‘Later change into the dry clothes I put on the table,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Um,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen’s throat turned dry at the sound of Yue Gu Zai’s husky voice. She really wanted to ask him why he was standing in the rain, but she didn’t dare.

During an awkward silence, Yue Gu Zai was thinking about when was the right time and enjoying the sensation of Zhen Zhen’s fingers drying his hair.

After a while, Yue Gu Zai gave Zhen Zhen a gold card.

‘What is this?’ Zhen Zhen asked suspiciously.

‘All my savings are linked to this gold card and there’s no spending limit,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Are you giving this gold card to me?’ Zhen Zhen asked hesitantly.

Yue Gu Zai stared intensely at Zhen Zhen’s eyes for a while.

‘If you don’t like me then you can return your copy of our marriage certificate,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Besides, it’s just a piece of paper.’

Zhen Zhen swallowed her saliva and she didn’t know why Yue Gu Zai’s eyes were so mesmerizing.

‘That’s not my intention,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I just want to know why you’re giving your gold card to me.’

Zhen Zhen wasn’t a pauper. Why did she need to accept Yue Gu Zai’s gold card?

‘If I’m giving it to you, just take it,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘You don’t need to ask so many questions.’

Yue Gu Zai put the gold card on Zhen Zhen's hand.

Zhen Zhen thought Yue Gu Zai masked his shyness under anger. What was good about an ordinary gold card? It was easier for her to accept the gold card. She let Nan Ma manage her bank account so it wasn't a big deal that his savings were linked to the gold card. She thought he gave her access to a couple of millions.

'Is this gold card linked to a lot of money?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Um, a couple of billions,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai didn't know the exact amount, but he knew his savings weren't a small balance.

'What... a couple of billions?' Zhen Zhen asked and stopped drying Yue Gu Zai's hair. 'What if I'm not careful and lose it?'

'If it's lost then it's lost,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I want to sleep.'

Yue Gu Zai immediately laid on Zhen Zhen's small bed.

Zhen Zhen laid next to Yue Gu Zai. She was carefully holding the gold card in her hand and mumbling what would happen if she lost it.

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen on the small bed. He was happy they had to stick close to each other so they wouldn't fall off the bed, and thought about swapping their big bed in their home for a small bed.

Zhen Zhen had no choice but to sleep on the cramped bed. Luckily she didn't know the gold card she was holding was linked to hundreds of billions otherwise she would have stayed up all night.

End of Chapter Twenty-Two

Related

Twenty-Three & Twenty-Four Summaries



Chapter Twenty-Three & Twenty-Four Summaries

Chapter Twenty-Three:

Zhen Zhen woke up and fell off the bed.

She thought last night was a dream. But the shiny gold card meant Yue Gu Zai did stand in the rain last night, and slept on the bed together with her.

San Mac rang Zhen Zhen. He used the excuse of their graduate class reunion to meet up with Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen was known as the beautiful prodigy in college. Most of her female classmates were jealous of her, and made her an outcast. While she was too preoccupied with practical research assignments to notice her male classmates had crushes on her, especially San Mac.

Zhen Zhen roped Nan Ma to come to the class reunion for moral support.

Chapter Twenty-Four Summary:

Zhen Zhen's former female classmates made snide remarks to put Zhen Zhen down. Zhen Zhen cried in the toilet until Nan Ma arrived at the restaurant.

Zhen Zhen re-joined the dinner table. San Mac knelt in front of Zhen Zhen, held a bouquet of roses and he made a public love confession to Zhen Zhen.

'But... I... you... I have a son,' Zhen Zhen mumbled.

The bitchy classmates called Zhen Zhen a liar.

'How many years have you been using the same excuse to reject big brother San Mac?' one of the bitches asked. 'Your 'son' should be 5 or 6 now. Why haven't any of us met your son before?'

San Mac pressured Zhen Zhen to accept his love confession.

'Zhen Zhen, will you be my girlfriend?' San Mac asked.

'Hurry up and say you'll be big brother's girlfriend,' a bitch said.

Suddenly Cheng Yi showed up at the restaurant.

'What a lively get together,' Cheng Yi said sarcastically. 'Am I intruding?'

Zhen Zhen was scared shitless. If Cheng Yi showed up, it meant Yue Gu Zai wasn't far from the restaurant.

'Why are you here?' Zhen Zhen asked Cheng Yi.

'Boss asked me to prepare gifts for Miss Zhen Zhen's college friends,' Cheng Yi said.

Cheng Yi passed around expensive gifts, stood and pretended to leave.

'Oh, I forgot,' Cheng Yi lied. 'Boss wants me to tell Miss Zhen Zhen, he hopes you'll have a good time.'

Zhen Zhen was beyond scared.

'Cheng Yi...' Zhen Zhen pleaded Cheng Yi.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, do you have a request?' Cheng Yi taunted.

'Wait for me outside,' Zhen Zhen said.

'OK,' Cheng Yi said.

After Cheng Yi left, everyone at the dinner table was silent.

'San Mac, let's talk outside,' Zhen Zhen whispered, but everyone heard.

Outside Zhen Zhen and San Mac stood in a quiet spot.

'Do you really have a son?' San Mac asked Zhen Zhen.

'Um, I took a year off during college to give birth to my son,' Zhen Zhen said.

'That year, professor said you were studying overseas,' San Mac said.

'San Mac... I...' Zhen Zhen mumbled.

'Are we still friends?' San Mac asked dejectedly.

'Um,' Zhen Zhen said and relieved San Mac stopped pressuring her.

'You should go,' San Mac said. He pointed at Cheng Yi. 'He's been waiting for you a long time.'

'What about you?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen could only look apologetically at San Mac, and leave with Cheng Yi.

Cheng Yi escorted Zhen Zhen to a secret adjoining building to the restaurant.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, you should be worrying about yourself,' Cheng Yi said.

'What is there for me to worry about?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Boss saw everything that happened inside the restaurant from the security camera,' Cheng Yi said.

'Everything?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Um, everything,' Cheng Yi said. 'Including another man kneeling in front of you and offering you a bouquet of roses.'

'Cheng Yi...' Zhen Zhen pleaded.

'Yes?' Cheng Yi asked.

'You can stop taunting me,' Zhen Zhen said.

'OK, you're right,' Cheng Yi confessed. 'I'll stop.'

Inside the secret building, Yue Gu Zai was glaring at a big security screen. Bai Yu Tian and Huyen Di were standing behind Yue Gu Zai and giving Zhen Zhen pity looks.

Zhen Zhen looked nervously at the screen. She was surprised to see live footage of Chu Gian standing in front of a rival gang surrounded at gun point.

'The weapons are in Las Vegas,' Mr Jin said. 'If you want more news, it'll cost you 50 million.'

'It depends if Mr Jin's news is worth that much,' Chu Gian said.

After a failed negotiation, Zhen Zhen chased after an angry Yue Gu Zai. She didn't walk fast enough. So he wrapped an arm around her waist and escorted her to the car.

Everyone at the restaurant was looking out the window, and they saw the way Yu Gu Zai was protective of Zhen Zhen until they disappeared in the car.

End of Chapter Twenty-Three & Twenty-Four Summaries.

Related

Twenty-Five



Chapter Twenty-Five

Ling Jia spoiled Yue Gu Zai since he was a boy.

Ling Jia was an unorthodox mum. She gave Yue Gu Zai anything he wanted as long as he didn't ask her to kill or light anyone on fire. Which was why Yue Gu Zai didn't experience what it meant to be jealous. He also had teacher and Louis spoiling him. Luckily he didn't grow up to be a spoiled brat.

For years in Yue Gu Zai's dictionary, jealousy didn't exist. All he had to do was open his mouth, and he would get what he wanted. He wasn't angry another man wanted to serenade his wife with a bouquet of roses. He was in a bad mood because his wife was distancing herself from him.

After the car stopped in front of their home, Yue Gu Zai silently got out of the car and left Zhen Zhen behind.

'Is he angry?' Zhen Zhen asked Bai Yu Tian softly.

Bai Yu Tian chivalrously opened the car door for Zhen Zhen.

'Isn't the answer obvious?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'If you didn't drive me here then I would be at my parents' home,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Boss would be angrier if I didn't drive you here,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Zhen Zhen sighed. She didn't know why Yue Gu Zai was suddenly angry. Was it because of Ni Sheng's failed deal? Or was it because Yue Gu Zai's former gang member was a double agent and betrayed him? Of course she would be angry

too if someone she trained and trusted betrayed her. But his former gang member's betrayal had nothing to do with her. Why was he angry at her? Did he see her as his boxing bag?

Zhen Zhen walked into the bedroom, Yue Gu Zai was unbuttoning his shirt. She stood next to the bed and fiddled her fingers.

'Honestly it's normal for you to be angry,' Zhen Zhen said. 'It's inevitable to come across greedy people who only care about their own self-interests.'

Zhen Zhen wanted to say a few comforting words to Yue Gu Zai, but he didn't look like he appreciated her efforts. She wasn't a sweet talker, but they lived together long enough for her to be used to his moods. Suddenly her head felt dizzy, she grabbed onto Yue Gu Zai and they fell on the bed. Her lower body was trapped underneath his spread legs, and she couldn't move. His breath fluttered over her cheeks, and her hair hid his eyes that were engraved in her heart.

Zhen Zhen's heart was beating fast, her body was sweating and she swallowed saliva. While Yue Gu Zai was looking into her oblivious eyes. He couldn't believe she thought he was angry about a deal gone south.

'You dummy woman,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai let go of Zhen Zhen, stood and walked into the bathroom.

Zhen Zhen didn't understand why he called her a dummy, and sat up on the bed confused.

'Hey!' Zhen Zhen said. 'Explain what you meant by a dummy woman. Who's a dummy woman? You're the dummy, Mr Dummy.'

Zhen Zhen only heard the sounds of water running from the bathroom, and she wasn't certain if he heard her. But she didn't care if he heard her or not, she wanted to move back home.

Zhen Zhen opened the cupboard and pulled out a small luggage bag. Luckily she didn't pack too many of her belongings when she moved into his home.

A photo album fell onto the floor. Zhen Zhen was curious what photos were inside so she opened the photo album. The photos were mostly of a young woman's life photos from childhood to adulthood. There were two other men in

some of the photos with the young woman. One of the men was Louis then young woman must be...

Yue Gu Zai walked out the bathroom. He was drying his hair and noticed Zhen Zhen was sitting on the ground browsing through photos. He draped the towel around his neck, picked up reports from the bedside table and sat on the bed.

'Who's this woman?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'My mum,' Yue Gu Zai said and continued reviewing reports.

Zhen Zhen looked back and forth at the photos and Yue Gu Zai.

'Liar,' Zhen Zhen said.

'I look more like my dad,' Yue Gu Zai said.

But Zhen Zhen didn't think Yue Gu Zai looked remotely like his mum... Zhen Zhen thought about how she pictured what his mum would look like in the past. What gentle and beautiful woman? The woman in the photos didn't look gentle at all. The woman liked to pinch Louis' cheeks, had average looks and grabbed another person's lollipop.

Zhen Zhen's image of Yue Gu Zai was shattered.

Yue Gu Zai didn't hear Zhen Zhen make a sound for half a day. He looked at her, she looked traumatized.

Zhen Zhen thought Louis looked handsome in the photos with Yue Gu Zai's mum. Louis' eyes were always focused on Yue Gu Zai's mum and Zhen Zhen felt envious and thought Yue Gu Zai's mum must be a blessed woman. But Yue Gu Zai's mum didn't pay attention to Prince Louis.

'Louis must love your mum,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai didn't deny the truth.

'What about your mum?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Does she love Louis?'

'My mum only loves my dad,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Your dad?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai didn't reply and Zhen Zhen didn't pry it out of him.

'Louis is a pitiful man,' Zhen Zhen said.

'You don't need to pity him,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'It's his choice to live that way.'

Zhen Zhen thought love was more complicated than bacteria. Her confused heart flew away after she saw a childhood photo of Yue Gu Zai. He was wearing a weird vintage white outfit, but he looked adorable.

'Where did you get the bouquet of white roses?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'You look adorable in this photo.'

Yue Gu Zai put the reports on the bedside table. He got out of bed, grabbed the photo album out of Zhen Zhen's hands and carried her to the bed.

Zhen Zhen felt like she was hypnotized by Yue Gu Zai, and she let him lay her on the bed. Afterward their bodies moved naturally like water flowing.

Yue Gu Zai was tossing his and Zhen Zhen's clothes onto the abandoned photo album and luggage bag while she put aside her plans of running away.

End of Chapter Twenty-Five

Related

Twenty-Six



Chapter Twenty-Six

Zhen Wu kicked opened his parents' bedroom door. He didn't care his parents were still in bed.

Zhen Wu was dressed in a stylish black outfit. He knew he was a handsome boy. Many agents have scouted him on the streets and given their business cards to him. But he wasn't interested in becoming a star. It was his dad's fault he was bugged by strangers, his dad was a handsome man.

Zhen Wu checked out his dad's body from top to bottom. 'Dad, you have a beautifully sculpted body.'

Yue Gu Zai wasn't flustered by his son's praise. He got out of bed and grabbed a shirt from the cupboard.

'Who taught you that phrase?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Wu said.

Yue Gu Zai looked suspiciously at his wife who was pretending to be sleeping under the bedsheet.

Zhen Wu stole a glance at his mum and smiled. 'Dad, I'll tell you a secret.'

Although Zhen Wu was telling his dad a secret, he purposely didn't whisper. 'Zhen Zhen loves catalogue models in magazines who have toned muscles. It's

her favorite type of man.'

'Little boy, those magazines belong to your godmother,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I didn't buy those magazines.'

Zhen Zhen couldn't keep pretending she was asleep, because she was framed. She forced herself to crawl out of bed otherwise her son would say more nonsense.

'Mum, can you say you've never looked at the magazines?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu creased his brows identical to his dad's creased brows. It made Zhen Zhen want to kick both of them outside.

'I only browsed the magazines a bit,' Zhen Zhen said. 'But it's because they were conveniently at my fingertips... it's a waste if I don't look at the magazines your godmother bought.'

Zhen Zhen laughed awkwardly.

'Were the men handsome?' Yue Gu Zai asked and finished dressing.

'What?' Zhen Zhen pretended she didn't hear.

Yue Gu Zai patiently asked again. 'Were the men handsome?'

'You're... more handsome,' Zhen Zhen said sweetly.

Zhen Zhen valued her life and didn't want to die mysteriously.

Yue Gu Zai couldn't help but smile briefly.

Zhen Wu saw his dad's happiness to hear his mum praise his dad. 'Dad, Bai Fox said you want to go to North America.'

'Zhen Wu, you need to call uncle, Uncle Bai,' Zhen Zhen corrected.

Although Zhen Zhen called Bai Yu Tian, Bai Fox, she wanted to teach Zhen Wu how to address his elders respectively.

'Yes mum,' Zhen Wu agreed even though his mum was being hypocritical. 'Dad, this time I want to go overseas with you and mum.'

'No,' Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen said firmly at the same time.

'Why not?' Zhen Wu asked.

Although Zhen Wu was a young boy, he thought his dad would take his side. He looked at his dad to silently threaten if his dad refused to take him overseas again then he would match make his mum with another man, and his dad would be angry to death.

‘Because you need to go to school,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen wanted her son to experience going to school with children his own age.

‘Son, do you want to eat?’ Yue Gu Zai deflected the conversation.

Zhen Wu was surprised by his dad’s sudden question and nodded his head.

‘OK, follow me to my study room,’ Yue Gu Zai said to Zhen Wu.

Zhen Zhen watched the father and son pair walk outside, she was curious about what they wanted to talk about in private. She was about to secretly follow them, but her phone rang. It was her parents’ home number, and she freaked because she forgot to let her parents know she wasn’t going to sleep at their home last night.

Inside Yue Gu Zai’s study room, Zhen Wu comfortably sat on the chair opposite his dad.

‘Son, I need your help,’ Yue Gu Zai said directly.

Zhen Wu was a genius, it didn’t take him long to figure out his dad’s motive. He heard about his dad first meeting with his maternal grandparents.

‘Dad, did you have trouble receiving grandpa’s approval?’ Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu’s grandpa was infamous for holding grudges. He knew about his mum lying to his grandpa about his dad abandoning them. But he wouldn’t help his dad for free.

‘Yes,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Dad, do you want me to persuade grandpa and grandma to accept you?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘Yes,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘What’s in it for me?’ Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu understood the code of men, they wouldn't help each other freely.

'You won't need to go to school,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'OK,' Zhen Wu agreed happily. 'But dad, after school today you need to pick me up. You have to wait with my classmates' parents outside the classroom. You can't sit and wait in the car.'

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'After school I want to eat McDonald's,' Zhen Wu said.

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I want to go to the amusement park too,' Zhen Wu said.

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Deal,' Zhen Wu said and jumped off the chair that was taller than him.

Zhen Wu didn't want to disturb his dad working, but he forgot to ask his dad a question he wanted to ask for a long time.

'Dad, haven't you thought about changing my surname to yours?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Is having the same surname as me important to you?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai honestly didn't think about changing his son's surname.

'That isn't why I asked,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu only asked because he was curious. He thought all rich men wanted their children to have the same surname as their surname like in the TV shows.

'Dad, I was worried it mattered to you about my surname,' Zhen Wu said.

'I'm not fussed about your surname,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai wasn't like most men who wanted their children to have the same surname as them.

'Dad, I understand,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu thought the politics about surnames were troublesome. Besides, his mum didn't think deeply when she chose his name. Luckily his dad didn't want him to change his name to Yue Wu, it didn't have a nice ring to it as Zhen Wu.

Zhen Wu happily left his dad's study room and was driven to school.

Honestly Zhen Wu didn't hate going to school. He was excited to hear his dad promised to go on outings with him. So when people pinched his cheeks at school that day, he smiled happily and let them squeeze his cheeks.

While Zhen Wu was at school, Yue Gu Zai was busy working. Yue Gu Zai had taken leave from work to be with his wife, and his workload piled up. Although he was busy, he was going to honor his promise he made to his son. He asked Bai Yu Tian in advance to prepare more than twenty cars for him to choose which car to pick up his son.

Later that day, Yue Gu Zai went with his wife to pick up their son from school. They waited outside their son's classroom, but it was sprinkling and crowded outside.

Zhen Wu's classmates' parents were familiar with Zhen Zhen, but they never met Yue Gu Zai before. Even the married women envied Zhen Zhen having a handsome man like Yue Gu Zai.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, I haven't seen you pick up your son for many days,' one of the married women said. 'Is this man your boyfriend?'

Zhen Zhen didn't know what she should say and only smiled politely.

'He's very handsome,' the married woman said. 'I've never met Zhen Wu's dad before. Everyone said Zhen Wu was a love child. But if my child's dad is as handsome as your man, I would hide him at home too.'

Zhen Zhen laughed, but Yue Gu Zai ignored the married woman and anticipated his son's class being dismissed.

After the school bell rang, the teachers led the young students outside their classrooms.

Zhen Wu spotted his dad and boasted about his dad to Xiao Jiang. 'Look, my dad came to pick me up today. Dad's taking me to eat McDonald's.'

Xiao Jiang looked in the direction Zhen Wu was pointing at. Because it was sprinkling, Xiao Jiang could only see a tall man stood next to his dad in the crowd. But Xiao Jiang thought Zhen Wu's dad gave off a feeling of a strong king.

His dad looked fat next to Zhen Wu's dad, and his dad was speaking loudly on the phone. He was envious Zhen Wu had a manly dad.

Yue Gu Zai saw his son running to him, passed the umbrella to his wife, picked up his son and stood under the umbrella his wife was holding. Afterward the three of them walked to the car.

Xiao Jiang watched Zhen Wu's dad carrying Zhen Wu to the car enviously.

'Dad, can you carry me to the car?' Xiao Jiang asked.

'I'm busy, go to the car first,' Xiao Jiang's dad said.

Unlike Xiao Jiang's dad, Yue Gu Zai happily took Zhen Wu to McDonald's.

End of Chapter Twenty-Six

Related

Twenty-Seven



Chapter Twenty-Seven

Yue Gu Zai's Mercedes-Benz parked at McDonald's.

In Xiao Jiang's dad's car, Xiao Jiang pushed the window down button.

'Dad, I want to eat McDonald's,' Xiao Jiang said.

Xiao Jiang's dad stopped talking on the phone, instructed the driver to go to McDonald's and resumed talking on the phone.

'Uncle Chen, I want to go to the McDonald's Zhen Wu's dad's car drove to,' Xiao Jiang said.

'Yes young master,' the driver said.

A while later the driver parked at McDonald's.

The moment Xiao Jiang walked into McDonald's, he saw Zhen Wu. Although Xiao Jiang's dad wasn't handsome as Zhen Wu's dad, he thought at least his dad was richer than Zhen Wu's dad.

'Dad, I want to sit over there,' Xiao Jiang said and pointed at the table next to Zhen Wu's table.

'Xiao Jiang, I have to meet a client,' Xiao Jiang's dad said. 'I called your mum already. Uncle Chen will stay here with you and your mum will come here later.'

'Dad...' Xiao Jiang sulked and watched his dad leave.

Xiao Jiang stopped himself from crying after he saw Zhen Wu was looking at him.

'Uncle Chen I want to eat a chicken burger, fries and drink coke,' Xiao Jiang said.

'Young master, sit down first and I'll order food for you,' Mr Chen said.

Zhen Wu wasn't impressed with his surroundings, but he saw Xiao Jiang sit on the table next to his table and acted excited.

'Dad, look at this toy,' Zhen Wu said. 'It's a fun toy.'

Zhen Wu inwardly berated himself, toys didn't interest him, he preferred his computer.

'Dad, try the delicious fries,' Zhen Wu urged.

Yue Gu Zai frowned. He didn't like eating junk food. He could see his son hated eating junk food too, but they both forced themselves to eat junk food.

Zhen Zhen spotted Xiao Jiang and waved to him. 'Xiao Jiang, you're here too.'

'Hello aunty Zhen,' Xiao Jiang greeted.

Mr Chen brought the food Xiao Jiang ordered to Xiao Jiang's table.

'Uncle Chen, I want the same toy as Zhen Wu,' Xiao Jiang said.

'Zhen Wu, you don't like this kind of toy,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Why don't you give your toy to Xiao Jiang?'

Zhen Zhen knew her son hated figurines. She didn't want to waste money on something her son didn't like so she suggested her son give the figurine to Xiao Jiang.

'Who said I didn't like this toy?' Zhen Wu asked. 'Mum can't you see I'm having fun playing with it?'

Zhen Wu forced himself to play with the toy aeroplane. 'Fly, fly.'

Zhen Zhen understood Zhen Wu was purposely showing off in front of Xiao Jiang. She was about to lecture Zhen Wu to play nice with his friends, but was startled by a loud voice from behind her.

‘Xiao Jiang, sorry for making you wait,’ Xiao Jiang’s mum said. ‘I ran here after I received your dad’s call.’

Xiao Jiang’s mum was dressed in expensive clothes, but she couldn’t fit properly on the chair and made the table shake after she sat down.

‘Mum, don’t pinch my cheeks,’ an embarrassed Xiao Jiang said.

Zhen Wu pitied Xiao Jiang’s cheeks. He thought their teacher pinching their cheeks didn’t look as painful as Xiao Jiang’s mum pinching Xiao Jiang’s cheeks.

Xiao Jiang’s mum noticed Zhen Wu was sitting on the table next to her son’s table.

‘Isn’t that Zhen Wu?’ Xiao Jiang’s mum asked. ‘The boy who has a mum but no dad?’

Yue Gu Zai glared dangerously at Xiao Jiang’s mum.

Although Xiao Jiang’s mum was frightened by Yue Gu Zai’s glare, she thought Yue Gu Zai was a model.

Zhen Zhen was impressed Yue Gu Zai could silence Xiao Jiang’s loud mum with a deadly glare.

‘Hello I’m Jin Mei Li,’ Jin Mei Li greeted Yue Gu Zai. ‘I’m Xiao Jiang’s mum. Who are you?’

Zhen Zhen thought there was something wrong with Jin Mei Li’s eyes, because Jin Mei Li was blinking fast.

‘I’m Zhen Wu’s dad,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘No wonder Zhen Wu is such an adorable boy,’ Jin Mei Li said. ‘He inherited his looks from his dad. It’s a pleasure to meet you.’

Zhen Zhen was taken back how quickly her son turned from a boy who had a mum and no dad to an adorable boy. She silently ate one of the burgers her husband and son ordered, but she was the only one eating.

‘Mum...’ Xiao Jiang called.

Xiao Jiang knew his mum was distracted by Zhen Wu’s dad’s looks.

‘Do you want to drink coffee with me tonight?’ Jin Mei Li asked and winked.

Zhen Zhen noticed Jin Mei Li was showing off cleavage that was more impressive than Da Tu Li's cleavage. While Jin Mei Li's chest was almost popping out of a tight top, Zhen Zhen silently finish eating a burger.

'I'm busy,' Yue Gu Zai said coldly to Jin Mei Li. He looked suspiciously at Zhen Wu who was enjoying his displeasure. 'Son, have you finished eating?'

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu had seen enough of Jin Mei Li's tactless flirting.

'Let's go,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai led his wife and son to the car.

Jin Mei Li didn't want to part with a handsome man so soon.

'Xiao Jiang's let's go,' Jin Mei Li said.

'Mum, I haven't finish eating,' Xiao Jiang said.

'You can wrap up the food and take it to the car,' Jin Mei Li said.

Mr Chen walked to the car first and Xiao Jiang reluctantly followed his mum to the car.

At the carpark, Yue Gu Zai was opening the door for his wife and son when suddenly a bearded man grabbed Xiao Jiang hostage, and police cars surrounded the carpark.

'Xiao Jiang!' Jin Mei Li cried out and fainted at the sight of a stranger holding her son at gun point.

'Mum...' Xiao Jiang said in a panicked voice and cried.

'Don't come here,' the bearded man said. 'Or I'll shoot.'

The cops were worried the bearded man would shoot Xiao Jiang so they didn't dare step toward the bearded man.

'Mum... mum...' Xiao Jiang called and cried louder.

'Little boy, I'll shoot you if you don't stop crying,' the bearded man threatened.

End of Chapter Twenty-Seven

Related

Twenty-Eight



Chapter Twenty-Eight

‘Zui Xiao let the little boy go and the judge will give you a lighter sentence,’ Officer Huang said.

‘Do you think I’m stupid?’ Zui Xiao asked. ‘You’ll shoot me if I let the little boy go.’

‘Zui Xiao if you let the little boy, my colleagues will grant your requests,’ Officer Huang negotiated.

‘Bring me one hundred thousand in cash right now!’ Zui Xiao demanded.

Officer Huang whispered an order to his juniors.

A short while later, a junior officer brought a bag to the carpark.

‘Officer Huang, I brought the money,’ the junior officer said.

Officer Huang intended to use the excuse of bringing money to Zui Xiao to unarm Zui Xiao, but Zui Xiao refused to let him approach.

‘Don’t move!’ Zui Xiao said to Officer Huang.

Zui Xiao looked around him and saw Yue Gu Zai protecting Zhen Wu.

‘Let that little boy bring the money to me,’ Zui Xiao said.

Zhen Wu was scared of Zui Xiao would shoot Xiao Jiang. But he looked at his dad’s calm face and felt less scared. He slowly stepped toward Officer Huang.

'Be careful,' Officer Huang whispered to Zhen Wu.

'What are you whispering?' Zui Xiao asked. 'Hurry up and bring the money here!'

Zui Xiao pressed the gun onto Xiao Jiang's face, and Xiao Jiang was too scared to move.

Zhen Wu carried the bag of money and stepped slowly toward Zui Xiao. He was worried Xiao Jiang would faint.

'Uncle, why don't you let Xiao Jiang go and take me instead?' Zhen Wu asked. 'Uncle, look how scared Xiao Jiang is. What are you going to do if he dies of a fright? If you lose a hostage the policemen won't let you leave.'

'Zhen Wu!' Zhen Zhen called.

Zhen Zhen taught her son to be a courageous person. But she didn't mean he should offer himself as a hostage. Her husband held her hand and shook his head so she didn't say anything else.

Zui Xiao looked at Xiao Jiang who looked frightened to death and thought what Zhen Wu said was true. The cops would shoot him if he lost a hostage.

'Little boy come here,' Zui Xiao said to Zhen Wu 'Don't do any tricks.'

'Uncle, I'm just a little boy,' Zhen Wu said. 'What can I do to hurt uncle?'

Zui Xiao pushed Xiao Jiang to Mr Chen and grabbed Zhen Wu.

'She'll be the driver,' Zui Xiao said and pointed at Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen's hands trembled.

'Don't be scared,' Yue Gu Zai said calmly to Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen took a deep breath and Yue Gu Zai's calmness helped her compose herself.

'Hurry up and get in the car!' Zui Xiao ordered Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen quickly sat in Zui Xiao's car in the driver's seat, and Zui Xiao shoved Zhen Wu onto the backseat.

'Hurry up and drive,' Zui Xiao said. 'Don't try any funny business or I'll shoot

your son.'

Zhen Zhen turned on the engine and reversed out of the carpark. When she drove past her husband, she looked into his calm eyes and trusted he would save her and their son.

The moment Zhen Zhen drove off, Officer Huang ordered the cops to chase after Zui Xiao's car, and Yue Gu Zai called Cheng Yi.

'Activate the GPS tracking device on Zhen Wu's watch,' Yue Gu Zai instructed Cheng Yi. 'Tell Chu Gian and the others to chase after Zhen Wu and bring a sports car here within two minutes.'

'Yes boss,' Cheng Yi said and hung up.

Cheng Yi didn't ask any questions. He understood from the rare subtle panicked tone in Yue Gu Zai's voice that something bad must have happened to Zhen Wu.

Inside Zui Xiao's car, Zhen Wu discreetly input codes into his watch to communicate with to Cheng Yi.

'Drive faster,' Zui Xiao ordered Zhen Zhen.

'It's a residential zone,' Zhen Zhen said and stopped at the red light.

'Run the red light,' Zui Xiao said and checked if cops were still behind them.

Zhen Zhen hesitated running the red light before stepping on the accelerator. The cars at the intersection braked and Zhen Zhen drove past them.

'Where do you want me to drive to?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'To the southern ferry port terminal,' Zui Xiao said.

Zhen Wu input the destination coordinates into his watch.

Cheng Yi received Zhen Wu's coded message and reported to Yue Gu Zai.

'Boss, young master said that they're heading to the southern ferry port terminal,' Cheng Yi said.

After Zhen Zhen drove to the terminal, it was pouring rain and more than ten black cars were waiting for them at the terminal.

Yue Gu Zai and Chu Gian arrived before the cops. While Zui Xiao was distracted, Chu Gian navigated behind shipping containers to ambush Zui Xiao.

‘After I arrive at a safe place, I’ll let this little boy go,’ Zui Xiao said. ‘But if any of you make a false move, I’ll shoot the little boy.’

Apart from the paranoid Zui Xiao, everyone else could see Chu Gian standing on top of a shipping container behind Zui Xiao.

Chu Gian winked at Zhen Wu and he slowly nodded his head. He saw his dad signal Chu Gian then she jumped onto Zui Xiao and his dad pulled him to safety.

Chu Gian pressed one of her knees on Zui Xiao’s back, and restrained Zui Xiao’s arms and legs.

‘Stop moving!’ Chu Gian said to Zui Xiao.

‘I’ll leave the rest to you,’ Yue Gu Zai said to Chu Gian.

‘Yes boss,’ Chu Gian said.

Yue Gu Zai wanted to quickly take his wife and son home, but the cops arrived and prevented him from leaving.

‘Thank you for capturing the criminal,’ Officer Huang said. ‘But I need to escort you to the police station. It’s illegal for you to carry a gun.’

Yue Gu Zai dismissed Officer Huang’s request. He led his wife and son to a sports car. When Officer Huang ran to the driver’s seat, he gave Officer Huang a business card.

‘I don’t know what you and your officers were doing while on duty,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘But you allowed a criminal to escape with a gun to a public place. I’ll ask someone to investigate this matter.’

Officer Huang looked in disbelief at the business card while Yue Gu Zai sped off with his wife and son. On the business card was a private contact number of the head of the national security department.

End of Chapter Twenty-Eight

Related

Twenty-Nine



Chapter Twenty-Nine

Las Vegas.

In the car, Zhen Zhen stared at Yue Gu Zai's ID for three minutes.

'Gu Zai, is this fake?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Wu was sleeping soundly in Yue Gu Zai's arms. Yue Gu Zai didn't want to wake up Zhen Wu so he spoke softly to Zhen Zhen.

'Do you think I would forge something like this?' Yue Gu Zai asked Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen thought it was impossible Yue Gu Zai who was a triad boss could also hold the position of the head of the National Security Department.

Yue Gu Zai didn't think much of being head of the National Security Department. The national government couldn't control Ni Sheng's operations so the national government struck a deal with Yue Gu Zai. The national government agreed to turn a blind eye to Ni Sheng's operations if Yue Gu Zai promised not to do anything to terrorize the public. Yue Gu Zai thought the national government benefited more from their agreement, because Ni Sheng supplied most of the national government's weapons.

Zhen Wu didn't want to sleep, because he thought seeing his dad in action at the port was more exciting than his dad taking him out to play. But his young body was tired. He hugged his dad in his sleep.

Zhen Zhen watched Zhen Wu sleep in Yue Gu Zai's arms while she thought about the day's traumatic events. She was grateful Yue Gu Zai was there by hers

and Zhen Wu's side. She didn't want to think about what would have happened to her and Zhen Wu if Yue Gu Zai and his gang members weren't there to save her and Zhen Wu.

Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen took Zhen Wu home safely. Yue Gu Zai left Zhen Wu in teacher's care, and he hired extra guards to protect Zhen Wu while he and Zhen Zhen were in Las Vegas. Afterward he, Zhen Zhen and the others went to the airport and boarded a private plane to Las Vegas.

Near the end of the plane trip, Yue Gu Zai, Chu Gian, Bai Yu Tian and Huyen Di folded their cards in a game of poker. Cheng Yi thought Zhen Zhen was bluffing, and he went all in.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, are you going to fold?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Cheng Yi, don't gloat too soon,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, don't say I didn't warn you, I have a trump card,' Cheng Yi said.

'Zhen Zhen, Cheng Yi is bluffing,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen trusted Yue Gu Zai's intuition. Besides, she had nothing to fear even if she lost because Yue Gu Zai gave her a gold card.

'Boss, you shouldn't underestimate the cards in my hands,' Cheng Yi said.

'All in,' Zhen Zhen said.

Cheng Yi and Zhen Zhen showed their cards, Zhen Zhen had a royal flush and she won the poker game.

Zhen Zhen looked out the window, the plane landed at McCarran International Airport.

'Gu Zai, where are you planning to go after we land?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Las Vegas,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Chu Gian will take you to a safe place to rest first.'

'Gu Zai, take me to Las Vegas with you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, have you caught the gambling fever?' Chen Yi asked.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I want to go sightseeing in Las Vegas.'

'Alright,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Zhen Zhen I'll take you with me. But Chu Gian will be your guard. I don't want anything to happen to you.'

Zhen Zhen nodded her head.

Later at the MGM Grand Las Vegas, Zhen Zhen was amazed by the neon lights and water fountains.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, wipe your drool,' Cheng Yi said. 'Control your country bumpkin side. You're boss' wife, do you want everyone to think he married a country bumpkin?'

'So what if I'm a country bumpkin?' Zhen Zhen said. 'It's not my problem if Gu Zai married a country bumpkin.'

Cheng Yi knew Yue Gu Zai was happy for Zhen Zhen to be herself so Cheng Yi let her be.

Zhen Zhen looked at all the different table games, and flashing lights. Occasionally she touched statues, and jumped if water sprouted out of a water fountain.

'Gu Zai, I don't want to go to the VIP room with you,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I want to go play downstairs. Come get me when you're done.'

'Chu Gian, go downstairs with Zhen Zhen,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai, I promise I won't leave the casino,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Chu Gian doesn't need to babysit me. Nothing will happen to me.'

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Don't leave the casino.'

Zhen Zhen nodded her head, and she walked downstairs.

At the cashier station, Zhen Zhen contemplated for a long time how much money she should exchange for chips.

'Fifty thousand,' Zhen Zhen said and gave the gold card to cashier.

The cashier gave back the gold card, and fifty orange chips to Zhen Zhen. Zhen Zhen forgot to tell the cashier she wanted fifty thousand Yuan instead of fifty thousand dollars. But she happily accepted the fifty orange chips, and she walked to the baccarat table.

Zhen Zhen placed fifty orange chips on the baccarat table, and the dealer dealt her an eight card and an ace card. She won one hundred orange chips, and she drew a big crowd to the baccarat table. She left the one hundred orange chips on the table, and the dealer dealt her a nine card and a king card. She won two hundred orange chips.

After Zhen Zhen won more than one million dollars, a security guard alerted the casino manager Tina.

'Miss Tina, a young woman won more than one million dollars at the baccarat table,' the security guard reported.

Tina was dressed in a black pants suit, which showed off her long legs.

'Is she playing dirty?' Tina asked.

'No,' the security guard said.

'What do you mean no?' Tina asked. 'Take me to her.'

After Zhen Zhen won the sixth game in a row, she wanted to take her winnings and leave the baccarat table. But Tina's guards restrained Zhen Zhen's arms, and they pulled her to a private room.

'Let go of me,' Zhen Zhen said. 'What do you want?'

End of Chapter Twenty-Nine

Related

Thirty



Chapter Thirty

Hill.

Zhen Zhen's intuition told her that the woman in black wanted to harm her. She felt like ever since she met Yue Gu Zui, her luck went downhill.

'Miss, we need your cooperation,' Tina said.

Zhen Zhen understood Tina's undertone warned her that if she didn't cooperate then Tina and the guards would use force to search her.

'In every casino there are wins and losses,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Is it wrong for me to win?'

Tina had the backing of one of the casino's directors, she wasn't intimidated by anyone in the casino, especially a young woman like Zhen Zhen who dressed like a country bumpkin in a plain T-shirt and ripped jeans. She was used to dealing with all kinds of swindlers.

'Search her,' Tina said.

Two men held onto Zhen Zhen's arms, and another man was about to rip off

Zhen Zhen's shirt. Zhen Zhen's eyes became teary. Apart from the thought of losing Zhen Wu, she didn't cry. But in that moment she felt violated and helpless.

William Hill heard a commotion, and he walked into the private room.

'I'm sorry,' William Hill said. 'I walked into the wrong room.'

Zhen Zhen saw the young man, he wasn't as handsome as Yue Gu Zai but he was a pretty boy too and her last hope.

'Don't go,' Zhen Zhen pleaded.

William Hill looked at Zhen Zhen's teary doe eyes, and he felt his heart melted for the first time.

'Mr Hill, this is official casino business,' Tina said. 'You don't need to be involved. We have a policy to search anyone who plays dirty.'

'I didn't,' Zhen Zhen said.

'The young lady said she didn't play dirty,' William Hill said. 'Can you let her go now?'

Tina signalled the men to let go of Zhen Zhen, and she walked haughtily out of the room.

Zhen Zhen slumped on the floor. She was grateful to the young man who saved her in time. He offered his hand, and he smiled at her like the Bai fox smiled at her except his smile was sincere. She accepted his hand, and he helped her stand.

'Thank you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'You don't need to be courteous,' William Hill said.

Zhen Zhen was surprised William Hill knew how to speak Mandarin.

'Thank you, I'm Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Your name rolls off the tongue,' William Hill said.

'How come you know how to speak Mandarin?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'My mum is from Beijing,' William Hill said. 'I'll escort you outside.'

'Thank you,' Zhen Zhen said.

After the ordeal at the casino, Zhen Zhen realised casinos were complicated playgrounds.

William Hill escorted Zhen Zhen out of the private room. He spotted Yue Gu Zai and Tina upstairs.

'Miss Zhen, the little boy upstairs is Phil,' William Hill said. 'He's one of the two famous bosses in the underworld. He's also a pretty boy who stole many women's hearts. But not long ago, he spontaneously got married.'

Zhen Zhen looked upstairs, Yue Gu Zai had walked out of the VIP room. She wondered if William Hill was an acquaintance of Yue Gu Zai.

'Let's go,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen was excited to show Yue Gu Zai the winnings she won with his gold card.

'Did you win the jackpot?' William Hill asked.

'I don't think so,' Zhen Zhen said. 'It must be beginner's luck.'

'You're a lucky young lady,' William Hill said.

Zhen Zhen thought the heavens were fair, with every win there was something unfortunate that happened to her.

'I don't think I'm a lucky person,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If you didn't help me today then today would have been an unlucky day for me.'

William felt the woman in front of me was a loveable woman. He wondered if he fell in love at first sight.

End of Chapter Thirty

Related

STEAL MY GIRL



Chapter Thirty-One

Steal my girl.

Tina saw William Hill and the country bumpkin walked toward her and Yue Gu Zai, but she maintained her smile because she was standing next to Yue Gu Zai.

Yue Gu Zai checked Zhen Zhen wasn't hurt first then he looked at William Hill.

William Hill punched Yue Gu Zai's shoulder in a brotherly way. The sudden punch startled Zhen Zhen and Tina.

'Little boy, long time no see,' William Hill said. 'I can't believe you got married behind my back.'

'What are you doing here?' Yue Gu Zai asked in a brotherly tone.

'Meeting an angel,' William Hill said and smiled at Zhen Zhen.

The oblivious Zhen Zhen showed Yue Gu Zai the winnings.

'Gu Zai, look at my winnings,' Zhen Zhen said.

William Hill looked confusedly at Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen.

'You two know each other?' William Hill asked.

Tina's face whitened. She was worried if the country bumpkin was Yue Gu Zai's relative and William Hill was Yue Gu Zai's friend as well, Yue Gu Zai would retaliate for her mistreatment of the country bumpkin in the private room.

‘Zhen Zhen is my wife,’ Yue Gu Zai said affectionately.

Tina couldn’t believe the man of her dreams was the country bumpkin’s husband. In contrast William Hill thought it was ill fate he fell for his friend’s girl.

‘Are you on a holiday?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘I came here on a business trip,’ William Hill said.

‘If you don’t have any plans, why don’t you join my wife and me for dinner?’ Yue Gu Zui asked.

‘Yes,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘If you join Gu Zui and me for dinner, it’ll be a good opportunity for me to thank you for helping me before.’

William Hill would have declined Yue Gu Zai’s invitation if he didn’t see the anticipation in Zhen Zhen’s eyes.

‘OK,’ William Hill said. ‘Phil, you can’t complain after dinner that I cost you an extra dinner portion.’

Yue Gu Zai was a picky eater, but he was a humble eater compared to William Hill. William Hill loved to eat the best culinary food.

‘Let’s go,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I still have enough money to hire a chef.’

‘Mr Phil,’ Tina said.

‘What is it?’ Yue Gu Zai asked coldly.

‘Mr Bob wants to invite you to dinner to discuss a business collaboration,’ Tina said.

‘You can tell Mr Bob, Ni Sheng has no interest in a business deal with him,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Also tell him not to be too greedy.’

Tina watched Yue Gu Zai leave with the country bumpkin and William Hill. She accepted she and Bob weren’t in the same league as Yue Gu Zai.

‘He’s an extraordinary man,’ Da Tu Li said.

‘It’s you,’ Tina said.

Tina recognised Da Tu Li in the usual red outfit.

‘Long time no see,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘You have no chance with him.’

'I don't need your concern,' Tina said.

Tina understood her place. If Yue Gu Zai didn't notice Da Tu Li then he wouldn't be interested in her either.

End of Chapter Thirty-One

Related



Chapter Thirty-Two

Not the horse.

Zhen Zhen thought Nan Ma would be proud of her if Nan Ma could see her eating in a civilised way. Then she looked at the elegant way William Hill was eating, and she felt ashamed to cut her steak. William Hill ate like he was giving an etiquette demonstration to a class of students.

‘We’re both eating steaks,’ William Hill said. ‘I can’t say my steak tastes better than yours.’

Zhen Zhen was embarrassed she got caught staring at William Hill eating.

'How do you know Gu Zai?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'When Phil was seventeen, he accidentally rode my horse,' William Hill said. 'I saved him from falling off my horse. Don't let his cold exterior fool you. He's a rebel. When we got caught stealing a queen's jewel. He ran off, and I copped the blame.'

Zhen Zhen smiled while thinking about Yue Gu Zai as a rebel teen.

'I can picture Gu Zai running away,' Zhen Zhen said.

'You know what the little boy said to me that day?' William Hill asked. 'William, I have an urgent business I need to attend to. I'll leave first, and let you handle this situation.'

Zhen Zhen laughed at the William's perfect impersonation of Yue Gu Zai's calm voice and indifferent facial expression.

Zhen Zhen reminded William Hill of his gentle mum. Zhen Zhen smiled and laughed like his mum. He shook his head. What was he doing admiring his good friend's wife. But Zhen Zhen made him miss his mum. As a man he was expected to be strong, but there were times when he needed a gentle woman by his side to care of him.

'Is there something on my face?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'No,' William Hill said.

Yue Gu Zai returned to the dining room. He heard Zhen Zhen laugh happily. He frowned and he sat down next to Zhen Zhen at the dining table.

'Zhen Zhen, what are you laughing about?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'William's telling me about how you ate flour and nearly fell off a horse in your teen years,' Zhen Zhen said.

William Hill looked innocently at Yue Gu Zai, and Yue Gu Zai understood Zhen Zhen asked William Hill to tell embarrassing stories about Yu Gu Zai.

'Gu Zai, are you done working yet?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'I want to go sightseeing with you.'

Since the incident in Italy, Zhen Zhen was more cautious. She didn't dare go

sightseeing on her own in a foreign country.

'Zhen Zhen, if you want to go sightseeing, William can be your tour guide,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'He knows the area well.'

Yue Gu Zai trusted William Hill would keep Zhen Zhen safe in his stead.

'I knew there's no such thing as a free dinner,' William Hill said. 'You invited me to dinner so I'll agree to be your wife's tour guide. But I should warn you, I'm an expensive tour guide.'

'What do you want?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Your mum's jade cup,' William Hill said.

'You can have something else,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'You're so petty,' William Hill said. 'Alright. Give me a fifty discount for my next purchase.'

Yue Gu Zai knew William Hill was robbing him in daylight. But as long as Zhen Zhen was safe, he would let himself be robbed.

'Deal,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Miss Beautiful Zhen Zhen, it's my pleasure to be your tour guide,' William Hill said.

'I'll go get change,' Zhen Zhen said and ran off.

'Is Bob causing you grief?' William Hill asked.

'There's a traitor in Ni Sheng,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Have you flushed out the traitor?' William Hill asked.

'There's no rush,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Soon the traitor will reap what they sow.'

'Since it's an internal traitor, I can't be much of a help to you,' William Hill said.

'I want you to help me take good care of my wife,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Don't let anything happen to my wife.'

'What are sworn brothers for?' William Hill asked.

Zhen Zhen ran back into the room dressed in an graceful evening outfit. Yue Gu Zai and William Hill stared at her for a while.

'I'm ready to go,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Do I look strange wearing this?'

'No,' William Hi said. 'You look beautiful.'

Yue Gu Zai stood in front of Zhen Zhen and he smiled at her.

'Zhen Zhen, don't make me worry about you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen scrunched her nose at Yue Gu Zai's worrywart face, and she left with William Hill to go sightseeing.

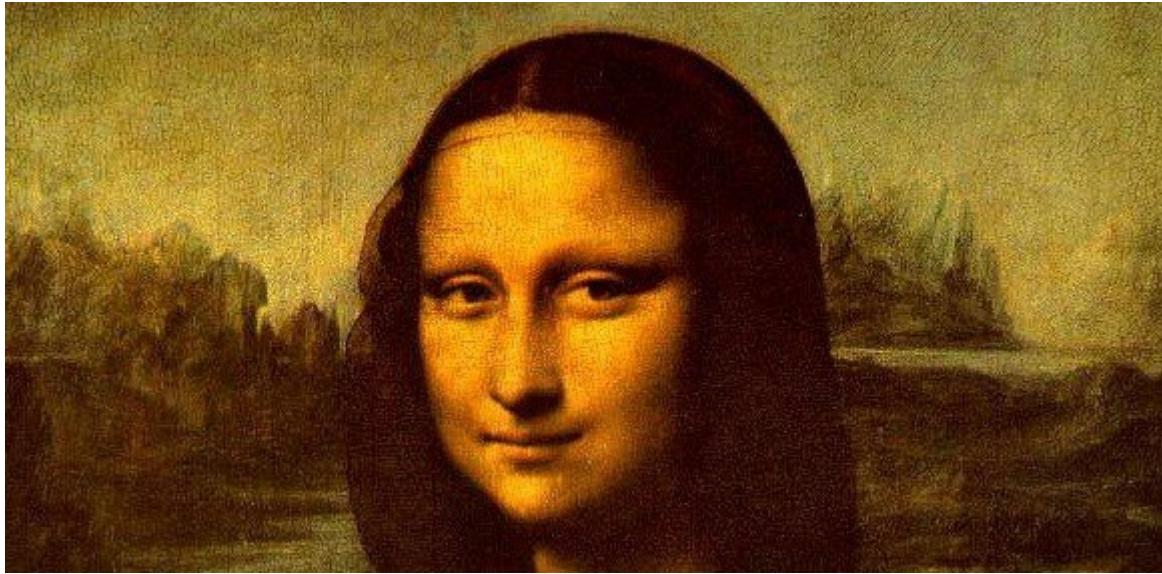
Yue Gu Zai's assistant walked into the dining room after Zhen Zhen and William Hill left.

'Boss, Da Tu Li is here,' the assistant said.

'Escort her to the living room,' Yue Gu Zai said.

End of Chapter Thirty-Two

Related



Chapter Thirty-Three

Mona Lisa.

William Hill was a first grade tour guide. He took Zhen Zhen to the museums she wanted to see like the Mob Museum, and the Neon Museum. He patiently answered all of Zhen Zhen's questions.

It was a hot day in Las Vegas, William Hill and Zhen Zhen stopped by a cafe to rest. He ordered an iced drink for her, and she smiled.

'Any girl is lucky to have you as their boyfriend,' Zhen Zhen praised.

'Why?' William Hill asked.

'Let's see,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You're kind, handsome, smart, and rich. What more can a girl ask for?'

'What if they only want me for my money?' William Hill asked.

'You're doing yourself an injustice by writing off the sincere girls because you're grouping them together with gold diggers,' Zhen Zhen said.

'True,' William Hill said.

'What type of girl are you attracted to?' Zhen Zhen asked.

William Hill looked at Zhen Zhen while he explained his dream girl.

'She's smart, beautiful, gentle, and has black pearl eyes,' William Hill said.

'Oh,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You want someone from your mum's hometown.'

Suddenly gun shots were heard. Most of the customers ran out of the cafe. William jumped on top of Zhen Zhen, and he rolled them behind a pot plant.

When the gun shots stopped, sirens were heard. Zhen Zhen lifted her head and she looked over William Hill's shoulder. The gunmen were gone, and she could see police cars, ambulances and firetrucks were coming toward the cafe. But it was William Hill's arm that made her worried.

'You're injured,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Do you want an ambulance to take you to the hospital?'

'No,' William Hill said. 'I'm OK. Can you drive me home?'

Zhen Zhen nodded her head. She understood reporters would have a field day if they snapped photos of someone like William Hill injured in a public place. She quickly helped him walk to his sports car, and they disappeared before the first police car arrived.

'You're a good driver,' William Hill said.

'Because of Zhen Wu, I'm used to driving fast,' Zhen Zhen said.

It was Zhen Zhen's first time driving a sports car. But in the past she was glued to her lab, and often forgot to pick up Zhen Wu. So she learned how to drive fast in side streets to Zhen Wu's school in order to be on time to pick Zhen Wu up. Driving a car at one hundred and eighty kilometres an hour was average for her. She was relieved she didn't scare William Hill with her average speed.

'Who's Zhen Wu?' William asked.

'Zhen Wu is mine and Gu Zai's son,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Don't talk. Reserve your energy.'

At William Hill's house, Ban Ti greeted him at the door.

'Young master, you're home,' Ban Ti said. He saw blood on William Hill's arm and panicked. 'Young master, you're injured.'

'I'm OK,' William Hill said. 'It's a minor injury.'

Ban Ti and Zhen Zhen helped William Hill to William Hill's bed. Afterward a

doctor was called to take out the bullet and bandage William Hill.

Zhen Zhen walked back and forth in the hallway. She wanted to call Yue Gu Zai, but William Hill asked her not to because William Hill didn't want Yue Gu Zai to worry about William Hill's injury.

Zhen Zhen looked at the portraits on the walls to calm herself down. She was drawn to the portrait of a young woman who posed like Mona Lisa.

'She's young master's mother,' Ban Ti said.

'How is he?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'The bullet's taken out,' Ban Ti said. 'Young master is sleeping.'

'Ban Ti, you can speak Mandarin well like William,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Yes,' Ban Ti said. 'It's because master loved young master's mother. Everyone working for the Hill Household were required to learn to speak Mandarin. Master didn't get a chance to marry young master's mother before she died when young master was a little boy.'

'It's sad William lost his mum at a young age,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Can I see that he is OK myself? I promise I won't disturb his sleep.'

'Yes you can,' Ban Ti said. 'Doctor Janssen is monitoring young master inside young master's bedroom.'

'Thank you,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen felt guilty William Hill was injured while protecting her. She wouldn't be reassured unless she saw that he was in a stable condition.

End of Chapter Thirty-Three

Related



Chapter Thirty-Four

Forever friends.

'Young master, doesn't bring women here,' Janssen said.

'Don't misunderstand,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'm only William's friend.'

Janssen continued to read a medical book. He didn't believe William Hill only saw Zhen Zhen as a friend. But he didn't like making small talk, and he didn't want to talk with the woman who caused William Hill's injury.

Zhen Zhen sensed hostility from Janssen. She quietly sat on the sofa, and waited for William Hill to wake up. She didn't know when she closed her eyes and slept, but she heard William Hill's voice and woke up.

'It's that late?' William Hill asked. 'I need to take her back to Phil before he's worried something happened to her.'

'Young master, you should stay here and rest,' Janssen said.

'I understand,' William Hill said.

'Young master, I hope you understand how important your life is,' Janssen said. 'You're the Hill Household's sole heir.'

'I understand,' William Hill said. 'Go tell those old bastards not to lay a finger on Phil, and remind them I know who killed my parents.'

Janssen stopped dissuading William Hill from leaving.

On the way back to Yue Gu Zai's home in Las Vegas, Zhen Zhen didn't know what to say to cheer up William Hill. She thought he looked lonely.

'Zhen Zhen, don't tell Phil about what happened today or what you heard,' William Hill said.

'Um,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If you ever feel troubled about something, you can call me. We're friends. All I can do to help you is listen to your troubles.'

'Friends,' William Hill said and forced a smile.

When Zhen Zhen and William Hill got out of the car, she was surprised to see Yue Gu Zai escort Da Tu Li out of the door.

Da Tu Li understood why Yue Gu Zai would love someone like Zhen Zhen.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, long time no see,' Da Tu Li said and smiled.

Zhen Zhen thought it was unusual for Da Tu Li to greet her, because usually Da Tu Li looked at her like a love rival.

'Hello Miss Da,' Zhen Zhen said.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen you’re a loveable woman,’ Da Tu Li said. ‘No wonder Yue Gu Zai is faithful to you. If one day Yue Gu Zai doesn’t want you anymore, you can look for me.’

Da Tu Li blew in Zhen Zhen’s ear, and escaped before Yue Gu Zai killed her.

‘She’s a gutsy woman,’ William said. He looked away from Da Tu Li’s car, and he smiled at Yue Gu Zai. ‘It’s a tiring job being a tour guide. Phil, you better feed me.’

‘What happened?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai noticed William Hill’s stiff arm movements.

‘Phil, you have eagle eyes,’ William Hill said. ‘I thought I hid my injury well.’

‘Your arm movements aren’t as fluid as usual,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Let Bai Yu Tian take a look at your arm injury.’

‘It’s a minor injury,’ William Hill said. ‘Besides, Janssen is a good doctor like Bai Yu Tian. Phil are you going to injure my stomach too?’

Yue Gu Zai was worried about William Hill’s arm injury, but he listened to William Hill and asked the chef to make a meal for William Hill.

Zhen Zhen wasn’t hungry. She walked to hers and Yue Gu Zai’s bedroom and showered. She blow dried her hair in front of the vanity table while Yue Gu Zai showered.

Yue Gu Zai came out of the shower, and he noticed Zhen Zhen was sitting in front of the vanity table in a daze.

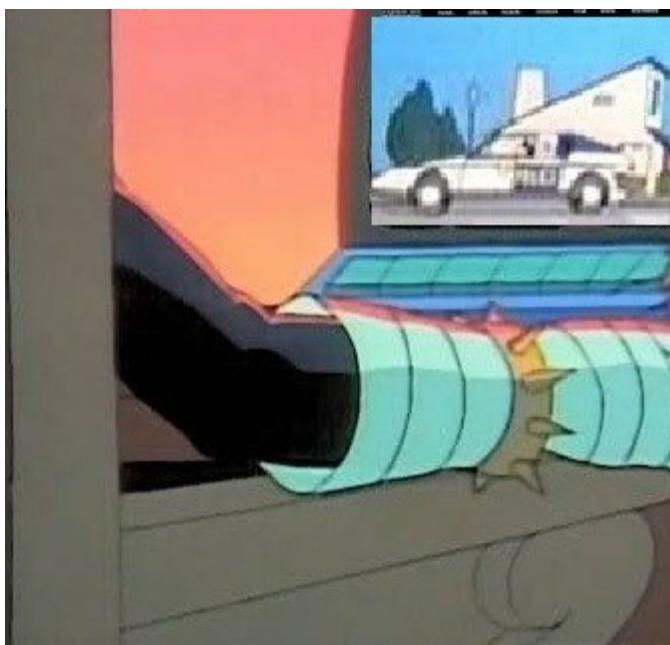
‘Zhen Zhen, did you meet Doctor Janssen today?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Gu Zai, what did you say?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen remembered William Hill asked her not to tell Yue Gu Zai about what happened at the cafe, and she hoped Yue Gu Zai wouldn’t ask her anymore questions about what happened. She was worried about nothing, Yue Gu Zai dried his hair and laid in bed. She laid next to him in bed, he pulled the bedsheet over their bodies and he hugged her. His familiar body scent always helped her to sleep soundly.

End of Chapter Thirty-Four

Related



Chapter Thirty-Five

Spy

Days later, William Hill's arm injury healed quickly. Da Tu Li fulfilled her end of the bargain in exchange for Yue Gu Zai releasing Da Fu Li. Bob renegotiated the contract terms for it to be favorable for Ni Sheng. Yue Gu Zai agreed to sign the amended contract.

On the settlement day, Yue Gu Zai, his gang members and Zhen Zhen met Bob at the casino.

In a VIP room in the casino, Yue Gu Zai and Bob signed the amended contract.

'Mr Phil, I hope our collaboration will be successful,' Bob said.

Bob signalled Tina to escort Yue Gu Zai outside.

'Mr Phil, I'll escort your team outside,' Tina said.

Suddenly an explosion was heard outside the VIP room, and the doors and the windows in VIP room were automatically locked.

'Put your guns away,' Bob said to his guards.

'Open the door,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Not possible,' Tina said. 'The doors are programmed to lock when there is an

emergency situation.'

'Where's the master computer in this room?' Cheng Yi asked.

'It's concealed behind the wall over there,' Tina said.

Tina was scared for her life. She also resented why it was Zhen Zhen who Yue Gu Zai was hugging protectively in his arms instead of her.

'There needs to be two people to input the code and disable the doors safely,' Tina said. 'But our in house programmers are absent today.'

Everyone in Bob's camp were scared they would die that day.

'Let me take a look,' Zhen Zhen said.

Cheng Yi's eyes lit up hope. He had forgotten Zhen Zhen was a genius, and a better programmer than he was.

'The master computer isn't a toy for you to play with,' Tina said condescendingly to Zhen Zhen. 'If the two programmers code out of sync for more than three seconds then the doors will automatically explode. Do you want all of us to be buried together?'

Everyone in Bob's camp underestimated Zhen Zhen. They thought she was only Yue Gu Zai's trophy wife.

'Mr Phil, does your wife know anything about programming?' Bob asked.

Yue Gu Zai believed Zhen Zhen and Cheng Yi could save them. But he was angry at everyone from Bob's side for looking down on Zhen Zhen.

'If you have someone else here to input the code with Cheng Yi then ask them to do it,' Zhen Zhen said.

The room was silent. Everyone accepted Zhen Zhen and Cheng Yi were their last hope of escaping alive.

Zhen Zhen and Cheng Yi stood in front of the master computer.

'One, two, three...' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen and Cheng Yi used their ten fingers to input the code together.

Everyone else held their breath. Within a minute the doors opened.

'Run!' Yue Gu Zai said.

Tina ran behind Yue Gu Zai who ran while holding Zhen Zhen's hand. Tina was both shocked and jealous of Zhen Zhen's skills.

The VIP room behind everyone exploded.

'Run this way,' Huyen Di said.

Everyone followed the escape route Huyen Di pointed to.

Zhen Zhen silently cried. She couldn't see through the thick smoke. She held onto Yue Gu Zai's hand, and ran with him.

When everyone escaped outside, no one cared about who was their boss and randomly jumped into the cars they prepared for an emergency escape.

Yue Gu Zai, Zhen Zhen, Bob and Tina jumped into the car that Chu Gian was waiting in the driver's seat. Chu Gian stepped on the accelerator and sped away from the casino.

'F'k, there are unmarked cars behind us shooting at us,' Chu Gian said.

'Chu Dian, swap seats with me,' Zhen Zhen said.

'This isn't a toy car,' Tina said.

Zhen Zhen and Chu Dian dismissed Tina's words, and they switched seats.

Zhen Zhen sped faster, and Chu Dian shot the tyres of the unmarked cars behind them.

'Shut your mouth,' Zhen Zhen said to Tina.

Tina couldn't do anything except shut her mouth, and let Zhen Zhen drive.

Zhen Zhen sped enough to scare the passengers in the car. Soon no gun shots were heard. She stopped the car when they were out of the CBD, and she felt her back covered in sweat.

End of Chapter Thirty-Five

Related



Chapter Thirty-Six

Diamond earrings.

Cheng Yi, Bai Yu Tian and Huyen Di got out of their car, and they saw Tina vomit.

Chu Gian held her gun downward, and she scanned the surroundings for shooters.

Yue Gu Zai rubbed Zhen Zhen's sweaty back.

'Zhen Zhen, I thought you were fearless,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen rubbed her chest. She was an ordinary civilian. It would be strange if she wasn't scared of bombs and bullets aimed at her.

'Whoever blew up the casino is going to die,' Bob said.

'Who else do you think would bomb the casino?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

Everyone knew the only other gang who would dare to oppose Ni Sheng was Tan Lang.

‘Mr Phil, we signed a contract,’ Bob said. ‘I have no relationship with Tan Lang.’

‘You only need to go back to the casino and see what you can salvage,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Our contract is still valid. I’ll deal with Tan Lang myself.’

‘Mr Phil, I’ll leave everything in your capable hands,’ Bob said.

Bob and Tina left in their car with Bob’s guards.

Chu Gian and Huyen Di drove their gang members back to Yue Gu Zai’s home in Las Vegas.

Two days later, William Hill left Las Vegas on a business trip. Zhen Zhen read scientific books while Yue Gu Zai was busy working.

When Yue Gu Zai returned home late at night, he noticed Zhen Zhen was restless.

‘Zhen Zhen, tomorrow I’ll assign Xiao Zhao to drive you to places you want to visit,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Remember to wear the blue diamond earrings I bought you.’

Zhen Zhen agreed, and she was excited to go out in the morning.

The following morning, Zhen Zhen dressed and she walked to the black car waiting for her outside.

In the black car, Zhen Zhen didn’t recognise the driver.

‘Where’s Xiao Zhao?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Xiao Zhao’s busy today,’ the man said. ‘He asked me to drive Miss Zhen Zhen sightseeing today.’

Zhen Zhen suspected the man was lying, because Xiao Zhao wouldn’t disobey Yue Gu Zai’s order.

‘What’s your name?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘What is your role in Ni Sheng?’

The man didn’t reply. Zhen Zhen tried to open the door, but the door was locked. Suddenly the man turned around, and he struck her head. She was in a lot of pain, but she bit her tongue to stay conscious.

The man drove toward the location Tina instructed him to take Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen grabbed the steering wheel, the man braked, she unlocked the doors, opened the door and she ran out of the car.

The man chased after Zhen Zhen. Unfortunately, the car stopped on a cliff road.

'Who are you?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen suspected the man was one of Ni Sheng's traitors.

'You don't need to know who I am,' the man said. 'All you need to know is you offended someone.'

'If you dare to kidnap me, Gu Zai will kill you,' Zhen Zhen said.

The man wanted to curse Tina. Tina didn't tell him Zhen Zhen was related to Yue Gu Zai. But it was too late, he couldn't let Zhen Zhen escape and have Yue Gu Zai hunt him down.

Zhen Zhen took a step back from the man, she slipped on a rock and fell down the cliff.

'Ah...' Zhen Zhen cried out.

The man tried to grab Zhen Zhen's arm, but he only caught her blue diamond earring. He dropped the earring, got in the car and drove far away before anyone saw him at the cliff road.

One hour later, Yue Gu Zai and Cheng Yi stopped the car at the same cliff Zhen Zhen fell down. They found Zhen Zhen's blue diamond earring on the cliff road. Yue Gu Zai had asked Cheng Yi to install a tracking chip in the Zhen Zhen's earrings.

'Boss, there are tyre marks here,' Cheng Yi said. 'The footprints belong to your wife. She was running away from someone. The other footprints belong to a man.'

Cheng Yi saw Yue Gu Zai's worried face, and he knew if he didn't help find Zhen Zhen soon then Yue Gu Zai would throw him over the cliff.

'Call everyone here to look for my wife,' Yue Gu Zai ordered. 'No one can stop looking until she's found.'

End of Chapter Thirty-Six

Related

When ZZ Met Sally



Chapter Thirty-Seven

Sally.

Zhen Zhen woke up. Her whole body ached. She could smell smoke before she opened her eyes.

'If you're awake, get out of bed,' Sally said. She lit another cigarette and smoked. 'You cost me money to save you. You have to work off your debt.'

Zhen Zhen opened her eyes. A woman dressed in a skimpy outfit with thick makeup was sitting on the bed next to her.

'Where am I?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'You're lucky I saved you at the bottom of a cliff,' Sally said. 'This is my brothel, Dui Lan. You can call me Sally.'

'Thank you for saving me,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't thank me too soon,' Sally said. 'I'm not a compassionate charity worker.'

You owe me money for buying your medicine. You have to work for me to pay me back.'

Sally hit the jackpot when she found Zhen Zhen. Zhen Zhen was going to help her take her rival Lily down a notch.

'What type of work?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Anyone who walks through my door, can't walk out without my permission,' Sally said. 'I'll look after you if you're an obedient worker. Dui Lan isn't an ordinary brothel. It's a brothel for rich guests. If you make my guests happy, you won't need to worry about money.'

Zhen Zhen knew if she wanted to find a way to contact Yue Gu Zai then she needed to act obedient to convince Sally to trust that she wouldn't run away.

'In two days, you'll be fit to work,' Sally said.

After Sally left, Zhen Zhen inspected her injuries. She was lucky she survived the fall with minor scratches. She wondered if Yue Gu Zai was looking for her.

Zhen Zhen slowly got out of bed, and she searched the room for a phone or a computer. There was no device for her to contact Yue Gu Zai. She walked to the door, and carefully opened the door. Two guards were standing outside the door.

'I need to go to the toilet,' Zhen Zhen lied.

'There's a toilet inside the room,' one of the guards said.

Zhen Zhen closed the door. She couldn't contact Yue Gu Zai and she couldn't go outside to find help. She laid on the bed and slept because she needed strength to escape.

For two days, Sally fed Zhen Zhen and let Zhen Zhen recover.

On the third day since Zhen Zhen met Sally, Sally gave her a dress that looked like a student's uniform.

'Put the dress on,' Sally said. 'You don't suit wearing skimpy outfits like me. Our guests have a range of tastes. Some days they like meaty dishes, and on other days they like vegetarian dishes. I'll let you serve the guests wine first to pique their taste buds, and I'll fetch a good price for you.'

Zhen Zhen was relieved. She had time to find a way to contact Yue Gu Zai to save her.

'Sally the guests are here,' a brothel worker said.

'Get dressed and line up outside to greet the guests,' Sally said. 'If you get chosen, you'll serve the guests wine. Don't do anything to offend them or anything to embarrass me.'

'Yes Sally,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen changed into the dress. Then she walked outside and stood in a corner. Five women were chosen to serve the guests. Unfortunately, she was one of the five women chosen.

Zhen Zhen followed the women into the private and dimly lit room, and the door was firmly shut after all the guests entered the room. Three women sat between the six men on the sofa, and one woman knelt on the floor and served wine to the men. Zhen Zhen quickly knelt on the floor and served wine to the men too so she wouldn't draw attention to herself.

One fat man was drinking wine and talking to the youngest man. Although the youngest man had a woman under his arm, he looked disinterested.

'Mr Yan, I need to make a living,' Mr Huang said. 'My goods have been sitting in a shipping container for two months.'

'What's the rush?' Yan Fen asked.

'Mr Yan, my brothers and I need money to eat,' Mr Huang said. 'You can use your connection to Ni Sheng to convince the Hong group to release my goods.'

Zhen Zhen heard the fat man mentioned Ni Sheng, and she accidentally spilt wine on the fat man's hand.

'You clumsy bitch!' Mr Huang said.

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Saying sorry isn't enough,' Mr Huang said. He lifted Zhen Zhen's chin to see her better under the dim light. 'You have a good body.'

Zhen Zhen wanted to push the fat man's hand away from her chin. But she

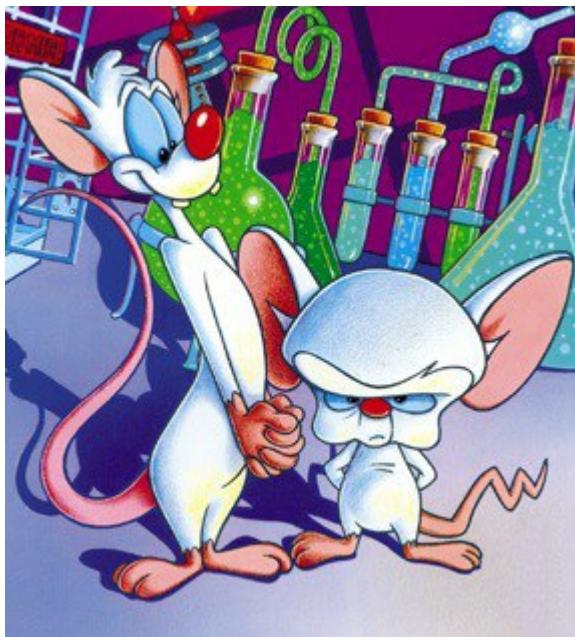
smiled at him to save her life.

'I'm a new worker,' Zhen Zhen said.

The other five women thought Zhen Zhen was an unlucky woman to offend Mr Huang on her first day working at the brothel. Even under Sally's protection, Mr Huang wouldn't be lenient on Zhen Zhen.

End of Chapter Thirty-Seven

Related



Chapter Thirty-Eight

Lab.

Mr Huang grabbed Zhen Zhen's arm, and he pulled her onto the sofa.

'I said I want you to serve me,' Mr Huang said.

Zhen Zhen pulled her arm out of Mr Huang's hand.

'I don't serve guests,' Zhen Zhen said.

Sally walked into the room, and apologised to Mr Huang.

'Mr Huang, it's the little girl's first day,' Sally said. 'I'm sorry she doesn't know the rules. I'll ask Luna to serve you.'

'You don't need to,' Mr Huang said.

Mr Huang was insulted a brothel worker dared to reject him. He raised his hand to hit Zhen Zhen's face, but Yan Fen gripped his arm.

'It would be bad if word got out that the leader of the Cheng group hit a defenceless woman,' Yan Fen said.

Mr Huang pushed Zhen Zhen to Yan Fen's side.

'I'm letting her off the hook because you spoke up for her,' Mr Huang said.

'Thank you Mr Huang,' Sally said. She gave Zhen Zhen a dagger. 'Why aren't you thanking Mr Huang?'

'Thank you Mr Huang,' Zhen Zhen said.

Sally wanted to take Zhen Zhen out of the room before Zhen Zhen caused more trouble for her, but Yan Fen opened his mouth.

'I want her to stay,' Yan Fen said.

Sally wanted to sell Zhen Zhen to the highest bidder, but she couldn't say no to Yan Fen who was a member of Ni Sheng. She let Zhen Zhen stay in the room with Yan Fen.

Zhen Zhen sat on the sofa next to Yan Fen. She was surprised he was a gentleman toward her. All she had to do was refill his wine glass. After he drank a bottle of wine, he still looked sober.

When the guests stood to leave, Zhen Zhen wanted to leave with Yan Fen because he knew Yue Gu Zai and she could ask him to let her call Yue Gu Zai. But she couldn't leave without Sally's permission.

Outside the room, Yan Fen smiled at Sally.

'I want this girl,' Yan Fen said.

Sally didn't have a choice. Dui Lan was only a small powerless brothel compared to Ni Sheng.

'Mr Yan, you can take the girl,' Sally said.

Zhen Zhen followed Yan Fen to his car where a driver was waiting for Yan Fen.

The driver drove Yan Fen and Zhen Zhen to a poor neighborhood. Yan Fen received instructions on his phone. She wanted to ask to borrow his phone to call Yue Gu Zai, but the driver stopped the car in front of an alley and Yan Fen got out of the car.

Zhen Zhen followed Yan Fen. She forgot about asking to borrow his phone when a rotten stench in the alley way made her pinch her nose. There were dead rats, and homeless people were lying sick on the ground.

'I'm a member of Ni Sheng,' Yan Fen said. 'I came here on behalf of Ni Sheng to

help everyone here find an antidote for the virus in your bodies.'

The homeless sick people put down their guards, and let Yan Fen take samples of their blood.

Zhen Zhen followed Yan Fen back to his car, and the driver drove them to a building owned by Ni Sheng.

Yan Fen carried the sealed blood samples into the building, and he forgot about Zhen Zhen. But she was happy to see a lab in the building.

Yan Fen gave the blood samples to Mac Wu, and he waited for Mac Wu to examine the virus in the blood samples.

'Mac Wu, can you identify the virus?' Yan Fen asked.

'No,' Mac Wu said. 'It's an unknown virus.'

'Can I take a look at the slides?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'What are you doing here?' Yan Fen asked.

'You didn't say I could leave,' Zhen Zhen said.

'I'm sorry,' Yan Fen said.

Mac Wu thought he had seen Zhen Zhen somewhere before, but he couldn't remember where.

'Can you let me take a look?' Zhen Zhen asked again.

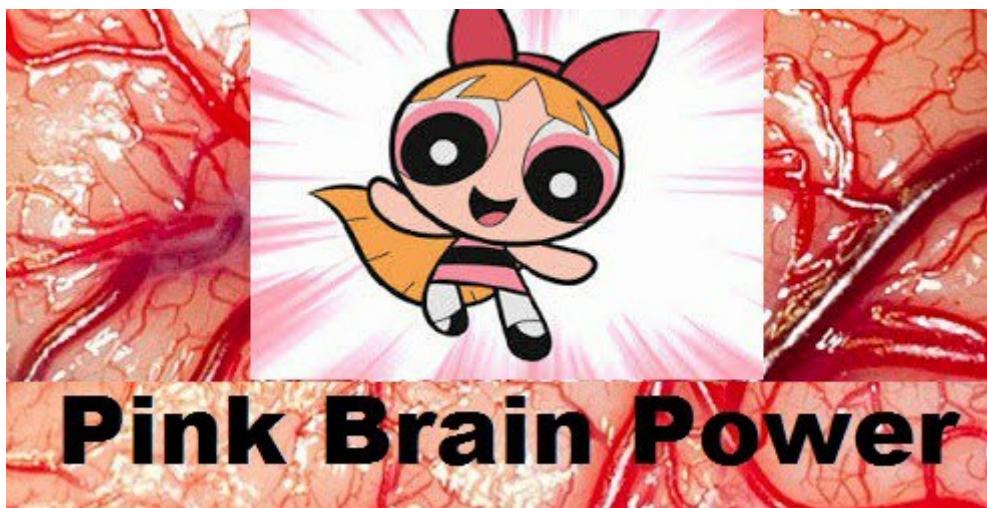
'This isn't a toy,' Lam Chen said.

Lam Chen didn't think Zhen Zhen could identify the virus if even Mac Wu couldn't identify the virus.

Zhen Zhen ignored the doubts on everyone's faces. She put on a white lab coat, goggles and gloves then she walked into the lab.

End of Chapter Thirty-Eight

Related



Chapter Thirty-Nine

Pink brain power.

Zhen Zhen's brain was wired for scientific research. When she was in the lab zone, her eyes could only see bacteria and viruses.

'Adjust the microscope,' Zhen Zhen instructed Mac Wu. 'Give me sterilized slides and prepare all the solutions I listed.'

Mac Wu couldn't believe he turned into Zhen Zhen's lab assistant for the afternoon.

'It's a virus I identified in my last research,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Lucky it's not an easily transmittable virus. It won't take me long to make the vaccines to give to the people who have the virus. You'll need to instruct them to burn their clothes and shower after they receive the vaccines.'

'Are you certain?' Mac Wu asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Big brother Mac Wu, this isn't a joke,' Lam Chen said. 'How can you believe someone who has no scientific qualifications?'

'Have you ever met someone who isn't a virologist or a microbiologist who can accurately label diagrams of viruses and bacteria?' Mac Wu asked.

'No,' Lam Chen said.

Zhen Zhen was too tired to care about other people doubting her qualifications.

'Mr Yan, can you show me the way to a spare room where I can sleep?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yan Fen chose to believe Mac Wu, and he asked Lam Chen to escort Zhen Zhen to a guest room.

A day later, no one doubted Zhen Zhen because she identified the virus correctly and the vaccines she made worked. Everyone also noticed the way Yan Fen treated Zhen Zhen was different to the women he met in the past.

'I think Miss Zhen Zhen is a good catch,' Lam Chen said. 'She and boss Yan Fen make a compatible couple.'

'Boss Yan Fen found Miss Zhen Zhen at Dui Lan,' Te Hao said. 'She doesn't match boss Yan Fen's status.'

'The most important thing is that boss Yan Fen likes Miss Zhen Zhen,' Lam Chen said. 'Have you ever seen boss Yan Fen treat another woman as good as he treats Miss Zhen Zhen?'

'True,' Te Hao said. 'Don't forget about Miss Tan Hai. She heard about Miss Zhen Zhen and she flew here straight away.'

Zhen Zhen walked to the living room like she didn't hear anything.

'Hello big brother Lam Chen and big brother Te Hao,' Zhen Zhen greeted.

Lam Chen and Te Hao smiled awkwardly at Zhen Zhen. They were embarrassed Zhen Zhen heard them speculating about Zhen Zhen and Yan Fen's relationship.

Zhen Zhen saw a young woman in a floral dress with long glossy hair in the living room. If Da Tu Li had a sexy aura, the young woman in the floral dress had a graceful aura.

'Are you Miss Zhen Zhen?' Tan Hai asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Hello, I'm Tan Hai,' Tan Hai said.

Zhen Zhen shook Tan Hai's hand. After Tan Hai let go of her hand, her hand

was red because Tan Hai had held onto her hand too tight. She deduced Tan Hai was the same Tan Hai that Lam Chen and Te Hao mentioned before.

'I heard big brother Yan Fen found you at Dui Lan,' Tan Hai said. Her eyes swept over Zhen Zhen's body. 'Since when did Dui Lan started using olive trees? Big brother Yan Fen is only infatuated with you, he'll get tired of you soon. Don't dream about becoming a phoenix. You'll always be a chicken.'

'I have no intention of becoming a phoenix,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If you have nothing else to say, I'm going to sleep.'

Zhen Zhen didn't understand why thorns came out of a beautiful woman's mouth. She only wanted to sleep.

Tan Hai was insulted a brothel worker would dare to speak to her like an equal. She raised her hand to slap Zhen Zhen, but Zhen Zhen easily dodged her slap.

Zhen Zhen had a radar for when someone wanted to hit her. She didn't want to waste time on someone unreasonable.

Tan Hai raised her hand again.

'Big brother Yan Fen,' Zhen Zhen said.

Tan Hai lowered her hand, she turned around and smiled at Yan Fen.

'Big brother Yan Fen,' Tan Hai said.

Yan Fen smiled at Zhen Zhen. He stopped smiling when he looked at Tan Hai.

'What are you doing here?' Yan Fen asked Tan Hai.

'I wanted to visit you,' Tan Hai said.

'Where's Tan Cuo?' Yan Fen asked.

'My big brother called me and said he's busy today,' Tan Hai said.

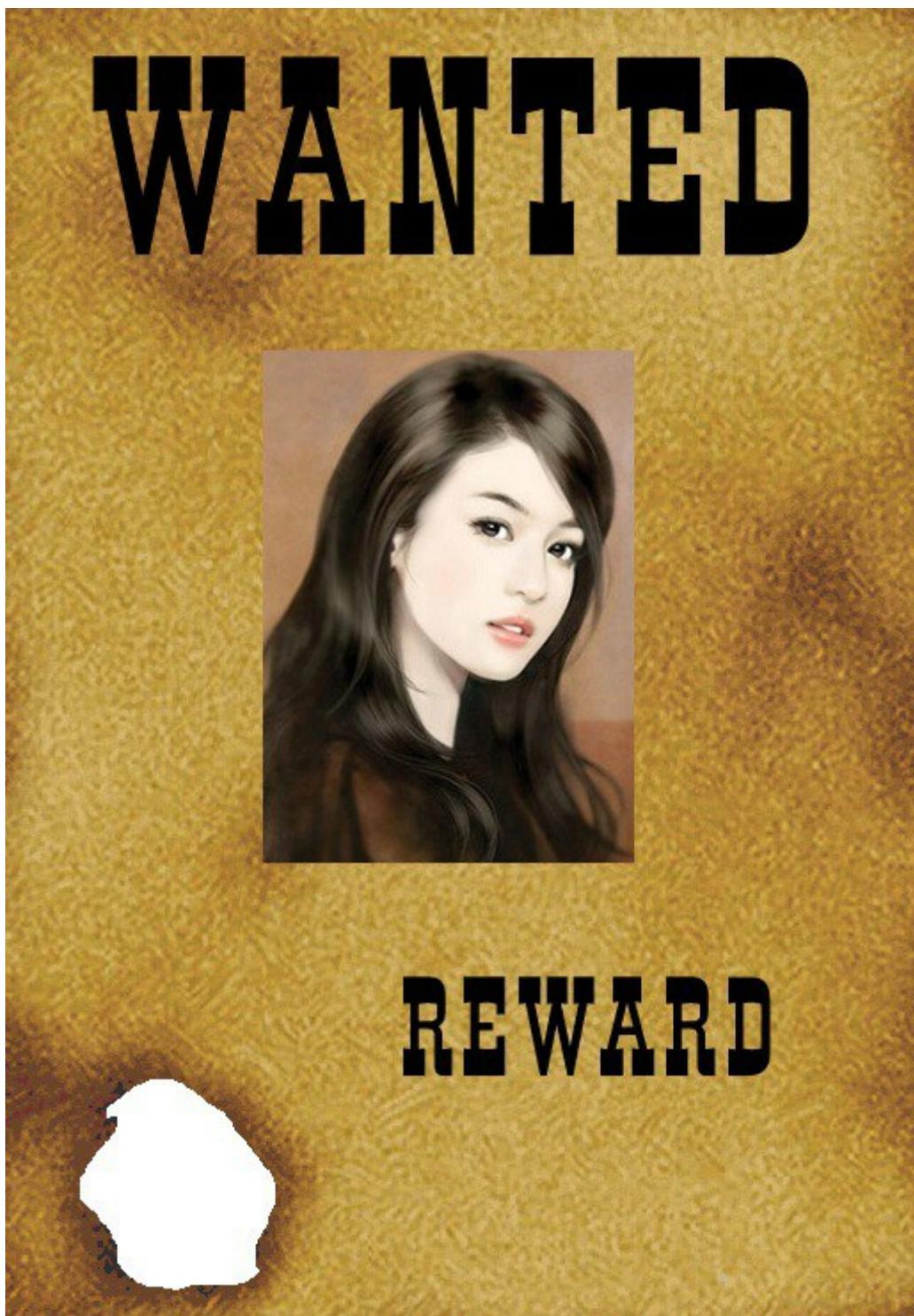
'Big brother Yan Fen, I'll give you and Miss Tan Hai privacy,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'm tired. I'm going to sleep.'

'Um, I'll call you for dinner,' Yan Fen said.

Tan Hai glared at Zhen Zhen's back while Zhen Zhen walked upstairs.

End of Chapter Thirty-Nine

Related



Chapter Forty

Missing.

Zhen Zhen helped Leo and Felix washed the bedsheets in the garden.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen is a beautiful woman,’ Felix praised.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, are you married?’ Leo asked. ‘I have a nephew.’

‘Your nephew doesn’t suit with Miss Zhen Zhen,’ Felix said. ‘But boss Yan Fen

suits Miss Zhen Zhen.'

Tan Hai pinched her nose, and she walked to where Zhen Zhen was washing bedsheets.

'Miss Tan, who are you looking for?' Felix asked.

'Where's big brother Yan Fen?' Tan Hai asked.

'Boss Yan Fen isn't here,' Felix said. 'Princesses like yourself should go back to your palace.'

'Miss Zhen Zhen, you fit right in with the peasants,' Tan Hai said.

'What did you say?' Leo asked.

'Leo, let's not bloody the bedsheets we're washing,' Zhen Zhen said.

Tan Hai pretended she wasn't scared of Leo.

'It's good you peasants know your place,' Tan Hai said. 'When is big brother Yan Fen coming back? It's hot here.'

'Miss Tan, you can go home first,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll ask big brother Yan Fen to call you when he's back.'

'I'll wait here,' Tan Hai said.

Zhen Zhen, Felix and Leo acted like they couldn't see Tan Hai. They continued washing the bedsheets.

Tan Hai saw a beautiful tall man walking toward her, and Yan Fen was following behind the beautiful man. She thought the beautiful man must be someone important if Yan Fen wasn't walking beside him.

'Felix, Leo, what are you two looking at?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Lam Chen introduced the beautiful man before Felix or Leo could answer Zhen Zhen's question.

'Everyone relax,' Lam Chen said. 'This is Yue Gu Zai, the leader of Ni Sheng. He's here to find his missing wife.'

'Missing wife?' Leo asked.

'He has a wife?' Tan Hai asked. 'What a waste.'

'Even if he doesn't have a wife, you wouldn't have a chance,' Felix said.

'Who is his wife?' Leo asked.

Yue Gu Zai ignored the commotion. He was relieved and happy to find Zhen Zhen. He quickly walked to Zhen Zhen.

'Zhen Zhen, let's go home,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen was nervous having everyone stare at her.

'Gu Zai, I haven't finish washing the bedsheets,' Zhen Zhen said.

All the servants wanted to hide. They couldn't believe they let Yue Gu Zai's wife help them wash bedsheets.

Yan Fen's heart sunk. He didn't have a chance to confess his feelings toward Yue Gu Zai's wife. He enviously watched Yue Gu Zai hug Zhen Zhen.

'Now I remember,' Mac Wu said. 'Miss Zhen Zhen is the famous prodigy. She's the youngest person to receive national and international awards for scientific research.'

Yue Gu Zai carried Zhen Zhen in his arms.

'Gu Zai, put me down,' Zhen Zhen whispered in Yue Gu Zai's ear.

'No,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Hello Mr Yue,' Tan Hai greeted. 'I'm Tan Hai.'

Yue Gu Zai carried Zhen Zhen to the car. She looked back at the pitiful Tan Hai who looked abandoned. She understood Yue Gu Zai didn't waste his time on anyone he didn't care about.

End of Chapter Forty

Related



Chapter Forty-One

Five minutes of pain.

'Gu Zai, you didn't let me thank big brother Yan Fen for saving me,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If it wasn't for him, I would be serving guests at a brothel.'

'Zhen Zhen, I'll ask someone to thank him on your behalf,' Yue Gu Zai said.
'Right now, let me hug you.'

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen, and he fell asleep on her lap.

'Miss Zhen Zhen since you were missing, boss hasn't slept,' Bai Yu Tian said.
'Miss Zhen Zhen, I understand you're an independent woman. You're capable of looking after yourself and young master Zhen Wu. Boss cares about you as much as your parents care about you. I hope in the future you'll consider the feelings of the people around you who truly care about you.'

Zhen Zhen thought deeply about Bai Yu Tian's words. It was true she was an independent woman. She liked being in control of her own life. She didn't consider her parents' feelings before she decided to have Zhen Wu and raise Zhen Wu as a single mother. She didn't consider her best friend Nan Ma would be worried about her when she was working for weeks in a row without contacting Nan Ma. She took Yue Gu Zai for granted. She looked down at him hugging her waist and his head sleeping on her lap, he must have been sleepless

and worried about her when she was missing. If she had contacted Yue Gu Zai earlier, his body wouldn't have been as worn out.

At Yue Gu Zai's home, Zhen Zhen stayed in bed with Yue Gu Zai to let him sleep comfortably for the whole night.

In the morning, Yue Gu Zai woke up refreshed. He walked downstairs, and a fragrant aroma hit his nose.

'Gu Zai, you're awake,' Zhen Zhen said. She smiled at Yue Gu Zai, and she brought the breakfast she cooked for him to the dining table. 'I made you breakfast.'

Zhen Zhen pulled out a chair for Yue Gu Zai to sit. She sat next to him, and scooped him a bowl of soup.

'Gu Zai, taste the soup,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I cooked it for you.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't understand why Zhen Zhen was so happy about a bowl of soup. But he didn't want to spoil her good mood so he obediently ate the soup. Each spoonful of soup was painful to swallow.

'Gu Zai, is it delicious?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai didn't want hurt Zhen Zhen's feelings, he smiled at her.

'If it's delicious, eat more,' Zhen Zhen said. She scooped another bowl of soup for Yue Gu Zai. 'I spent two hours to make the soup for you. It's my first time cooking.'

Yue Gu Zai's hands trembled, and he continued to swallow.

'Zhen Zhen, where did you learn to cook?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'From a cook book,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, aren't you eating too?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I ate dinner leftovers from the fridge for breakfast,' Zhen Zhen said. She scooped a bowl of rice and picked up vegetables for Yue Gu Zai. 'Gu Zai, taste the vegetables too.'

It was the first time Zhen Zhen cooked and fed Yue Gu Zai. He didn't know what else to do except slowly swallow and smile at her.

'What smells delicious?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Cheng Yi, join Gu Zai for breakfast too,' Zhen Zhen said.

Since Yue Gu Zai didn't object, Cheng Yi sat and rolled up his sleeves. Everything on the table looked delicious and was fragrant, he couldn't wait to dig in.

Cheng Yi scooped a bowl of rice, and he piled vegetables into his bowl. He ate a mouthful of vegetables, and his face tensed. He looked at Yue Gu Zai's stern eyes, and forced himself to swallow.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, did you cook everything on the table yourself?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Yes, is it delicious?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Delicious,' Cheng Yi said.

'If it's delicious, you should eat more,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai packed beef into Cheng Yi's bowl, and Cheng Yi wanted to cry.

'Huyen Di, come join us for breakfast,' Cheng Yi said.

Cheng Yi believed misery loves company.

'Boss, I found some evidence about the traitor,' Huyen Di said.

Huyen Di understood when Yue Gu Zai didn't want to talk business, Yue Gu Zai wouldn't answer him. He sat down, and Cheng Yi scooped him a bowl of soup.

Huyen Di naively ate the bowl of soup.

'Huyen Di, Miss Zhen Zhen cooked the soup,' Cheng Yi said. 'Is it delicious?'

'Delicious,' Huyen Di said.

'Why didn't anyone call me for breakfast?' Chu Gian asked.

Chu Gian sat down at the dining table, and she smiled at Zhen Zhen.

Chu Gian scooped a bowl of rice, and she picked up the vegetables and beef.

Everyone except Zhen Zhen, knew that Chu Gian wasn't a graceful eater. If Chu Gian ate slowly, it meant the food was bad.

Huyen Di scooped a bowl of soup for Chu Gian.

‘Taste the soup,’ Huyen Di said.

‘Thank you,’ Chu Gian said.

‘What a lively atmosphere,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘Everyone’s eating breakfast together.’

‘Join us for breakfast,’ Cheng Yi, Huyen Di and Chu Gian said together.

Bai Yu Tian smiled and shook his head.

‘I ate breakfast outside this morning,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

Chu Gian didn’t want Bai Yu Tian to not suffer with her. She used her legs to pull out a chair for Bai Yu Tian.

‘Yu Tian, eat more breakfast with me,’ Chu Gian said.

Bai Yu Tian knew it was a trap. But the trap was made by the woman he loved. He willingly fell into the trap, he sat and ate.

‘Who cooked breakfast today?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

Zhen Zhen raised her hand enthusiastically.

‘I cooked breakfast,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Everyone except the oblivious Zhen Zhen, prayed Bai Yu Tian found a bit of tact at the bottom of Bai Yu Tian’s heart.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, it’s delicious,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘I hope you cook every day during our stay in the U.S.’

‘Really?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘I’ll go buy more cook books, and I’ll cook more dishes for everyone.’

Zhen Zhen ran upstairs to search online for good cook books.

At the dining table, everyone else wanted to kill the Bai fox.

‘Mr Bai Fox, remember what you said today,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘You better eat Miss Zhen Zhen’s delicious cooking.’

‘I forgot to mention,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘Tomorrow I’m flying to Canada for a medical conference.’

'No one can leave until there is no food left on the table,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen was Yue Gu Zai's wife, he benefited from eating Zhen Zhen's bad cooking. But everyone else wanted the Bai fox to suffer with them. If they didn't have to eat with a conscience then they would have told Zhen Zhen not to make the soup sweet as a desert and not to make the rice, vegetables, and beef salty.

End of Chapter Forty-One

Related



Chapter Forty-Two

The Mole.

Yan Fen read a book in Lam Ping's study room while waiting for Lam Ping's return.

Lam Ping returned home, and he was paranoid to see Yan Fen in his study room.

'Yan Fen, when did you get here?' Lam Ping asked.

'I just got here,' Yan Fen said.

Yan Fen put the book on the table, and he reported to Lam Ping about the work activities he completed in the last month.

Lam Ping escorted Yan Fen to the door. He was paranoid Yan Fen found out something in his study room. He decided Yan Fen needed to be eliminated.

Yan Fen didn't notice anything unusual about Lam Ping. He drove back to Ni Sheng's headquarters in Las Vegas, showered, and drank beer while watching TV in the living room. When the wind blew through an opened window, he stood, walked to the window and he closed the window.

Bullets were shot through the window. Yan Fen dropped onto the floor and he rolled away from the broken window glass.

'Yan Fen, did you think I'll let you live if you know my secret?' Lam Ping asked from the living room door.

Lam Ping pointed a gun at Yan Fen's head.

'How long did you think you can hide your secret?' Yan Fen asked.

'After you die, my secret is safe,' Lam Ping said. 'No one else in the Ni Sheng gang has discovered I'm the traitor except you.'

Yan Fen jumped out of the window to dodge Lam Ping's bullets. He ran through the woods, he slipped on a fallen branch and twisted his leg. He had no choice but to roll down a hill and hide behind a water tank.

Lam Ping chased after Yan Fen, but he lost Yan Fen. He ran back to the building, and congregated everyone to the common room.

'I received an order from Yue Gu Zai,' Lam Ping said. 'Yue Gu Zai wants everyone to find the traitor Yan Fen who is Tan Lang's spy, and capture him alive or dead.'

'Impossible,' half of the people in common room said. 'Boss Yan Fen isn't the traitor.'

'But boss Lam Ping has been loyal to Ni Sheng for more than a decade, he wouldn't lie about boss Yan Fen being the traitor,' the other half said.

Outside, Yan Fen thought if he was going to die, he wanted to die killing the traitor Lam Ping. Then he spotted Chu Gian drive Yue Gu Zai toward the building. So he limped back to the building through a short cut.

When Lam Ping saw Yue Gu Zai and Chu Gian walked into the common room of the building, he was paranoid they found Yan Fen before he did.

'Boss, I found out who the traitor is,' Lam Ping said to Yue Gu Zai. 'It's Yan Fen.'

Everyone else in the common room were shocked the boss of Ni Sheng was a young and a beautiful man.

'Lam Ping, do you think everyone here are fools?' Chu Gian asked.

Lam Ping was cornered. If Yue Gu Zai and Chu Gian discovered he was the traitor then his only hope of surviving was by killing Yue Gu Zai so the Tan Lang gang would protect him.

Lam Ping pointed the gun at Yue Gu Zai, but he didn't expect Yue Gu Zai was faster. Yue Gu Zai had leapt in front of him, and choked his neck.

‘Anyone who betrays Ni Sheng has to pay the same price,’ Yue Gu Zai said.
‘You’ll be paying with your life’

‘Boss... spare me... I’ll confess everything I know about Mr Tao... and Tan Lang...’ Lam Ping said weakly.

‘You’re not in a position to bargain,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I can deal with the Tao Quan and Tan Lang gangs.’

Yue Gu Zai strangled Lam Ping to death. Lam Ping’s eyes closed, his head hung over his neck and the common room became silent.

‘Yan Fen, come out,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yan Fen came out of the shadows.

‘Boss,’ Yan Fen said.

‘Come home with me,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

End of Chapter Forty-Two

Related



Chapter Forty-Three

Brotherly love.

At Yue Gu Zai's home in Las Vega, Yue Gu Zai met with Cheng Yi in the study room.

'Cheng Yi, I want Yan Fen to take over Lam Ping's position,' Yue Gu Zai said.
'Where's my wife?'

Cheng Yi coughed awkwardly.

'Boss, your wife is visiting Yan Fen in the guest room again,' Cheng Yi said.

Cheng Yi was surprised Yue Gu Zai wanted to promote Yan Fen. He knew Yue Gu Zai was jealous Zhen Zhen didn't cook for Yue Gu Zai in the last two days because she spent most of her time visiting the injured Yan Fen.

In the guest room, Zhen Zhen sliced an apple for Yan Fen.

'Big brother Yan Fen, you're awake,' Zhen Zhen said. 'How are you feeling?'

Yan Fen thought he was dreaming. Every night he dreamt of Zhen Zhen. But Zhen Zhen's voice sounded real. He opened his eyes, and saw Zhen Zhen sitting on a chair in front of him.

'Are you thirsty?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen was relieved Yan Fen's complexion looked better than two days ago

when Yue Gu Zai brought Yan Fen to Yue Gu Zai's home. She saw Yan Fen as an older brother.

'No thank you,' Yan Fen said.

'Big brother Yan Fen, why do you sound so distant?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yan Fen didn't want to upset Zhen Zhen, he forced himself to smile and he looked at the apple slices on the table.

'Did you cut the apple for me?' Yan Fen asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen passed the plate of apple slices to Yan Fen and she smiled at him.

Yue Gu Zai and Cheng Yi walked into the guest room, and Yan Fen tensed on the bed.

'Boss,' Yan Fen said.

'Yan Fen, it's your lucky day,' Cheng Yi said. 'Boss wants to promote you. You're taking over Lam Ping's position.'

'I don't deserve the promotion,' Yan Fen said. 'If boss didn't kill Lam Ping that day, I would have been the one killed.'

'Don't sell yourself short,' Cheng Yi said. 'If boss believes in you enough to personally nominate you then you deserve the promotion.'

'Big brother Yan Fen, you should accept the promotion,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Think about the pay rise.'

'Miss Zhen Zhen, I didn't expect you'll be motivated by money,' Cheng Yi said.

'Do you have a problem with me chasing my career ambitions and money?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I wouldn't dare,' Cheng Yi said.

Yue Gu Zai held Zhen Zhen's hand and Cheng Yi followed them outside the guest room to let Yan Fen rest.

Later, Tan Cuo and Tan Hai knocked on the guest room's door. Strangers wouldn't know they were siblings, because of their opposite personalities.

'Little boy, you gave me a scare,' Tan Cuo said.

'Big brother Yan Fen, why are you here instead of staying at the hospital?' Tan Hai asked.

'This home belongs to Ni Sheng's boss,' Yan Fen said. 'The medical facilities here are as good as a hospital.'

'Is Ni Sheng's boss home?' Tan Hai asked.

'Are you saying this is Yue Gu Zai's home?' Tan Cuo asked.

'Yes,' Yan Fen said.

'Yan Fen, help me get into Ni Sheng,' Tan Cuo said.

'I can't make any promises,' Yan Fen said.

Zhen Zhen carried a vase of flowers into Yan Fen's room. She smiled at Tan Hai.

'Miss Tan, did you bring a friend here to visit big brother Yan Fen?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Yes,' Tan Hai said.

If Zhen Zhen wasn't Yue Gu Zai's wife, Tan Hai didn't want to talk to someone like Zhen Zhen who was beneath her.

'Zhen Zhen, this is my friend Tan Cuo,' Yan Fen introduced. 'Tan Cuo, this is... boss' wife.'

'Mrs Yue,' Tan Cuo greeted.

'Big brother Tan Cao, you don't have to call me Mrs Yue,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You can call me Zhen Zhen like big brother Yan Fen.'

'Big brother Yan Fen, I'll come back,' Tan Hai said. 'I need to go to the bathroom.'

Tan Hai wanted to look for Yue Gu Zai while Zhen Zhen was visiting Yan Fen.

Yue Gu Zai was in the study room catching up on work he put aside when Zhen Zhen was missing.

Guards stopped Tan Hai from entering the study room. She looked over the guards' shoulders, and she saw the man of her dreams again.

End of Forty-Three

Related



Chapter Forty-Four

Not the other woman.

Tan Hai found the concealed door connected to the study room.

'How did you get in here?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai put the cup of coffee on the desk. Only Zhen Zhen had his permission to enter the study room freely.

'I... I'm Tan Hai,' Tan Hai said. 'We met at Ni Sheng's headquarters in Las Vegas.'

'I don't remember meeting you,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I asked you how you got in here.'

Tan Hai loved Yue Gu Zai's cold aura. She was intimidated by him, but she thought she was as beautiful as Zhen Zhen. She planned to become his lover, make him fall in love with her and divorce Zhen Zhen to marry her.

'I... I came here to visit big brother Yan Fen,' Tan Hai said.

'Yan Fen is in the guest room,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'This room is out of bounds.'

Tan Hai was preoccupied checking out Yue Gu Zai to register Yue Gu Zai wanted her to leave. He looked dashing even in a white T-shirt and khaki pants.

Zhen Zhen walked into the study room, and she was surprised to see Tan Hai.

'Miss Tan, couldn't you find the bathroom?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I... this is a big home... I got lost,' Tan Hai lied.

Tan Hai noticed Yue Gu Zai was frowning at Zhen Zhen. She thought he didn't look like a man who loved his wife.

'Zhen Zhen, did you visit Yan Fen again?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Gu Zai, is it wrong of me to chat with big brother Yan Fen?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Zhen Zhen, cook dinner for me tonight,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai was going to ask Bai Yu Tian to fly back, examine Yan Fen's injury so he could kick Yan Fen back to headquarters.

'Gu Zai, I don't want to cook dinner tonight,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen secretly cooked lunch two days ago. She tasted her cooking, and understood why Yue Gu Zai and the others' faces looked strange even though they said the breakfast she cooked was delicious. She finally believed that there were some things even a genius like her couldn't do like cooking.

'Then I'll cook dinner for you tonight,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai, do you know how to cook?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Yes,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Can I invite big brother Yan Fen to eat with us?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai said yes, because he didn't want to disappoint Zhen Zhen.

Tan Hai didn't know why Yue Gu Zai would want to cook dinner for Zhen Zhen

if he didn't love Zhen Zhen. But as long as she stayed in his home, she would have opportunities to get closer to him.

Dinner was tensed that night. Yue Gu Zai only wanted to eat dinner with Zhen Zhen. But there were three wheels at the table.

'Mr Yue... I want to ask if I could join Ni Sheng,' Tan Cuo said.

'Boss, Tan Cuo wanted to join Ni Sheng for a long time,' Yan Fen said. 'I believe Tan Cuo will be an asset for Ni Sheng.'

Yue Gu Zai shot chopsticks at Tan Cuo. Luckily for Tan Cuo, he had quick reflexes otherwise the chopsticks would have embedded his throat instead of the wall behind him.

'Tan Cuo, you have good reflexes,' Yue Gu Zai praised. 'I'll ask someone to run you through the initiation tests. If you pass, you can join Ni Sheng.'

'Thank you boss,' Yan Fen said.

'I'm not giving Tan Cuo a chance to join Ni Sheng because of you,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'He needs to earn his spot in Ni Sheng.'

'Mr Yue, I won't disappoint you,' Tan Cuo said.

Yue Gu Zai didn't care about Tan Cuo. He put more food into Zhen Zhen's bowl.

'Zhen Zhen, eat more,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Um,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen thought Yue Gu Zai looked upset with her. She quietly ate the dinner he cooked.

After dinner Zhen Zhen showed Tan Cuo and Tan Hai to the guest rooms on the second floor. She thought she didn't need to visit Yan Fen while Yan Fen had Tan Cuo and Tan Hai to keep Yan Fen company.

Zhen Zhen walked to hers and Yue Gu Zai's bedroom, and she showered. By the time she got into bed, it was ten at night. She couldn't sleep soundly without Yue Gu Zai hugging her in bed.

Outside the study room, Tan Hai was wearing a see through white mini

nightgown. It was her perfect opportunity to seduce Yue Gu Zai. Since Yue Gu Zai didn't love Zhen Zhen, she thought he would fall for temptation.

Tan Hai walked into the study room. She couldn't see Yue Gu Zai. She put the glass of milk on the desk, and she looked at his signature on the documents. His signature looked solid like his body.

Yue Gu Zai was taking a nap in a room connected to the study room, because he didn't want to disturb Zhen Zhen's sleep on nights he worked overtime.

End of Chapter Forty-Four

Related



Chapter Forty-Five

Ace.

Yue Gu Zai showered and dressed after his nap. He walked back to the study room, and he looked coldly at Tan Hai who was snooping through his work documents.

'What are you doing here?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Tan Hai was startled by Yue Gu Zai's cold voice. She turned around, and looked at him. His wet hair added to his allure.

'I... I saw the lights were on in the study room,' Tan Hai said. 'I brought you a glass of milk.'

Yue Gu Zai glanced at Tan Hai's see through white mini nightgown, and he understood her true intention. If he didn't consider Zhen Zhen's feelings, he would have kicked the deluded Tan Hai outside sooner.

'Go outside now,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Tan Hai didn't understand why Yue Gu Zai wasn't affected by her half nakedness. Most men flew around her like flies.

Tan Hai pretended to trip, but Yue Gu Zai stepped aside and let her fall on the floor.

'If the fall didn't kill you then get out,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Tan Hai stood, cried and she turned around to walk to the door. She couldn't believe Yue Gu Zai didn't want to sleep with her.

'Wait,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Come back and take the glass of milk with you.'

Tan Hai didn't want to give up on the man of her dreams. She took off her nightgown and stood naked in front of Yue Gu Zai. Most men dreamt about her being naked, but Yue Gu Zai was indifferent to her naked body.

'How can I lose to Zhen Zhen?' Tan Hai asked. 'I'm a virgin. Do you know where big brother Yan Fen found Zhen Zhen? He found her at Dui Lan. Do you know how many men slept with her...'

Tan Hai stopped talking because Yue Gu Zai was choking her.

'You can't compare to my wife,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Looking at you makes me sick.'

Yue Gu Zai let go of Tan Hai's neck a second before she choked to death.

'Get out!' Yue Gu Zai said.

Tan Hai picked up her nightgown, and she ran outside crying.

In Tan Hai's state of rejection, she didn't notice she ran past Zhen Zhen. But Yue Gu Zai saw Zhen Zhen.

'Zhen Zhen, why aren't you sleeping?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I couldn't sleep without you,' Zhen Zhen said calmly like she didn't see a naked woman running out of the study room.

Zhen Zhen put the glass of milk she was holding on the desk.

'Gu Zai, I brought you a glass of milk too,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I hope you won't chase me away too.'

Yue Gu Zai was happy to hear the jealous tone in Zhen Zhen's voice. He picked up the glass of milk Zhen Zhen brought him, and he drank it in one gulp.

'Go back to bed,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll come to bed as soon as I finish work for the night.'

Zhen Zhen returned to bed, but she didn't fall asleep until Yue Gu Zai was lying next to her.

On Monday, Tan Cuo passed the initiation tests, and he became a member of Ni Sheng. Yan Fen was happy for Tan Cuo. But Tan Hai acted strange, she wore a necklace that covered her whole neck.

Tan Hai couldn't believe Yue Gu Zai rejected her. She wanted to take out her disappointment on Zhen Zhen while Yue Gu Zai wasn't home.

'Let's play a poker game,' Tan Hai said. 'The winner gets to hit the person who loses all their money first.'

'How can a man hit a woman?' Tan Cuo asked.

'If a man wins, he can hit the women softly,' Tan Hai said.

'Miss Tan is right,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Let's play poker.'

Tan Hai wanted to hit Zhen Zhen's head hard enough for Zhen Zhen to be too scared to say anything to Yue Gu Zai.

Unexpectedly, it didn't take long for Zhen Zhen to make Tan Hai lose all her money first.

'I lost,' Tan Hai said. 'Go ahead and hit me.'

Zhen Zhen smiled at Tan Hai, and she slapped Tan Hai's cheek hard.

'You dare hit me?' Tan Hai asked.

Yan Fen and Tan Cuo were shocked too. They couldn't believe how hard Zhen Zhen slapped Tan Hai's cheek.

'In your heart you know what you did wrong,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Just because I let most things slide, it doesn't mean I'll let you walk all over me.'

Zhen Zhen stood and she left the living room.

'Yan Fen, even if Miss Zhen Zhen is boss' wife, she shouldn't have hit Tan Hai so hard for no reason,' Tan Cuo said.

'This is boss' home,' Yan Fen said. 'It's not the Tan Household. You two should be respectful while you're in boss' home. Zhen Zhen isn't someone who would hit another person for no reason. Tan Hai, you should know your place and not cross the line again.'

Tan Cuo understood Tan Hai wouldn't tolerate being hit unless she was in the wrong.

'Little sister, listen to Yan Fen,' Tan Cuo said. 'This isn't our home. You shouldn't offend boss and his wife.'

'I know,' Tan Hai said.

End of Chapter Forty-Five

Related



Chapter Forty-Six

Not your girl.

Zhen Zhen visited Yan Fen's guest room again after Tan Cuo and Tan Hai left Yue Gu Zai's home.

'Big brother Yan Fen, you look healthy,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai saw Zhen Zhen visit Yan Fen's guest room, and he quickly walked into the guest room.

'Boss,' Yan Fen said.

'How are you feeling?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yan Fen understood Yue Gu Zai's undertone. Yue Gu Zai wanted him to leave if he was healthy again.

'Good,' Yan Fen said.

'Um,' Yue Gu Zai said. He turned to look at Zhen Zhen. 'Zhen Zhen, go pack our

belongings. We're flying home tomorrow.'

Zhen Zhen's eyes lit up. She missed Zhen Wu, but she was worried about Yan Fen.

'Don't worry about me,' Yan Fen said. 'My injury is healed.'

'Alright,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll go pack.'

Zhen Zhen left, and Yan Fen wondered why Yue Gu Zai stayed behind.

'Boss, is there something else?' Yan Fen asked.

'I don't like other people coveting what belongs to me,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Even if they secretly covet in their hearts, I still won't tolerate it.'

Yan Fen's body tensed.

'Boss, I understand,' Yan Fen said.

'It's good you understand,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Get plenty of rest.'

Yan Fen understood he couldn't compete with a man like Yue Gu Zai. If Zhen Zhen loved him, he would willingly risk his life to be with Zhen Zhen. But he knew by the way Zhen Zhen looked at Yue Gu Zai whenever she was in the same room as Yue Gu Zai that she loved Yue Gu Zai. He didn't have a chance to be with her.

Two days later, Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen flew home from Las Vegas. She was happy to become friends with William Hill and Yan Fen. But she loved being home best.

Mr Zhen heard Zhen Zhen arrived home safely, and he called her on the phone.

'Zhen Zhen, I want you to bring Gu Zai here for dinner,' Mr Zhen said.

'Yes dad,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen hung up, and she looked at Yue Gu Zai confusedly.

'Did your dad invite me to eat dinner?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll take you to eat dinner at your parents' home, and we'll bring our son home afterward.'

Later at Mr and Mrs Zhen's front door, Zhen Zhen changed her mind. She was

worried Mr Zhen would fight with Yue Gu Zai again.

‘Gu Zai, let’s eat dinner at my parents’ house another day,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Zhen Zhen, it’s alright,’ Yue Gu Zai. ‘You don’t need to protect me from your dad.’

Zhen Wu opened the door. He was wearing a white T-shirt and black pants. He looked like a mini Yue Gu Zai.

Zhen Zhen hugged Zhen Wu and kissed his face. She missed Zhen Wu a lot.

‘Zhen Wu, mummy missed you,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Of course you would miss your son,’ Zhen Wu said.

Although Zhen Zhen was Zhen Wu’s mum, Zhen Wu understood Yue Gu Zai didn’t want to share Zhen Zhen even with his son.

‘Mum, your saliva,’ Zhen Wu said.

Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Wu exchanged secret looks at each other.

Yue Gu Zai: Done?

Zhen Wu: Of course. Your son is a genius.

‘What are the three of you doing standing at the door?’ Mr Zhen said. ‘Hurry and come eat.’

At the dining table, Mr Zhen crossed his arms and he looked sternly at Yue Gu Zai.

‘Gu Zai, even if you’re not fighting for custody of Zhen Wu and you agreed not to change Zhen Wu’s family name,’ Mr Zhen said. ‘Don’t think I’ll let you marry Zhen Zhen that easily.’

‘Gu Zai, ignore this old man and eat comfortably,’ Mrs Zhen said.

Zhen Wu ate dinner quickly so he could talk to Yue Gu Zai in private.

‘Dad, I kept my promise,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I helped you and grandpa call a truce. You have to keep your promise too.’

‘Of course your dad will keep his promise to you,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Wu sighed, and he patted Yue Gu Zai’s pitiful back.

‘Dad, don’t count your chickens before they hatch,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Talk to mum first.’

Yue Gu Zai smiled at the why Zhen Wu acted mature like an adult in a child’s body.

Yue Gu Zai drove Zhen Zhen and Zhen Wu home from Mr and Mrs Zhen’s home. He thought Zhen Wu was overthinking things, because Zhen Zhen was in a good mood.

‘Is our son starting a new school term?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Yes,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen sat in front of the vanity table. She was humming a happy tune while she blow dried her hair.

‘Zhen Zhen, our son is a genius,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘He doesn’t need to go to school.’

Yue Gu Zai was sitting on the bed and holding a book. But he was couldn’t read a single word because he was worried about Zhen Zhen’s reaction.

‘Even if our son is a genius, he still needs to go to school,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai’s heart was beating fast after Zhen Zhen turned off the hair dryer, and looked sternly at him.

‘Zhen Zhen, we can invite the best teachers to home school our son,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I’m worried his potential would be wasted at school.’

‘No!’ Zhen Zhen said and crossed her arms.

‘Zhen Zhen, give me a reason why,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘No reason at all,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Our son going to school is not up for negotiation. Gu Zai, if our son emotionally blackmailed you to talk me out of making him go to school then I’m sorry to disappoint you, he’s going to school and that is final.’

‘Zhen Zhen, even if you don’t want to compromise about our son going to school,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I want to know why.’

‘Then you can see me as an unreasonable woman,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I’m

sleeping in the guest room tonight.'

Zhen Zhen walked to the guest room before Yue Gu Zai could stop her.

Yue Gu Zai knew Zhen Zhen was easy going unless someone provoked her. He watched her leave their bedroom, and he felt like he lost too much from his deal with Zhen Wu.

Two days later, Yue Gu Zai regretted making the deal with Zhen Wu, because Zhen Zhen gave him the silent treatment for two days.

Zhen Wu pitied Yue Gu Zai, and he consoled Yue Gu Zai in the study room.

'Dad, I heard if someone is a member of Ni Sheng and go back on their word, they'll become shark bait,' Zhen Wu said.

Yue Gu Zai wanted to kill the traitor who told Zhen Wu about Ni Sheng's shark bait rule.

'Dad, cheer up,' Zhen Wu said. 'Mum gave me the silent treatment too when I asked her if I could stop going to school.'

'How long did your mum ignore you for?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'One month,' Zhen Wu said.

Yue Gu Zai couldn't survive one month without sleeping with Zhen Zhen.

Cheng Yi overheard Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Wu's conversation. He suspected Zhen Wu hid something important from Yue Gu Zai. He waited for Zhen Wu to come outside.

'Young master, did it really take your mum only one month to talk to you again?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Of course not,' Zhen Wu said. 'I surrendered after one month. I begged mum to forgive me, and I promised her I wouldn't ask to stop going to school again.'

'Young master, why didn't you tell boss?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Dad didn't ask me,' Zhen Wu said.

End of Chapter Forty-Six

Related



Chapter Forty-Seven

The four letter word.

On the fifth day Zhen Zhen was still giving Yue Gu Zai the silent treatment. She was in a bad mood until Nan Ma invited her to Nan Ma's annual work party. She accepted Nan Ma's invitation to cheer herself up.

Zhen Zhen wore a silver cocktail dress and kitty heels to Nan Ma's work party. Zhen Zhen wasn't the most beautiful woman at the party, but many men with Lolita fetishes were attracted to Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen didn't like drawing attention to herself. If Nan Ma didn't threaten to kill her if she rocked up to the work party in a T-shirt and jeans then she wouldn't have worn a dress.

'Nan Ma, big brother Tu Hang,' Zhen Zhen greeted.

'Zhen Zhen, you haven't aged since the last time I saw you,' Tan Tu Hang said.

'Zhen Zhen's an alien,' Nan Ma said. 'She'll still look like this at fifty-seven.'

Tan Tu Hang laughed.

'I'll give you two privacy,' Tan Tu Hang said. 'I'll go mingle with the other guests.'

'Nan Ma, big brother Tu Hang looks like he...' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't worry,' Nan Ma said. 'I want him to lose interest in me. He has no chance with me. What about my godson? Where is he? You promised to bring him here.'

'I'm not bringing the little traitor,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He's taken his dad's side.'

'Why are you upset with my godson's dad?' Nan Ma asked.

'What else?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'We fought about Zhen Wu going to school.'

'Zhen Zhen, I know you were forced to skip grades,' Nan Ma said. 'It made it hard for you to make friends, and you don't want the same thing to happen to Zhen Wu. But you should explain it to your husband, and he'll understand why you feel it's important for Zhen Wu to go to school.'

'I want Zhen Wu to have the chance to socialise with children his own age,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I don't want him to be an outcast because he's a genius.'

'Do you think Zhen Wu feels like an outcast?' Nan Ma asked. 'Zhen Zhen, don't you think you're projecting your insecurities onto Zhen Wu?'

'Nan Ma... do you think I overreacted because of him?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Why?' Nan Ma asked.

'Do you think... I'm in love with him?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Impossible. Why would I love a man who values his opinions over others, and someone who threatened to blow up my precious lab?'

'Zhen Zhen, why else would he affect your moods so much if you don't love him?' Nan Ma asked.

Nan Ma spotted Shu Tang Jue at the door.

'Zhen Zhen, I have somewhere I need to be,' Nan Ma said.

Nan Ma left Zhen Zhen to reflect on her feelings for Yue Gu Zai on her own.

'Zhen Zhen,' Reynold greeted. 'It's been a long time.'

'Hello Reynold,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Will you dance a song with me?' Reynold asked.

'I'm sorry, I don't know how to dance,' Zhen Zhen declined.

'I can teach you,' Reynold said.

Zhen Zhen shook her head, and Reynold walked away.

Tan Tu Hang noticed Zhen Zhen's discomfort, and he brought a cheese platter to Zhen Zhen.

'Zhen Zhen, I remembered you liked eating cheese,' Tan Tu Hang said.

'Thank you big brother Tu Hang,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Do you know Reynold?' Tan Tu Hang asked.

'We're not close,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't be fooled by his looks and charm,' Tan Tu Hang said. 'I can't put a finger on it, but there is something off about him.'

'Um,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Where's Nan Ma?' Tan Tu Hang asked.

'She needed to go somewhere,' Zhen Zhen said. 'She'll be back later.'

'OK,' Tan Tu Hang said. 'Take care of yourself. I need to go greet some more guests.'

'Um, I have cheese to keep me company,' Zhen Zhen said.

After the party ended, Tan Tu Hang offered to drive Zhen Zhen home.

'It's OK,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I can take a taxi home.'

'Zhen Zhen, what about Nan Ma?' Tan Tu Hang asked. 'Did she tell you she's living with a man?'

'No, Nan Ma hasn't said anything to me about living with a man,' Zhen Zhen lied.

Zhen Zhen didn't want Tan Tu Hang to be sad.

'OK,' Tan Tu Hang said. 'I'm heading home.'

Zhen Zhen was focused on what comforting words to say to Tan Tu Hang that she didn't notice the jealous man looking out a car window.

End of Chapter Forty-Seven

Related



Chapter Forty-Eight

To tell or not to tell.

Zhen Zhen got home at midnight. She walked into the bedroom, the light were turned off and someone pulled her onto the bed.

'Zhen Zhen, did you dress up to out with another man?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Gu Zai, get off me,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You're hurting me. I didn't go out with another man.'

'Then who was the man I saw you with before?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Gu Zai, are you talking about big brother Tu Hang...' Zhen Zhen asked.

An hour later, Zhen Zhen was hitting Yue Gu Zai's chest.

'Zhen Zhen, I'm sorry,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I lost my mind when I saw you with another man.'

'You were rough with me,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Didn't I satisfy you?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen covered Yue Gu Zai's mouth.

'Don't say it,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai pulled Zhen Zhen's hand down.

'You can move again,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen jumped out of bed, and she ran to the bathroom.

Yue Gu Zai was happy he made up with Zhen Zhen. He would rather be shark bait than sleep apart from Zhen Zhen. Besides, he was the leader of Ni Sheng, no one would dare to turn him into shark bait. Even though Zhen Zhen explained to him Tan Tu Hang was Nan Ma's friend, he was jealous Zhen Zhen didn't dress up for him.

Zhen Zhen got back into bed after she showered.

'Zhen Zhen, forgive me,' Yue Gu Zai begged. 'I promise our son will go to school.'

'Um,' Zhen Zhen said. 'And I get to spend the day at Nan Ma's home tomorrow.'

'Deal,' Yue Gu Zai said.

The next day, Zhen Zhen took a taxi to Nan Ma's home. Shu Tang Jue opened the door for Zhen Zhen. Zhen Zhen couldn't help but recoil at the sight of Shu Tang Jue, she hadn't forgotten what happened in Italy.

'Come sit in the living room and drink tea,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'Small rice grain is changing clothes.'

Zhen Zhen shook her head, she was too scared to drink anything Shu Tang Jue made.

'Small rice grain doesn't know my identity,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'I hope you won't tell her.'

Zhen Zhen only heard Shu Tang Jue's unspoken threat.

'You're a genius,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'You know that no one will gain anything if small rice grain knows the truth.'

Nan Ma came out of the bedroom, and she walked into the living room so Zhen Zhen couldn't reply to Shu Tang Jue's request.

'Zhen Zhen, why did you visit me today?' Nan Ma asked.

'I'll go cook and let you two chat,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'I want to eat braised ribs,' Nan Ma said.

'You should cut back on meat,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'Shu Tang Jue, who's your sugar mummy?' Nan Ma asked. 'You dare nag?'

Shu Tang Jue smiled at Nan Ma, and he walked into the kitchen.

'Nan Ma, big brother Tu Hang said you're living with a man,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Is he the man?'

'Yes,' Nan Ma said.

'How did you two meet?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I found him homeless on the streets and I brought him home,' Nan Ma said. 'I have a spare room and I can afford to support a toy boy.'

'Nan Ma, he's...' Zhen Zhen said.

'The food is ready,' Shu Tang Jue said.

Shu Tang Jue's intimidating smile made Zhen Zhen shiver.

'Zhen Zhen, the food will get cold if you sit here all day,' Nan Ma said.

'Nan Ma, I remembered I have something I need to do,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll eat with you another day.'

Zhen Zhen ran outside and she took a taxi home.

When Zhen Wu saw Zhen Zhen returned home, he thought she looked worried about something.

'Mum...' Zhen Wu called.

Zhen Zhen didn't hear Zhen Wu, she ran straight upstairs to the bedroom.

Zhen Wu walked to Yue Gu Zai's study room to talk to Yue Gu Zai about Zhen Zhen's strange behavior. He didn't care if Yue Gu Zai was in the middle of a meeting, because if something bad happened to Zhen Zhen then Yue Gu Zai would ground him.

'Dad, your wife is acting strange,' Zhen Wu said. 'She came home, and hid in the bedroom like a scared turtle. Dad if the meeting isn't important, go upstairs and check up on her. If you don't go and something bad happened to her, you can't ground me. Teacher is waiting outside for me. He wants to take me to play

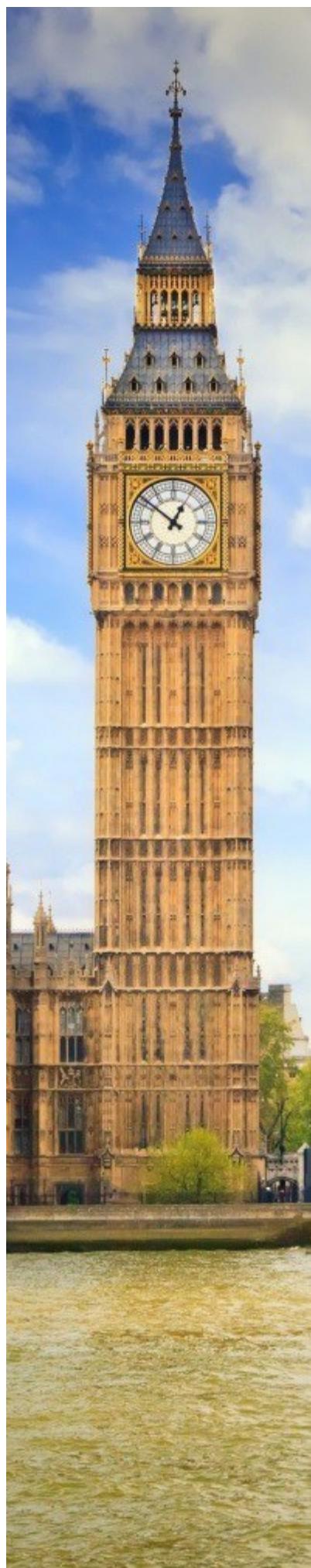
golf. Bye dad.'

'The meeting is over,' Yue Gu Zai said.

End of Chapter Forty-Eight

Related

49



Chapter Forty-Nine

England.

Zhen Zhen opened all the curtains to let sunlight in. She was still shivering from her encounter with Shu Tang Jue. She sensed Shu Tang Jue did care about Nan Ma, but she didn't feel good about keeping the truth from Nan Ma.

Yue Gu Zai walked into the bedroom, and he saw Zhen Zhen sitting curled up on the bed. He sat next to her and he hugged her.

'Zhen Zhen, what happened?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen felt safe in Yue Gu Zai's arms, and she let herself cry.

'Zhen Zhen, I don't care what happened,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll always be by your side.'

'Gu Zai, I saw Shu Tang Jue again,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai checked Zhen Zhen's body for any injuries, he was relieved she wasn't injured.

'Gu Zai, I'm not injured,' Zhen Zhen said.

'What happened?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I went to visit Nan Ma, he's living with her,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He threatened me not to tell Nan Ma about his identity. Gu Zai, do you think he wants to hurt her? What should I do?'

'How long have they been living together?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I don't know how long but they looked like they've been living together for a long time,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, I don't think he wants to hurt Nan Ma,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'If he wanted to hurt her, he wouldn't be living with her for a long period.'

'You're right,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't cry,' Yue Gu Zai said. He wiped Zhen Zhen's tears. 'I'll take you out.'

'Gu Zai, don't you have to work today?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I've cancelled my work schedule for the day,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen knew Yue Gu Zai put his work aside because he was worried about her, and he wanted to comfort her. But she didn't know why she felt happy. What if Nan Ma was right about her being in love with Yue Gu Zai?

'Zhen Zhen, why is your face red?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'Do you have a fever?'

'No,' Zhen Zhen said.

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Where do you want to go?'

'I want to go on a Safari,' Zhen Zhen said.

'It's too last minute for us to go to Africa,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Mmm... then I want you to teach me how to shoot,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Why do you want to learn to shoot?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Because I want to protect myself in an emergency,' Zhen Zhen said.

'OK,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll take you to practice shooting.'

Yue Gu Zai took Zhen Zhen to Ni Sheng's headquarters in a secret location.

Yue Gu Zai held Zhen Zhen's hand, and he gave her a tour of Ni Sheng's headquarters. If someone saw Yue Gu Zai, they would greet him.

'Boss,' Zhong Shen greeted.

'Zhen Zhen, this is Zhong Shen,' Yue Gu Zai introduced. 'He's in charge of the shooting range.'

Huyen Di saw Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen in the shooting range, and he ran outside to greet Yue Gu Zai.

'Boss,' Huyen Di greeted.

'Gu Zai, if you have something urgent to attend to, go ahead,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Zhong Shen can teach me how to shoot.'

'Um,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Be careful. I'll come back here after I'm done.'

'Miss Zhen Zhen, follow me,' Zhong Shen said. 'I'll show you where beginners learn to shoot.'

Zhong Shen gave Zhen Zhen a shooting demonstration. She was impressed all his bullet hit the target.

'Zhong Shen, you must be Ni Sheng's best shooter,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhong Shen blushed.

'Since boss turned sixteen, he surpassed me,' Zhong Shen said. 'Boss is Ni Sheng's best shooter.'

'Really?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Yes,' Zhong Shen said. He passed Zhen Zhen the gun. 'Miss Zhen Zhen, practice holding the gun first.'

Zhen Zhen held the gun, it was heavier than she expected. When she saw Yue Gu Zai's gang members hold guns, they looked like they were holding feathers.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, this gun doesn't suit you,' Zhong Shen said. 'If boss permits, I'll make you a lighter gun.'

Zhong Shen was a good teacher. After Zhen Zhen practiced shooting a couple of times, she could hit the target.

'You're a good student,' Zhong Shen praised. 'You hit the target on your first day.'

'Zhen Zhen, I'm back,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Boss, your wife is a natural shooter,' Zhong Shen said.

With Yue Gu Zai's guidance, Zhen Zhen shooting skills improved rapidly. Even Yue Gu Zai was surprised at her natural shooting skills.

In the evening, Yue Gu Zai gathered Huyen Di, Bai Yu Tian, Chu Gian and Cheng Yi to his home.

'William Hill is in trouble,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I want everyone to pack. We're flying to England.'

'What happened to William Hill?' Chu Gian asked.

'I received news his elders are playing dirty,' Huyen Di said.

'Why would they want to harm the Hill Household's heir?' Cheng Yi asked.

'William Hill refused to marry the woman that his elders want him to marry,' Yue Gu Zai said.

‘They get to live off him yet they want to decide who he marries,’ Cheng Yi said.

‘He is still their heir,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘Would they actually kill him?’

‘William Homan has a connection to the Hill Household,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘He has a son, William Reynold. William Homan is one of the people who wants William Hill to marry Helen.’

‘William Homan is a greedy old man,’ Chu Gian said. ‘He wants to control William Hill through marriage.’

‘Boss, Tina asked Da Tu Li and the Tan Lang gang to protect her,’ Bai Yu Tian reported.

‘Tina should be scared for her life after daring to kidnap my wife,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, come out,’ Bai Yu Tian said. ‘How long did you intend to hide there?’

Zhen Zhen came out from behind a book shelf.

‘I didn’t want to eavesdrop on anyone,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I was here first to get a book to read. I didn’t expect everyone to show up in Gu Zai’s study room.’

‘It appears it’s our fault that Miss Zhen Zhen was forced to eavesdrop,’ Chu Gian said.

‘Gu Zai, are you and everyone going to England?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Zhen Zhen, this time you’re staying home with our son,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Gu Zai, let me come with you,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I’m worried about William Hill too.’

‘No,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘This time it’s too dangerous.’

‘Gu Zai, it was dangerous last time too,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘This time is different. I know how to shoot, and I can protect myself.’

Zhen Zhen hugged Yue Gu Zai’s and she rubbed her face on his neck. Everyone else quietly left to give them privacy.

Outside the study room, everyone placed bets on whether Yue Gu Zai would

let Zhen Zhen go to England with them.

'I bet one thousand dollars, boss won't let Zhen Zhen come with us to England,' Cheng Yi said.

'Make it a return plane ticket to Hawaii and paid accommodation at a luxury resort,' Huyen Di said. 'I bet boss will let Zhen Zhen come with us.'

'Deal,' Cheng Yi said.

Chu Gian and Bai Yu Tian patted the Cheng Yi's pitiful shoulders.

'You're pitiful child,' Chu Gian said.

'What do you mean I'm pitiful?' Cheng Yi asked. 'I'm not going to lose.'

End of Chapter Forty-Nine

Related



Chapter Fifty

Looking at the moon.

On the plane to England, Zhen Zhen didn't know why Cheng Yi was looking resentfully at her. She didn't do anything to upset him.

Huyen Di happily read travel magazines.

'Cheng Yi, I like this island,' Huyen Di said.

Cheng Yi regretted raising the bet by betting his island to gain Huyen Di's island.

'Huyen Di, what do you think about my apartment building in the city?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Cheng Yi, I'll be generous by letting you visit this island once every three years,' Huyen Di taunted.

'Don't be stingy,' Cheng Yi said. 'At least let me visit the island once a year.'

'Don't forget I'm the new owner of this island,' Huyen Di said. 'Whoever goes back on their word becomes shark bait.'

'Alright,' Cheng Yi said. 'Once every three years.'

'Cheng Yi, why did you lose to Huyen Di?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Huyen Di and Cheng Yi made a bet whether Miss Zhen Zhen will be going to England with us,' Bai Yu Tian explained.

'You two seem free lately,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Huyen Di that island looks like a relaxing place.'

Cheng Yi was grateful he lost to Huyen Di instead of Yue Gu Zai. If Yue Gu Zai won his island then he wouldn't get to visit it again even once. He glared at the Bai fox for snitching on him.

In the Charles mansion in England, Helen sulked to Henry Charles.

'Dad, I don't want to marry Reynold,' Helen said. 'I love William Hill.'

'No,' Henry Charles said. 'You're marrying to Reynold.'

'Dad, I'm your only daughter,' Helen said. 'How can you make me marry a man I don't love?'

'Yours and Reynold's wedding is in a fortnight,' Henry Charles said. 'Behave and stay at home before the wedding. Paul, I want you to watch over Helen. She's not allowed to step foot out of this house before the wedding.'

'Yes master,' Paul said.

'Dad...' Helen said.

After sunset, Helen used bedsheets to climb outside the window and runaway.

At the Hill Mansion, the elders refused to let Yue Gu Zai to see William Hill.

Yue Gu Zai climbed into William Hill's bedroom through.

'Phil?' William Hill asked.

'Um, it's me,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Were you thinking about your mum again?'

'Yes,' William Hill said.

'Why are you locked in your room?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Since I didn't want to marry Helen because I don't love her, the elders are making Helen marry Reynold,' William Hill said. 'After their wedding, they'll pick someone else for me to marry.'

Downstairs, Zhen Zhen was frustrated Yue Gu Zai made her wait by the car. She wanted to climb the wall with Yue Gu Zai to see William Hill too. She spotted a young woman with blue eyes was standing under William Hill's bedroom

window too.

'Miss, do you want to climb up to that bedroom window?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Who are you?' Helen asked. 'Why are you sneaking around at night?'

'Miss, aren't you sneaking around at night too?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I... I'm looking at the moon,' Helen said.

'Why are you looking at the moon at the Hill Mansion?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Do you know William Hill?' Helen asked.

'I'm his friend,' Zhen Zhen said.

'I'm Helen,' Helen said. 'I'm William Hill's future wife.'

'Hello Helen,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You can call me Zhen Zhen. You're Mandarin is good.'

'As William Hill's future wife, I need to know how to speak Mandarin,' Helen said.

'Do you want to see William Hill?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'I can help you.'

A while later, after Yue Gu Zai agreed on a plan with William Hill, he wanted to climb out the window to see if Zhen Zhen was safe. But Zhen Zhen and another young woman climbed through William Hill's window.

Yue Gu Zai and William looked disapprovingly at Zhen Zhen and Helen.

'She made me climb the wall,' Helen said.

'She wanted to climb the wall first so I helped her... OK... I'm worried about William Hill,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Helen, what are you doing here?' William Hill asked.

'I'm worried about you,' Helen said.

'What about your dad?' William Hill asked.

'My dad is making me marry someone I don't want to marry,' Helen said.
'William Hill, let's elope together.'

'Helen, you know I only see you as a little sister,' William Hill said. 'I don't love

you.'

'I don't want to be your little sister,' Helen said. 'You don't need to love me. It's enough that I love you. Perhaps in the future you'll love me.'

'Helen...' William Hill said.

Helen couldn't ever get used to William Hill treading on her heart.

'William Hill, I can dye my hair black and wear brown contacts,' Helen said and cried. 'I can change myself to suit your taste.'

William Hill thought Helen was a good person. He didn't want to waste her youth on loving him when he didn't love her.

'Helen, changing your looks isn't going to make me love you,' William Hill said.

'I don't care,' Helen said. 'I ran away from home because I don't want to marry Reynold.'

'Phil...' William Hill said.

'Do you want me to take her home for you?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'No,' William Hill said. He didn't love Helen, but he didn't want her to be in an unhappy marriage. 'Can you help me take care of her? Helen, make sure you listen to Yue Gu Zai.'

'I know,' Helen said.

Yue Gu Zai safely helped Zhen Zhen and Helen climb down the wall.

William Hill sat alone in his bedroom again. He drank a glass of wine, and looked at the moon.

'Dad, wherever you and mum are,' William Hill said. 'If those old bastards take things too far, I won't show them mercy.'

End of Chapter Fifty

Related



Chapter Fifty-One

Helen of England.

Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen both agreed there was someone who shouldn't be in the kitchen more than Zhen Zhen, it was Helen. On the first day after leaving the Hill Mansion, Helen wanted to thank Yue Gu Zai for giving her a place to stay by cooking dinner. Helen accidentally blew up Yue Gu Zai's kitchen, and he warned her not to step foot in the kitchen again.

On the second day, Helen saw Yue Gu Zai helped Zhen Zhen practice shooting and she asked Yue Gu Zai to teach her how to shoot too. Helen's bullets made everyone duck for cover. Lucky no one was injured, and Yue Gu Zai banned Helen from holding a gun.

On the third day, Helen wanted to help Bai Yu Tian in the medical room. She accidentally broke Bai Yu Tian's most expensive medical equipment. No one knew what trick Bai Yu Tian used to make Helen too scared to enter the medical room

again.

On the fourth day, Helen borrowed Cheng Yi's computer. By the end of the fourth day, Cheng Yi begged the heavens to restore his computer back to its factory setting.

On the fifth day, Helen was restricted to the guest room. She had to beg Zhen Zhen to ask Yue Gu Zai to let her sit in the living room with Zhen Zhen.

'Helen, Gu Zai is worried you'll hurt yourself if you don't stay in the guest room,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't think I can't see that everyone is scared of Phil,' Helen said. 'They're scared I'll break everything in Phil's home. Big sister Zhen Zhen, how can you love someone like Phil? Phil is cold and stingy. Yes, he's handsome but my William Hill is handsome and kind.'

'Yes, yes Gu Zai can't compare to your William Hill,' Zhen Zhen teased.

'Of course he can't,' Helen said. 'When I was younger I wore a dress for the first time. I tripped over my dress and I accidentally teared my dress. William Hill's my prince charming. He picked me up, and his smile made me forget about my pain. William Hill bought me the same dress I teared, and from that day in my heart he's the most handsome man.'

'Does love make you want to change yourself?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Big sister Zhen Zhen, don't you love Phil?' Helen asked.

Zhen Zhen didn't know when she fell in love with Yue Gu Zai. If she didn't love him then she wouldn't have slapped Tan Hai for trying to seduce him. But her genius IQ wouldn't let her change herself because of love unlike Helen who would change everything about Helen for William Hill.

'Helen, would you still love William Hill even if he rejects you after you changed everything about yourself to please him?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'It doesn't matter if William Hill doesn't love me,' Helen said. 'Because I won't have any regrets knowing I did everything I could to get him to love me.'

'Helen, you have your own loveable traits even if you nearly destroyed one of Gu Zai's homes,' Zhen Zhen said.

‘Big sister Zhen Zhen, take me out,’ Helen said. ‘I’m going crazy being indoors.’

‘No,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Gu Zai made me promise not to leave here if he’s not with me.’

‘Big sister Zhen Zhen, I’m an expert at sneaking out,’ Helen said. ‘Let’s go out, and help me cheer myself up.’

Zhen Zhen agreed, and Helen disguised both of them to leave Yue Gu Zai’s home without detection.

‘Helen, did you sense some of those men we saw on the way out looked out of place?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Big sister Zhen Zhen, Phil has thousands of employees,’ Helen said. ‘Of course you can’t recognise everyone’s faces. Let’s go and have fun.’

‘I only have some Euros in my bag,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Big sister Zhen Zhen, you have Phil’s card,’ Helen said. ‘You don’t need a lot of Euros in your bag. Phil’s card had no spending limit. You can buy a mansion, a sports car and designer clothes and you wouldn’t even make a dent on his card.’

Helen took Zhen Zhen to a nightclub.

End of Chapter Fifty-Five

Related



Chapter Fifty-Two

Ashes.

'Helen, we shouldn't be here,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen looked at the topless men and women in bikini tops dancing on dance floor, and she was worried Yue Gu Zai would be upset with her if he found out she went to a nightclub with Helen.

'Big sister Zhen Zhen, relax,' Helen said. She smiled at a bouncer. 'Take us to the VIP room.'

'Do you want me to call An Mei for you?' the bouncer asked.

'Yes,' Helen said.

The bouncer took Helen and Zhen Zhen to a VIP room in the nightclub.

'Helen, why did you take me here?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Because it looks like it's big sister Zhen Zhen's first time coming to a nightclub and I want you to meet my friend,' Helen said.

'An Mei?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Yes,' Helen said.

Helen and Zhen Zhen waited half a day, and An Mei was nowhere to be seen.

'Is An Mei with a guest?' Helen asked the nightclub manager.

'Yes,' the manager said. 'It's a difficult guest that won't let An Mei leave their side.'

'Take me to An Mei,' Helen said.

'Helen, you know the rules here,' the manager said. 'Don't make trouble for An

Mei.'

'Take me to see that guest,' Helen said. 'I'll take responsibility for anything that happens.'

'Alright,' the manager said. 'Follow me.'

In another VIP room, Fei Jiao Tou ordered her goons to hit An Mei.

'Bitch, how dare you run out on a guest,' Fei Jiao Tou said.

'Stop!' Helen said.

Helen saw An Mei's bruised face, and she wanted to kill Fei Jiao Tou. She pulled An Mei behind her and Zhen Zhen to protect An Mei.

'Little girl, who do you think you are?' Fei Jiao Tou asked.

'An Mei only serves wine,' Helen said. 'This isn't a brothel, and you have no right to hit An Mei.'

'Little girl, leave before you can't taste food again,' Fei Jiao Tou threatened.

'An Mei is under my protection,' Helen said.

'Are you the owner?' Zhen Zhen asked Fei Jiao Tou.

'Yes,' Fei Jiao Tou said.

'I'll give you one hundred thousand euros to release An Mei from her work contract,' Zhen Zhen offered.

'It sounds like a good offer,' Fei Jiao Tou said. 'But I'll still make a loss, and the Da Household won't be pleased.'

'If you free An Mei from her work contract, I can promise no one from the Da Household will dare to give you trouble,' Zhen Zhen said.

'I have a good feeling about you,' Fei Jiao Tou said. 'I'll believe you, and let you take An Mei. But if I find out you lied to me then I can't promise you can keep your life.'

'Miss Fei, do you want all of us to go bankrupt?' Hua Di Wu asked.

'Big sister Hua, stay out of this,' Fei Jiao Tou said.

'Miss Fei, come outside and I'll give you an incentive to change your mind,'

Hua Di Wu said.

‘Miss Hua, you wouldn’t dare,’ Helen said.

‘Why wouldn’t I dare?’ Hua Di Wu asked. ‘Tina is my cousin. Even if Da Tu Li is here, she wouldn’t stop me.’

‘Let’s not fight over something trivial when we can drink wine,’ Fei Jiao Tou said.

‘Thank you Miss Fei,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Don’t forget to give me one hundred thousand euros,’ Fei Jiao Tou said.

Helen and Zhen Zhen took An Mei back to their VIP room.

‘Big sister An Mei, where did they hit you?’ Helen asked.

‘I’m OK,’ An Mei said.

‘Big sister An Mei, why didn’t you listen to me that this isn’t a good place for you to work?’ Helen asked.

‘I...’ An Mei said.

‘Big sister An Mei, why do you love Miss Hua when she doesn’t love you?’ Helen asked.

‘I don’t care if she doesn’t love me,’ An Mei said. ‘It’s enough if I get to be by her side.’

‘Helen, An Mei is in the same situation as you,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘It’s different,’ Helen said.

‘Why?’ An Mei asked. ‘Is it because I’m poor?’

‘Big sister An Mei, do you think we’ll be friends if I cared about status?’ Helen asked.

‘I’m sorry,’ An Mei said. ‘I’m being oversensitive.’

‘Big sister An Mei, I want you to meet big sister Zhen Zhen,’ Helen said. ‘Big sister Zhen Zhen, when I was younger I was kidnapped. Big sister An Mei was the person who saved me.’

‘You two can catch up,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I’m going to the bathroom.’

Zhen Zhen walked to the bathroom and she bumped into Sally.

‘Sally?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘Why aren’t you in Las Vegas?’

‘It’s your fault Dui Lan’s bankrupt,’ Sally said. ‘I came here to make a fresh start. I’m not going to let you live a happy life either...’

Hua Di Wu struck Sally’s head, and Sally fell dead on the floor.

After Zhen Zhen lived with Yue Gu Zai, she was desensitized from seeing dead bodies.

‘Miss Hua?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘If you die then there is no one who can pay one hundred thousand euros for An Mei to leave here,’ Hua Di Wu said.

Zhen Zhen didn’t understand why Hua Di Wu would secretly help An Mei to leave but acted like Hua Di Wu didn’t care about An Mei.

By the time Helen and An Mei went to the bathroom to look for Zhen Zhen, Sally’s body was taken away and they only saw Zhen Zhen and Hua Di Wu talking to each other.

‘Big sister Zhen Zhen, did Miss Hua do anything to you?’ Helen asked.

‘No,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I’m tired. Let’s go home.’

‘Um,’ Helen said. ‘Big sister An Mei, take care of yourself. We’ll see each other next time.’

‘Bye,’ An Mei said.

‘Bye Miss Zhen Zhen,’ Hua Di Wu said and blew a kiss.

Late at night, Yue Gu Zai, Bai Yu Tian, Chu Gian, Huyen Di and Cheng Yi returned to Yue Gu Zai’s home. The moment they stepped out of the car, Yue Gu Zai’s home was blown up.

‘Let go of me!’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai wanted to run into the burning house to save Zhen Zhen.

‘Boss, if Miss Zhen Zhen is inside, she would have died instantly,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

'I'm going to kill Shu Tang Jue,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai remembered all the days he spent with Zhen Zhen, including when she lost her memory, their wedding day and their honeymoon. He blamed himself for not taking Zhen Zhen with him that day.

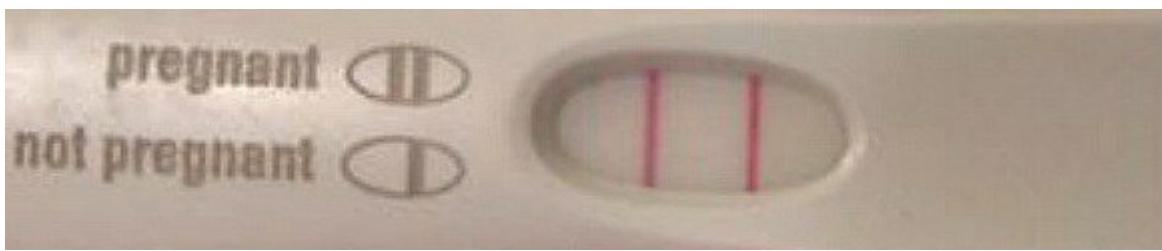
Everyone around Yue Gu Zai didn't know how to console the grieving Yue Gu Zai. They weren't used to seeing Yue Gu Zai's face showing emotions.

'What happened?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Everyone turned around, and they thought they were seeing Zhen Zhen's spirit.

End of Chapter Fifty-Two

Related



Chapter Fifty-Three

The eight letter word.

Zhen Zhen returned to Yue Gu Zai's home. She was scared to see the house burning. She ran to Yue Gu Zai, and checked to see if he was hurt.

'Gu Zai, are you hurt anywhere?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen. His body was shaking, and she realised he was scared.

'Zhen Zhen, it's good you're safe,' Yue Gu Zai whispered in Zhen Zhen's ear.

Yue Gu Zai's gang members sighed in relief. They were happy nothing happened to Zhen Zhen.

'Gu Zai, I'm OK,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai instructed everyone to move to Ni Sheng's headquarters in England while the burnt house was being restored.

'Mr Stingy,' Helen said. 'You should thank me for taking big sister Zhen Zhen out. If I didn't, big sister Zhen Zhen and I would have burned down with your home.'

'Zhen Zhen, where did you go?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'To Hua Di Wu's bar,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Who is Hua Di Wu?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'What bar?'

'Big sister Zhen Zhen, don't say where,' Helen said.

'A nightclub,' Zhen Zhen said.

Helen closed her eyes and prepared for doom. She couldn't believe Zhen Zhen

would disclose everything to Yue Gu Zai.

'You dare take my wife to a nightclub?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Before you forgave me for taking big sister Zhen Zhen out,' Helen said. 'You're the leader of Ni Sheng, you can't go back on your word.'

'I can forgive you and lock you in a room too,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Hey Mr Triad Boss, if you dare lock me in a room, I'll tell William Hill you mistreated me,' Helen said.

Yue Gu Zai ignored Helen. He held Zhen Zhen's hand and he led her to their bedroom.

'Gu Zai, isn't locking Helen in a room going overboard?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'No,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai unbuttoned Zhen Zhen's shirt.

'Helen saved my life,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Did she?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

By the time Yue Gu Zai nibbled Zhen Zhen's earlobe, she realised they were naked.

'Gu Zai, what are doing...' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai kissed Zhen Zhen's warm lips. He held her body close to his body. Her warmth proved to his shredded heart that she was alive.

'Let me love you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen didn't believe what a man said in bed was true. If she couldn't escape the crazed Yue Gu Zai then she could only be crazy together with him.

The following morning, Zhen Zhen was the last to wake up. She thought about all the things Yue Gu Zai did to her last night, and her face flushed red.

Zhen Zhen put on a T-shirt, but she couldn't squeeze into her jeans.

'Ah!' Zhen Zhen cried out.

Yue Gu Zai ran into the bedroom first. Afterward Chu Gian and Helen ran into the bedroom, followed by the others.

'Zhen Zhen, what happened?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

The men saw Zhen Zhen was half naked, and they immediately turned around before Yue Gu Zai killed them.

'Gu Zai, I'm fat,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I can't fit into my jeans.'

Cheng Yi couldn't hold in his laughter. He thought an intruder dared to come into Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen's bedroom. He didn't expect Zhen Zhen would scream because she couldn't fit into her jeans.

'Everyone go outside and close the door,' Yue Gu Zai ordered.

Yue Gu Zai stood in front of Zhen Zhen, and he rubbed her rounder stomach.

'Zhen Zhen, when was the last day you had your period?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Two months ago,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Gu Zai, it can't be possible.'

'What do you think?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I need to get a pregnancy test,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Stress can make my period late too.'

'I'll go ask Bai Yu Tian to examine you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai walked to the door. When he opened the door, everyone was standing behind the door eavesdropping.

'Boss, it was Cheng Yi's suggestion,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Boss, don't believe him,' Cheng Yi said. 'It was Chu Gian's suggestion.'

'Boss, it wasn't me,' Chu Gian said. 'It was Huyen Di.'

'Boss, it was Helen who wanted to eavesdrop,' Huyen Di said. 'It's my duty to ensure her safety.'

'Mr Stingy, I had nothing to do with this,' Helen said.

'Bai fox, do you know how to examine if a woman is pregnant?' Zhen Zhen asked suspiciously.

'Miss Zhen Zhen are you doubting that I'm a real doctor?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'I wouldn't dare,' Zhen Zhen said.

Bai Yu Tian tested Zhen Zhen's blood and urine samples.

'Boss, congratulations,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'You and your wife are having a second child. The baby is an exceptionally healthy.'

Everyone was happy Zhen Zhen was pregnant, except for the expectant mother. Zhen Zhen kicked everyone outside the bedroom.

'Boss, don't take it personally,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'It's the hormones.'

At night, Yue Gu Zai bravely entered the bedroom. He took off his clothes and laid in bed next to Zhen Zhen. He rubbed her round stomach and he smiled.

'Gu Zai, I didn't want us to have a second child,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, I didn't expect us to have a second child too,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'But we're blessed to have this baby come to us.'

'It's your fault,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Yes,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai listened to Bai Yu Tian's advice, a pregnant woman was always right even if her mood swings were wrong.

'Gu Zai, I want us to have a second son,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, we have already have a son,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I want us to have a daughter.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't expect Zhen Zhen favored boys over girls.

'I don't want a daughter,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Our second child is a boy.'

'Zhen Zhen, what if our second child is a girl?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'No what if,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Our second child is a boy.'

'Yes,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Our second child is a boy.'

Yue Gu Zai finally believed it was hard to reason with a pregnant woman.

A day before Helen and William Reynold's wedding day.

'Boss, tomorrow we'll make a move,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'If Helen's here then who is William Reynold going to marry?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Henry Charles hasn't called off the wedding even though he knows his daughter is missing,' Chu Gian said. 'It's strange he hasn't sent anyone to look for Helen.'

'I heard Henry Charles is sick,' Huyen Di said.

'It could be a ploy,' Chu Gian said.

'Who's there?' Huyen Di asked.

It was Helen who was outside the meeting room. She wanted to see Henry Charles after she heard he was sick.

Helen ran to the front door, but guards wouldn't let her outside.

'Miss Helen, boss instructed us not to let you go outside,' a guard said.

'I have something important to do,' Helen said. 'I'll come back soon.'

'I'm sorry Miss Helen,' the guard said. 'We can't disobey boss' order.'

Helen pointed outside the door.

'Big sister Zhen Zhen,' Helen called.

The guards looked outside and they didn't see anyone. When they turned around, Helen kicked them between their legs and she ran outside. She got into the first taxi she saw.

In the taxi, Helen doubted Henry Charles was sick. But he was her father. She wouldn't sleep well worrying about him. She only wanted to see that he was healthy then she would return to Ni Sheng's headquarters.

At the Charles Mansion, Helen ran into her family home. It was a trap. Henry Charles' guards surrounded her.

'Dad, you're not sick,' Helen said.

'If I didn't lie about being sick then you wouldn't have come home,' Henry Charles said.

'Dad, I'm your daughter,' Helen said. 'Why do you want to make me marry a man I don't love?'

Henry Charles looked away from Helen's tearful face.

'Jack, take my daughter to her room,' Henry Charles said. 'If she leaves her room before the wedding tomorrow then you and everyone here will be dead.'

'Jack, don't do this,' Helen pleaded.

'Young mistress, I'm sorry,' Jack said.

Jack locked Helen in her room as Henry Charles instructed.

End of Chapter Fifty Three

Related



Chapter Fifty-Four

I am your father.

'Are you ready?' William Homan asked the groom.

'I promised to marry Helen but don't expect me to love her,' William Reynold said.

'You don't need to love Helen,' William Homan said. 'I only need you and her to give me a grandchild.'

'I'm not interested in being the head of the Hill Household,' William Reynold said. 'You should keep your promise and give me my freedom after you get your grandchild.'

'I'll keep my promise,' William Homan said.

'Why do the elders want me to marry Helen?' William Reynold asked.

'When Henry Charlies married Helen's mother, she was already pregnant with Helen,' William Homan said.

'Are you saying Henry Charles isn't her biological father?' William Reynold asked.

'Yes,' William Homan said. 'Helen's biological father is George Green. The elders will acknowledge yours and Helen's child as a legitimate heir.'

'You want to abuse your grandchild's power,' William Reynold said.

'How can you speak to your father like this?' William Homan asked.

‘Am I wrong?’ William Reynold asked. ‘Let’s go. I don’t want to be late to the wedding and ruin your evil plans.’

At the hotel reception, Henry Charles handed Helen over to Reynold.

‘I’m giving my daughter to you,’ Henry Charles said.

‘Father, I’ll take good care of Helen,’ William Reynold said.

William Reynold held Helen’s numb hand.

‘You don’t want to marry me,’ William Reynold said.

‘You don’t want to marry me either,’ Helen said.

‘I’m still marrying you even if I don’t want to,’ William Reynold said.

‘Why?’ Helen asked.

‘Because after I get you pregnant, I’ll be free,’ William Reynold said.

‘Don’t dream about me having your baby,’ Helen said.

‘Reynold don’t be happy too soon,’ William Hill said.

‘William Hill, you traitor,’ George Green said. ‘Why did you bring your gangster friends here?’

‘Traitor?’ William Hill asked. ‘Mr Green, in your heart you know who is the real traitor and thief.’

‘Kill the traitor and the gangsters,’ George Green ordered his men.

Yue Gu Zai’s gang members took out their guns too.

At Ni Sheng’s headquarters, Zhen Zhen was in the living room worried about Yue Gu Zai and his gang members. She promised Yue Gu Zai to stay at headquarters because she was pregnant.

Bai Yu Tian’s phone in the living room rang. Zhen Zhen picked up the phone.

‘Bai fox, there are bombs at the hotel,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘We need you to come here to take my place for me to disable the bombs.’

‘Cheng Yi?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen?’ Cheng Yi asked.

'Bai fox left his phone here,' Zhen Zhen said.

Cheng Yi cursed Bai Yu Tian and he hung up the phone.

Zhen Zhen heard about the bombs and she couldn't sit still at headquarters.

At the hotel reception, George Green held Helen hostage.

'No body move,' George Green said. 'I'll shoot her if anyone moves. I'll let her go after I escape.'

'Even a blood thirsty tiger like you wouldn't want to kill your own flesh and blood,' William Reynold said.

'What do you mean flesh and blood?' Helen asked.

'He is your biological father,' William Reynold said.

Helen looked at Henry Charles.

'Dad... is it true?' Helen asked.

Henry Charles loved Helen's mother, and he loved Helen like his own daughter. He never wanted Helen to be hurt by the truth. George Green used his secret to blackmail him.

Helen closed her eyes. She didn't want to accept the truth. The man who raised and loved her for more than twenty years wasn't her biological father. But the man who was holding her hostage was her biological father. Fate played a cruel joke on her.

George Green pulled Helen toward the hotel reception door.

'Boss,' Huyen Di said.

Yue Gu Zai signalled for Huyen Di not to make a move.

Cheng Yi jumped from the second floor onto George Green, and gun shots were heard.

William Reynold spotted Zhen Zhen at the door first. He ran to her, and protected her from the bullets.

'No one move,' William Reynold said and pointed his gun at Zhen Zhen's head.

'Let my wife go,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I only want your beautiful wife to help me escape,' William Reynold said.

Zhen Zhen recognised the man who was holding her hostage. William Reynold was the same Reynold who wanted to pursue her.

Reynold slowly backed out of the hotel reception with Zhen Zhen to his car. He forced her to drive while he pointed his gun to her head.

'You lied about my parents wanting me to go on a blind date with you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'You're a smart woman,' Reynold said.

'There is nowhere for you to hide,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Who said I want to hide?' Reynold asked.

Zhen Zhen noticed Reynold's hand on his stomach was bleeding.

'You were shot,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll take you to the hospital.'

'No need,' Reynold said. 'It's too late.'

Zhen Zhen stopped the car.

'Why did you protect me and get yourself shot?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Don't cry,' Reynold said. 'If you cry, other people will think I'm mistreating you.'

Zhen Zhen didn't stop crying.

'The first time I met you, I thought you're an interesting woman,' Reynold said. 'But you only focused on eating. I don't know when I fell in love with you. The last time I saw you was at the party. You purposely stepped on my feet.'

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen helped Reynold put pressure on his stomach.

'I only wanted to be with you one last time,' Reynold said. 'Your husband will be here soon.'

'Don't talk anymore,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll take you back. Bai Yu Tian is a good surgeon, he'll save you.'

Zhen Zhen didn't want anyone to die because they saved her life.

‘I heard the leader of Ni Sheng is a good man,’ Reynold said. ‘You’re blessed to have a good husband. You and your husband will live a happy life together.’

‘Reynold...’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘I’m happy you remember my name,’ Reynold said. ‘I hope you’ll remember my name forever.’

‘I promise I won’t forget your name,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Reynold lightly kissed Zhen Zhen’s lips while she was distracted.

‘I’m sorry I’m greedy,’ Reynold said. ‘I don’t want you to forget me.’

Reynold hands were limp and he closed his eyes for the last time.

‘Reynold...’ Zhen Zhen called. ‘Wake up...’

Yue Gu Zai chased after Reynold’s car. He stopped the car when he saw Zhen Zhen stood with vacant eyes outside Reynold’s car. He immediately got out of the car and ran to her. There were blood stains on her hands.

‘Zhen Zhen,’ Yue Gu Zai called softly.

‘Gu Zai...’ Zhen Zhen called.

Zhen Zhen collapsed onto Yue Gu Zai’s chest.

‘Boss, William Reynold is dead,’ Chu Gian said.

‘I’ll let you take care of him,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I’m taking Zhen Zhen back to headquarters.’

End of Chapter Fifty-Four

Related



Chapter Fifty-Five

Dream.

Two days later, Zhen Zhen was still unconscious. Yue Gu Zai didn't care if they couldn't keep their baby. He only wanted Zhen Zhen to wake up.

Bai Yu Tian was worried for Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai. Yue Gu Zai only talked to ask about Zhen Zhen's condition.

William Hill was worried about Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai too. He would stop by their bedroom after work to see if Zhen Zhen was awake, but he didn't disturb them.

William Hill received a phone call from Henry Charles. He quickly drove to the Charles Mansion.

'William Hill, Helen locked herself in her room for two days,' Henry Charles said. 'She won't let anyone inside. You're my last hope.'

William Hill knocked on Helen's bedroom door.

'Go away,' Helen said. 'I said I don't want to see anyone.'

'Helen, it's me,' William Hill said.

William Hill waited for three minutes before Helen opened the door.

'What are you doing here?' Helen asked coldly.

Everything in Helen's room was broken except for the bed. She kept the bedsheets he bought her a year ago.

'You're an expert at breaking things,' William Hill joked.

'If you're here to mock me then you can leave,' Helen said.

Helen sat on the window seat, and she looked outside the window.

William Hill sat on the bed, and he hesitated to open his mouth.

'Helen, how long do you intend to stay angry?' William Hill asked.

'I don't need your concern,' Helen said.

'Why are you hurting yourself and the people who love you?' William Hill asked.

'Love?' Helen asked. 'Who loves me? No one loves me. I've been living a lie for more than twenty years. I deluded myself that I'm living a happy life. I'm a bastard child. My biological father used me as a hostage. My life is a joke.'

'Do you think Henry Charles' love for you is fake?' William Hill asked. 'Yes, he hid the truth from you. Have you asked yourself why he didn't want you to find out? Because he didn't want you to be hurting like this. Do you think hurting him will take away your pain?'

William Hill stood, and he turned around to leave.

Helen ran to William Hill and she hugged him from behind.

'William Hill... don't leave me,' Helen said softly. 'I know what I need to do.'

William Hill loved Helen like she was his little sister. He turned around and hugged her.

'Let yourself cry and you'll feel better,' William Hill said.

Helen couldn't hold back her tears anymore and she cried.

William Hill stayed with Helen until she fell asleep.

After William Hill closed Helen's bedroom door, he went to say bye to Henry Charles.

'Helen is sleeping,' William Hill said.

‘Thank you William Hill,’ Henry Charles said. ‘Helen truly loves you. If you’re with her, I don’t need to worry about her.’

‘You know I see Helen as a little sister,’ William Hill said.

‘I won’t mention it again,’ Henry Charles said. ‘Do you want to stay for dinner?’

‘I can’t stay for dinner,’ William Hill said.

William Hill returned to Ni Sheng’s headquarters to see if Zhen Zhen was awake.

In the bedroom, Yue Gu Zai held Zhen Zhen’s hand and he forced himself to stay awake.

‘How is she?’ William Hill asked.

‘Her fever is gone,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Bai Yu Tian believes she doesn’t want to wake up.’

‘Boss, Mr Luo Fan is here,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘He’s the best oneirologist. He can help you enter your wife’s dream.’

‘Phil, do you need to do something dangerous like this?’ William Hill asked.

‘Yes,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘It’s my last chance to get Zhen Zhen to wake up.’

‘Only one person can enter Mrs Yue’s dream,’ Luo Fan said. ‘If after ten minutes that person can’t convince Mrs Yue to wake up then that person will be trapped in her dream forever.’

‘Phil, it’s too dangerous,’ William Hill said.

‘I’ll do it,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Mr Yue, when do you want to begin?’ Luo Fan asked.

‘Now,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Mr Luo Fan, what do you need us to prepare?’ Cheng Yi asked.

‘I need this room to be peaceful,’ Luo Fan said. ‘Don’t let anyone disturb me during the ten minutes Mr Yue is in Mrs Yue’s dream.’

‘I’ll stay in here and guard,’ William Hill said.

‘I’ll order the guards not to let anyone in here,’ Cheng Yi said.

Yue Gu Zai laid next to Zhen Zhen, and he held her hand.

‘Mr Yue, relax your body,’ Mr Luo Fan said.

Luo Fan injected a drug into Yue Gu Zai’s arm.

Yue Gu Zai closed his eyes. When he opened his eyes again, he was inside Zhen Zhen’s dream. He saw an adorable chubby little girl sitting in a corner, it was Zhen Zhen.

‘Who are you?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘What are you doing here?’

Yue Gu Zai sat next to Zhen Zhen.

‘I’m here to find someone,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I need you to open the door.’

‘I’m not going to open the door,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Why are you sitting here?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘They don’t want to play with me,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘They said that I’m a book worm. Only book worms always rank first.’

‘Who are they?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Big brother and big sister,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai didn’t know what Zhen Zhen had to go through at a young age. She was a genius little girl who was smarter than her older classmates. Her classmates must have been jealous of her, and made her an outcast.

Yue Gu Zai rubbed Zhen Zhen’s head.

‘Zhen Zhen, there is someone who loves you,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Really?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Yes,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Liar,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Mei Tu sent you here. You want to pretend you’re my friend and get me to trust you. Then you’ll steal my experiments and tell the professors I’m a cheater. I don’t believe you.’

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen.

‘Zhen Zhen, even if the world lies to you, I promise I won’t lie to you,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen didn't know if Yue Gu Zai was being honest with her. But she let him hug her, and she cried.

The door opened. Behind the door was a photo of Reynold.

'I killed Reynold,' Zhen Zhen said. 'It's my fault Reynold died.'

'Zhen Zhen, look at me,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'It's me, Gu Zai. Reynold is dead. It's not your fault.'

'I don't want to hear Reynold died,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He's alive.'

'Zhen Zhen, Reynold saved you because he wanted you to live a happy life,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'He doesn't want you to trap yourself. Zhen Zhen, think about your parents, our son and our baby in your stomach. Do you want to turn your back on all of us?'

'Our son and our baby?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Mr Yue, you're running out of time,' Luo Fan whispered in Yue Gu Zai's ear.

'What happens if I leave now?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Mrs Yue has a ten percent chance of waking up on her own,' Luo Fan said.

'I'm staying,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai...' Zhen Zhen called.

'Zhen Zhen, it's me,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai, I killed Reynold,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, don't cry,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'We can't bring Reynold back to life. We still have our baby to think about. We can't let our baby die too. Zhen Zhen, let's go outside together.'

'Phil, wake up,' William Hill said. 'You can't die.'

'Boss, wake up,' Cheng Yi said. 'Ni Sheng needs you.'

End of Chapter Fifty-Five

Related



Chapter Fifty-Six

Hope.

'Gu Zai, I had a dream and you were in it,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Was it a good dream?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen wanted to say to Yue Gu Zai that she loved him, but her body was tired and she fell asleep.

'Thank you Mr Luo Fan,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Mr Yue, it was you who helped Mrs Yue wake up,' Luo Fan said.

'Phil, you should rest,' William Hill said. 'I'll take care of everything while you rest.'

The men left the bedroom. Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen and he slept soundly.

In the morning, Zhen Zhen woke up after a peaceful sleep. She stroked Yue Gu Zai's beautiful face. She knew when Zhen Wu grew up, Zhen Wu would look like the adult Yue Gu Zai.

Yue Gu Zai opened his eyes when he felt Zhen Zhen's fingers touched his lips.

'Zhen Zhen, what are you thinking about?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen shyly buried her head in Yue Gu Zai's chest.

'I think I love you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, can you say it again?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Say what?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Say what you said before,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I think I love you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, I can't hear you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I said, I love you!' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai smiled. He was happy to hear Zhen Zhen say that she loved him.

'You tricked me,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You heard me the first time.'

'Zhen Zhen, I think the whole house heard you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Outside the bedroom, William Hill chased everyone away to give Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen privacy.

'What about you?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'What about me?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Aren't you supposed to say something like... I love you, I'll take care of you and be good to you for the rest of your life?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Why do I need to say all those things?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen nodded her head. On TV she saw couples declare their undying love, but it didn't mean every couple had to do the same. She thought she lost to Yue Gu Zai. She didn't need to embarrass herself if he didn't say he loved her.

On the second day after Zhen Zhen woke up, Yue Gu Zai wanted to take care of Zhen Zhen and he asked William Hill to help him with his workload.

William Hill helped Yue Gu Zai. But he was still heartbroken to hear Zhen Zhen declare that she loved Yue Gu Zai.

'William Hill,' Helen called.

Helen kissed William Hill's cheek and she hugged him like a koala.

William Hill snapped out of his thoughts and untangled himself from Helen.

'Helen, what are you doing here?' William Hill asked.

'To see you,' Helen said.

'Your hair...' William Hill said.

William Hill was angry Helen dyed her hair black.

'Does it look good?' Helen asked.

'Why are you this foolish?' William Hill asked. 'Dying your hair black isn't going to change anything except your hair color.'

'I'm not foolish,' Helen said. 'You like gentle women with black hair. Can't you understand I changed myself because I love you?'

'Helen, I only see you as a...' William Hill said.

'Sister, sister, sister,' Helen said and cried. 'I don't want to be your sister. I want to be your wife. You don't need to love me. I only want to be by your side.'

'Helen, I don't want to string you along,' William Hill said. 'I can only love you like you're my little sister.'

Helen took a step back.

'William Hill, who do you want to fool?' Helen asked. 'You love big sister Zhen Zhen. Even I can see you love her. You wouldn't have risked your life in Las Vegas if you didn't love her. If I can see it, Phil can see it too. You are the one who needs to wake up. You're in love with your friend's wife. Big sister Zhen Zhen loves Phil. They won't ever give you a chance to separate them.'

'My feelings are my feelings,' William Hill said. 'It has nothing to do with you.'

'You're right,' Helen said. 'Your feelings has nothing to do with me.'

Helen turned around and she ran out of the room.

William Hill knew Helen spoke the truth. He shouldn't stay somewhere he didn't belong and be a third wheel.

'Aren't you going to chase after her?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'I was walking past and I overheard your conversation with Helen. If you're not going to chase after her then I will.'

Zhen Zhen took a taxi to the nightclub. She found An Mei drinking wine in a private room.

'An Mei, did Helen come here to see you?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'You have guts to look for Helen,' An Mei said.

‘It’s a misunderstanding,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I want to take Helen home to clear the misunderstanding.’

‘There’s no misunderstanding,’ An Mei said. ‘Stop acting innocent. I hate women like you who lead other people on.’

‘How can I apologise for something I didn’t do?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘It doesn’t matter if you don’t believe me. The important thing right now is for me to find Helen.’

‘Do you think I’ll let you leave this easily?’ An Mei asked.

‘An Mei, where’s the new girl you wanted to recommend?’ Chen asked.

‘Big sister Chen, this is the new girl,’ An Mei said.

‘I like this girl,’ Chen said.

An Mei walked out of the room, and she locked the door.

Helen came back to a VIP room from vomiting in the toilet.

‘Big sister An Mei, where did you go?’ Helen asked.

‘To avenge you,’ An Mei said.

‘What do you mean?’ Helen asked.

An Mei explained to Helen why she locked Zhen Zhen in a room with Chen.

‘An Mei, you better pray nothing happened to big sister Zhen Zhen,’ Helen said. ‘Give me the key before this nightclub burns down.’

‘Are you serious?’ An Mei asked.

‘Deadly serious,’ Helen said.

Helen snatched the key from An Mei’s hand and she ran to the private room where Zhen Zhen was locked.

In the private room, Zhen Zhen couldn’t believe how fat Chen was. Chen’s saliva was all over her face, because Chen tried to kiss her lips. She couldn’t stand the alcohol stench on Chen’s body.

Hua Di Wu kicked the door of the private room open.

‘Miss Chen, what are you doing with my woman?’ Hua Di Wu asked.

'I'm sorry,' Chen said. 'I didn't know she was your woman.'

Zhen Zhen was relieved Chen's fat body didn't put pressure on her body anymore, and she slowly stood.

'Do you think I'll let you run off like this?' Hua Di Wu asked.

'I'm sorry,' Chen said.

Chen offered Hua Di Wu a couple of purple euro notes.

'Do you think money is enough for kissing my woman?' Hua Di Wu asked.

'Guards, take Miss Chen outside and don't let her come back here again.'

'Thank you big sister Hua,' Zhen Zhen said.

Hua Di Wu held Zhen Zhen's chin.

'If you want to thank me,' Hua Di Wu said. 'You can thank me with a kiss.'

Yue Gu Zai and William Hill arrived at the private room at the same time as Helen. Yue Gu Zai saw Hua Di Wu was about to kiss Zhen Zhen's lips, and he wanted to skin Hua Di Wu.

Zhen Zhen didn't see Yue Gu Zai and the others. She only wanted Hua Di Wu to let go of her chin.

'I'm not someone who commits adultery,' Zhen Zhen said.

Hua Di Wu could see Yue Gu Zai from the corner of her eyes.

'Don't worry,' Hua Di Wu said. 'Your husband won't find out.'

In one stride, Yue Gu Zai held a knife on the side of Hua Di Wu's neck.

'If you have the guts then kiss my wife,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai,' Zhen Zhen called.

Hua Di Wu wisely let Zhen Zhen go. She believed Yue Gu Zai would have skinned her if she kissed Zhen Zhen's lips.

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen.

'Zhen Zhen, your body is still weak,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Why did you run here?'

'Gu Zai, I'm OK,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Let's go home,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai, wait,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Helen, come home with us.'

'We can talk in their home,' William Hill said.

Helen followed Yue Gu Zai, Zhen Zhen and William Hill back to headquarters.

An Mei didn't know why Helen and Hua Di Wu were scared of Yue Gu Zai.

'An Mei, you're lucky nothing happened to Zhen Zhen,' Hua Di Wu said. 'Her husband is Yue Gu Zai. He's the leader of Ni Sheng. He loves his wife and son. Anyone who dares to touch his wife and son will receive a sad ending. You're also lucky Zhen Zhen isn't the type of person who holds grudges. She won't tell her husband what you did to her today otherwise you won't be standing for long. From today, there is nothing between us.'

In the backyard at headquarters, Helen apologised to Zhen Zhen.

'I'm sorry big sister Zhen Zhen,' Helen said.

'It's not your fault,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Thank you,' Helen said. 'Big sister Zhen Zhen, I'm going to give up on William Hill. I'm not the woman he loves.'

'Helen do you know why a person waits for another person?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'Because no one can predict the future. Everything changes every second. If there is hope, don't give up. If you love William Hill, as long as you're not hurting anyone, you don't have to give up on him.'

Helen quietly listened to Zhen Zhen.

'William Hill is attracted to Mandarin women because his mum is Mandarin,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Would you be happy if he loves you because you changed everything about you to suit his tastes?'

Helen shook her head.

'In William Hill's eyes, you're someone who is important to him,' Zhen Zhen said. 'If you're not important to him, he would have let you lock yourself in your bedroom. You need to give him time to see that he does love you.'

'Big sister Zhen Zhen, do you believe he loves me?' Helen asked.

'Where is your confidence?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Helen held Zhen Zhen's hand and she smiled.

'Thank you big sister Zhen Zhen,' Helen said.

Helen walked inside headquarters, and Yue Gu Zai walked to the bench Zhen Zhen sat on.

'Zhen Zhen, do you really believe William Hill loves Helen?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Why not?' Zhen Zhen said. 'Helen has many loveable traits. There's hope William Hill will love her one day.'

Yue Gu Zai helped Zhen Zhen stand.

'It's cold outside,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Let's go back inside. In two days we'll fly home.'

'I miss our son,' Zhen Zhen said.

'What's good about our son?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

End of Chapter Fifty-Six

Related



Chapter Fifty-Seven

Charm.

On the plane, Zhen Zhen hoped to hear good news from Helen and William soon.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, are you thinking about finding out if you and boss are having a boy or a girl?' Cheng Yi asked.

'Miss Zhen Zhen isn't even three months pregnant yet,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Besides, hers and boss' baby is healthy. It doesn't matter if their baby is a boy or a girl.'

'I don't need to find out if the baby is a boy or a girl,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Gu Zai and my second child is a boy.'

Yue Gu Zai stared at the newspaper in his hands. He knew it was pointless voicing his opinion that there was a fifty percent chance his and Zhen Zhen's second child was a girl.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, there is a chance it's a baby girl,' Cheng Yi said.

'No chance,' Zhen Zhen said. 'It's a boy. I've thought of a name for him already. His name is Ni.'

Yue Gu Zai helplessly put the newspaper away.

'Yue Ni sounds like a good name,' Cheng Yi said.

'Who wants to name the baby after a triad boss?' Zhen Zhen said. 'The baby's name is Reynold Ni.'

Yue Gu Zai had agreed Zhen Zhen could name their second child in memory of

Reynold for saving her life.

Cheng Yi closed his mouth. He couldn't reason with a pregnant woman.

Zhen Wu ran to the door when he heard Zhen Zhen's footsteps.

'Mum, I missed you,' Zhen Wu said and hugged Zhen Zhen.

Zhen Zhen kissed Zhen Wu's face.

'Mummy missed you too,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mum, your stomach is rounder,' Zhen Wu said. 'What have you been eating?'

'Zhen Wu, I'm giving you a little brother,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Really?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Um, it has to be a little brother,' Zhen Wu said. 'I don't want a little sister.'

Zhen Zhen held Zhen Wu's hand and they walked into the living room.

'Teacher,' Zhen Zhen greeted.

'I'm happy I'll have another Zhen Wu to spoil,' teacher said.

Yue Gu Zai took Zhen Wu to the study room to speak privately to Zhen Wu.

'Son, having a little sister is good too,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Dad, having a little sister is bad,' Zhen Wu said. 'Girls are weaker and loveable. I'll always have to give way to a little sister. Having a little brother is good. I can bully him if he misbehaves, and he'll always have to listen to his big brother.'

Two months later, Zhen Zhen was five months pregnant. Her mood swings drove Yue Gu Zai crazy. She would cry one moment and laugh the next moment.

'Zhen Zhen, do you want to go on the sea trip with your colleagues?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'It's a chance for us to spend alone time together before the baby is born.'

'Baby, baby, baby,' Zhen Zhen said and cried.

'We don't have to go if you don't want to,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'You don't want to go on a trip with me?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Of course I want to go on a trip with you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Good,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll go pack.'

Early in the morning, Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen were driven to her workplace where a coach was waiting for them.

'Supervisor Jiang,' Zhen Zhen greeted.

'Zhen Zhen, you're pregnant,' Mr Jiang said.

Mr Jiang heard the sad news about Reynold. He hoped Reynold's death wouldn't affect Zhen Zhen.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Supervisor Jiang, this is my husband Yue Gu Zai.'

'Your husband is a handsome man,' Mr Jiang said.

Yue Gu Zai nodded his head instead of shaking Mr Jiang's offered hand.

Zhen Zhen's male colleagues were sad to hear Zhen Zhen was married. They thought they had a chance to pursue after she came back from England.

Zhen Zhen's female colleagues were jealous Zhen Zhen married a rich and handsome man.

'Why does that bitch have all the luck?' the first woman asked.

'Who knows,' the second woman said. 'She could have hired a fake husband.'

'Who are you two talking about?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'Big sister Tan, who else but the genius?' the first woman said. 'She's good at luring men with her fake innocence.'

'True,' Tan Xu Er said. 'Why would such a good man marry a woman who has a son with another man?'

After everyone arrived and boarded the coach, the driver drove them to the country town by the sea.

Later that day at the hotel, Zhen Zhen was waiting outside the coach, and inhaling fresh sea air while Yue Gu Zai went to get the key to their hotel room.

Tan Xu Er used the opportunity Zhen Zhen was alone to get Zhen Zhen to spill the beans.

‘Big sister Zhen, we graduated from the same college,’ Tan Xu Er said. ‘I heard about your award winning scientific research after you graduated.’

‘Who are you?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘I was your replacement while you were on sick leave...’ Tan Xu Er said.

‘Zhen Zhen, we’re in room 1009,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Are you big sister Zhen’s husband?’ Tan Xu Er asked. She offered her hand to Yue Gu Zai and smiled. ‘I’m Tan Xu Er, it’s a pleasure to meet you.’

Yue Gu Zai ignored Tan Xu Er. He wrapped an arm around Zhen Zhen’s waist.

‘Zhen Zhen, let’s go,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen smiled apologetically to Tan Xu Er, and she followed Yue Gu Zai to their room.

‘1005, 1007, 1009,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Gu Zai, I remembered I walked into your room that night by mistake,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Wrong room?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Mmm... I meant it was dark that night... I didn’t see clearly,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Go shower and sleep,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Tomorrow we’ll go sightseeing.’

Zhen Zhen ran to the bathroom. She was grateful Yue Gu Zai didn’t ask more questions about the night they conceived Zhen Wu.

The next morning, Yue Gu Zai helped Zhen Zhen dressed and he poured a glass of milk for her.

Someone knocked on the door, and Yue Gu Zai stood to walk to the door.

‘Zhen Zhen, drink the milk,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai opened the door and closed it after he saw Tan Xu Er’s face.

‘Gu Zai, who was it?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Nobody,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai ignored the door knock, and he helped Zhen Zhen put on shoes.

‘Big sister Zhen,’ Tan Xu Er called from outside the door.

‘Gu Zai, did you leave someone standing outside?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai opened the door and let Tan Xu Er inside because he didn’t want to upset Zhen Zhen.

‘Big sister Zhen, let’s go to the market and temple together,’ Tan Xu Er said. ‘If someone goes to the temple to pray, I heard it’ll come true.’

Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai followed Tan Xu Er to the market and temple. Zhen Zhen felt Tan Xu Er’s friendliness was fake compared to Helen’s sincere friendliness.

At the market at the foot of a hill, Tan Xu Er picked up a plush tiger.

‘What a cute tiger,’ Tan Xu Er said. ‘How much is it?’

‘Fifty yuan,’ the stall owner said.

‘I’m sorry,’ Tan Xu Er said. ‘I forgot to bring my purse.’

Yue Gu Zai saw Zhen Zhen looked sad because Tan Xu Er couldn’t buy the tiger so he paid the stall owner.

‘Thank you for buying the tiger for me,’ Tan Xu Er said.

Yue Gu Zai ignored Tan Xu Er. He held Zhen Zhen’s hand and they walked to the restaurant to eat and rest, because he didn’t want Zhen Zhen’s feet to hurt.

‘Gu Zai, the temple is on top of the hill,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘I’ll wait for you here while you get a charm for our baby.’

‘Zhen Zhen, our baby is healthy even without a charm,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘You’re a scientist. Why are superstitious?’

‘What would a triad boss know?’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai sighed.

‘Alright,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I’ll go get a charm for our baby.’

Tan Xu Er used the excuse of getting a charm for her family to follow Yue Gu Zai to the temple.

‘Big brother Yue, how did you meet big sister Zhen?’ Tan Xu Er asked.

Yue Gu Zai ignored Tan Xu Er. He only wanted to quickly get the charm so he could go back to Zhen Zhen.

'I heard big sister Zhen's former lover is an irresponsible man,' Tan Xu Er said. 'What sort of a man abandons a gentle woman like big sister Zhen and her son? In college I heard a lot of men admired big sister Zhen and wanted to pursue her like big brother San Mac. Do you think San Mac is her son's father?'

Yue Gu Zai wouldn't have bothered to talk to Tan Xu Er if he didn't know how to ask for a charm.

'How do you ask for a charm?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Buy incense sticks and a monk will give you a charm,' Tan Xu Er said and smiled.

Yue Gu Zai walked to a monk and he asked to buy incense sticks.

'If you want to write your name on a charm to hang in the temple, it's twenty yuan,' the monk said.

'How much will it cost for me to write the names of my family members on all the charms in the temple?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I...' the monk said.

'One hundred thousand or two hundred thousand yuan?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

The monk was speechless.

'Not enough?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'Then do you accept cheques?'

'I'm sorry,' the monk said. 'The temple only accepts cash.'

Yue Gu Zai frowned, and he gave the monk one hundred yuan to write Zhen Zhen, Zhen Wu, teacher, Mr and Mrs Zhen's names on the charms.

Yue Gu Zai was unhappy on the way downhill.

'Big brother Yue, do you want to buy the temple?' Tan Yu Er asked.

Yue Gu Zai ignored Tan Yu Er, and he quickly walked back to the restaurant.

'Gu Zai, what's wrong?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I want to demolish the temple,' Yue Gu Zai said.

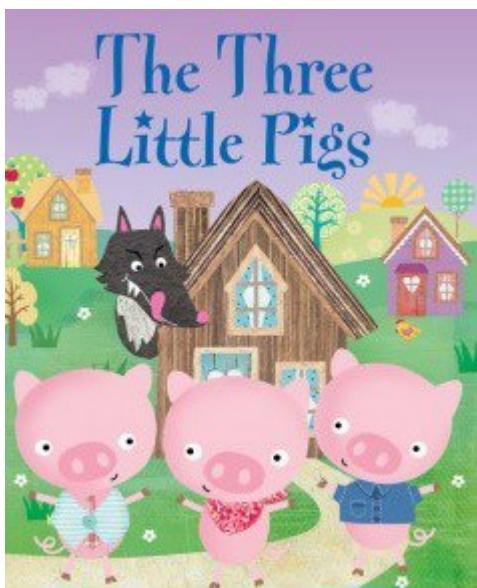
Tan Xu Er explained to Zhen Zhen what happened at the temple, and Zhen Zhen was surprised Yue Gu Zai could be childish too.

Yue Gu Zai took Zhen Zhen back to their hotel room to eat dinner. Then he took Zhen Zhen for a stroll along the beach.

Tan Xu Er stood on the balcony of the hotel room 1007. She was displeased to see how attentive Yue Gu Zai was toward Zhen Zhen.

End of Chapter Fifty-Seven

Related



Chapter Fifty-Eight

The three little pigs.

Since Zhen Zhen was pregnant, Yue Gu Zai told a children's story to their baby before they slept. That night, he told their baby the story about the three little pigs.

'Gu Zai, did your mum tell you bedtime stories when you were a little boy?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'No,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I only remember hearing about Snow White and the seven dwarfs.'

'Why is that?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'My mum said if she's Snow White, she'll eliminate anyone who dared to bully her,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Your mum... is a strong woman,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, do you remember when you saw photos of me, my mum, my dad and Louis?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said. 'But you didn't want to talk about your parents and Louis.'

'The truth is I'm not from this era,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'm from the past. Outside

my family, only Louis and teacher knows.'

Yue Gu Zai explained everything about his life in the past and his family to Zhen Zhen.

'You teleported here?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'If that is true then why haven't humans found evidence of wormholes yet?'

'Zhen Zhen, you look like you want to cut me open and examine me,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Is it true that your mum's jade pearls can be used to teleport?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I did try to use the jade pearls to go back home but they stopped working,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'What about your little brother who has the same father as you but has a different mother?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'What did you do to him? Did you leave him in the palace to become the next emperor? Why don't you want to be emperor?'

'What's good about being the emperor?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'My mum has to stay in the palace if she wants to be with my dad.'

'You inherited your father's good genes,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai turned off the lights.

'Sleep,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen sensed Yue Gu Zai didn't like his father.

In the morning Yue Gu Zai woke up to cook breakfast for Zhen Zhen as usual. But she heard an explosion, and an unfamiliar man and woman stood beside her bed. She nearly bit her tongue off out of shock.

'Didn't those old sages say they would teleport me to see my son?' Ling Jia asked. 'What is this strange place? When I get back, I'm going to behead them.'

The woman wore white clothes. She sounded like a woman in her forties, but she looked like a woman in her twenties.

'What is that?' the man asked.

The man wore white clothes too, and he pointed at the TV.

'Don't...' Ling Jia said.

The man hit the TV and smoke came out of the TV. Zhen Zhen freaked out.

'Old man, give me money to compensate the owner,' Ling Jia said.

'What did I do wrong?' the man asked. 'There were strange people talking inside that thing.'

'It's a TV,' Ling Jia said.

Yue Gu Zai returned to the bedroom, and he was surprised to see his parents.

Ling Jia ran to Yue Gu Zai. She hugged and kissed him.

'Little Gu Zai, mummy missed you,' Ling Jia said. 'Did you miss me?'

Zhen Zhen thought the man looked like he wanted to deal with Yue Gu Zai the way he dealt with the TV if the woman wasn't hugging Yue Gu Zai.

'Mum, you can let go of me,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Mum? Zhen Zhen looked closely at the man and woman. The man did look like Yue Gu Zai, and the woman looked like Yue Gu Zai's mum in the photos.

Yue Gu Zai brought breakfast to Zhen Zhen, and Ling Jia finally noticed Zhen Zhen was sitting on the bed.

'Hello Mama,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mama?' Ling Jia asked and cried. 'Old man, do I look like an old woman? Why did the little girl call me mama?'

'Gu Zai, did I say something wrong?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Zhen Zhen, you didn't say anything wrong,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Mum, don't scare my wife.'

'I'm Ling Jia, little Gu Zai's mum,' Ling Jia said. 'This is my handsome husband, Yue Cheng Tian.'

Ling Jia took out a jade bracelet, a hairpin, earrings and a necklace.

'I didn't bring any gifts for you,' Ling Jia said. 'These small tokens are substitute gifts.'

'Old woman, enough,' Yue Cheng Tian said. 'Why did you carry so many things

with you?’

‘Of course I need to carry things I can sell when I go to a strange place,’ Ling Jia said. ‘If I didn’t carry anything, I wouldn’t mind selling you.’

Yue Cheng Ting was used to Ling Jia bickering with him so he didn’t take her words to heart.

‘Little girl, you don’t have to call mama,’ Ling Jia said. ‘You can call me Ling Jia. Little girl, what’s your name?’

‘I can’t call you by your name,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘But you can call me Zhen Zhen.’

‘Yes you can call my name,’ Ling Jia said.

‘Ling... Jia...’ Zhen Zhen called.

Ling Jia gave a candy to Zhen Zhen.

Yue Cheng Tian pulled Ling Jia to sit with him on the sofa.

Yue Gu Zai was relieved Ling Jia finally sat still. Only Yue Cheng Tian knew how to calm Ling Jia.

‘Mum, why are you and dad here?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘We couldn’t find you after you disappeared that day,’ Ling Jia said. ‘My jade pearl was missing too. I thought you were teleported here. I asked the old sages to find a way for me to see you because I missed you.’

‘Mum, when are you and dad going home?’ Yue Gu Zai asked. ‘Zhen Zhen and I are here for a weekend trip. I wanted Zhen Zhen to get fresh air.’

Ling Jia looked at Zhen Zhen’s round stomach.

‘Little Gu Zai, you’re a father now,’ Ling Jia said.

‘Mum, I’ve been a father for a long time now,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Zhen Zhen and I have a son who is turning seven at the end of this year.’

‘Old man, I’m a grandma,’ Ling Jia said.

Zhen Zhen was disappointed Yue Cheng Tian looked like he didn’t like her.

‘Zhen Zhen, ignore old man,’ Ling Jia said. ‘He and little Gu Zai are two of a

kind. They hide their happiness in their hearts.'

Yue Gu Zai gave one of his outfits for Yue Cheng Tian to wear. Then Yue Gu Zai bought clothes for Ling Jia to wear since she tall and slim and couldn't fit Zhen Zhen's maternity clothes.

In the evening Yue Gu Zai took his family to eat dinner. Yue Cheng Tian ate a couple of mouthfuls and he stopped eating because the food didn't taste bad compared to palace food.

'Old man, don't think about asking me to cook for you later,' Ling Jia said. 'Eat and don't waste food.'

Yue Cheng Tian forced himself to finish his bowl of food even though the food tasted bad.

'Big sister Zhen, you're eating dinner here too,' Tan Xu Er said.

Tan Xu Er came to the restaurant with her two friends.

'Um, what a coincidence,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Big sister Zhen, what should I call your big sister and big brother?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'This little girl has a sweet mouth,' Ling Jia said. 'Why don't you sit down with us?'

Tan Xu Er's friends thought Yue Gu Zai and Yue Cheng Tian shared the same good looks. They happily sat at the same table with the handsome men.

'I only asked the little girl to sit,' Ling Jia said.

Ling Jia didn't like the way Tan Xu Er's friends stared at Yue Cheng Tian.

'We can sit here if we want to,' Tan Xu Er's friends said.

Ling Jia flicked a knife through the legs of the chairs Tan Xu Er's friends were sitting on, and they fell onto the ground.

'Do you two still want to sit at this table?' Ling Jia asked.

'No,' Tan Xu Er's friends said and they ran away from the restaurant.

'Big sister, you're impressive,' Tan Xu Er said. 'Are you big sister Zhen's sister?'

'I'm Gu Zai's mum,' Ling Jia said.

'No way,' Tan Xu Er said.

Ling Jia hated when people didn't believe she was Yue Gu Zai's mum because they didn't look alike.

'I meant big sister looks too young to be big brother Yue's mum,' Tan Xu Er said.

'Little girl, make sure you eat more,' Ling Jia said and smiled.

'Why isn't anyone else eating?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'We're done eating,' Ling Jia said. 'I ordered more dishes for you. You need to eat everything. Don't let the food go to waste.'

Ling Jia kissed Yue Cheng Tian's cheek. He stood and everyone left Tan Xu Er to eat on her own.

'Ma... Ling... mum,' Zhen Zhen called. 'Did you purposely ordered more dishes for Tan Xu Er?'

'Zhen Zhen, what do you mean?' Ling Jia asked innocently.

Zhen Zhen thought Ling Jia liked Tan Xu Er, but Ling Jia bloated Tan Xu Er's stomach with food.

'Zhen Zhen, I believe my son will always be faithful to you,' Ling Jia said. 'But it doesn't mean he won't attract other women's attentions. Sometimes you need to use subtle ways to protect your husband from the women who want to steal your husband. That sweet talker is lucky I only gave her a small lesson. Zhen Zhen, when do you and little Gu Zai want to go home?'

'We planned to leave tomorrow,' Zhen Zhen said. 'But since mum and dad are anxious to return home after being gone for many years, we can all go home now.'

'Zhen Zhen, did you and little Gu Zai pay for a return trip?' Ling Jia asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Then we'll stay here until tomorrow,' Ling Jia said. 'It's not good to waste money.'

End of Chapter Fifty-Eight

Related



Chapter Fifty-Nine

Rival.

Zhen Wu and teacher heard Yue Gu Zai's car and they ran to the door.

Zhen Wu wanted to hug Zhen Zhen. But at the door was an unfamiliar woman. He was curious why teacher looked stunned to see the woman.

'Teacher, how can you stand in front of a little boy and cry like a little boy?' Ling Jia teased.

'You little bad girl,' teacher said. 'Were you waiting for me to die before coming home?'

'I thought you would be dead by now,' Ling Jia said. 'It's not my fault you have a healthy old body. I'm leaving now. I'll come back when it's your funeral.'

'Wash your mouth,' teacher said affectionately.

'Mum, who is this woman?' Zhen Wu asked.

'She's your grandma,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Grandma, I thought you're dead,' Zhen Wu said.

'Little boy, who told you I'm dead?' Ling Jia asked.

Ling Jia squeezed Zhen Wu's cheeks.

'Everyone told me you're dead,' Zhen Wu said.

'Ling Jia, this little boy is only six but he disabled your security system,' teacher said.

'Is this little boy that smart?' Ling Jia asked.

'Of course,' Zhen Wu said.

'Old man, come here and see your grandson,' Ling Jia said.

Ling Jia thought Yue Cheng Tian looked like a country bumpkin touching the technology and furnishings in the mansion like he did at the hotel.

Yue Cheng Tian caught the blue and white moon vase before it fell. If he broke the vase, Ling Jia would make him sleep on the floor.

'Zhen Wu, greet your grandpa,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Grandpa,' Zhen Wu called.

Zhen Wu thought Yue Cheng Tian looked like Yue Gu Zai's older brother. Zhen Wu found it hard to believe Yue Cheng Tian was his grandpa instead of his uncle.

Ling Jia and Yue Gu Zai didn't expect Yue Cheng Tian would rub Zhen Wu's head.

'Good boy,' Yue Cheng Tian said.

'Little boy, your grandpa likes you a lot,' Ling Jia whispered in Zhen Wu's ear.

Zhen Wu didn't sense Yue Cheng Tian liked him.

'Teacher, this is my husband,' Ling Jia said.

'You left home for this man?' teacher asked. 'What's good about him? You should have chosen the kind and gentle Louis over him.'

Yue Gu Zai held Zhen Zhen and Zhen Wu's shoulders and he pulled them a step back from the jealous Yue Cheng Tian.

'Old man, your breath reeks of vinegar,' Ling Jia said. 'Teacher didn't say anything wrong. It doesn't matter if Louis is kind and gentle because I love you.'

'Ling Jia, if Louis knows you're back...' teacher said.

‘Teacher, don’t tell Louis I’m here,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Old man and I will be going back soon.’

‘Little girl, you know how trouble someone,’ teacher said.

Lucky the new employees didn’t meet Ling Jia before otherwise teacher would have trouble hiding Ling Jia’s return from Louis.

‘I’ll ask Cesar to cook your favorite dinner dishes,’ teacher said.

At the dining table, Yue Gu Zai’s gang members joined him and his family for dinner.

‘Boss, can I swap my laborious duties with someone else?’ Cheng Yi asked.

‘Who do you want to swap duties with?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

Cheng Yi didn’t want Huyen Yi’s dangerous duties. He couldn’t swap his duties with Chu Gian because she’s a woman, and the Bai fox was a doctor.

‘Forget I asked anything,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘I want to take work leave to relieve my stress.’

‘Cheng Yi, you just came back from Hawaii, why do you want to take work leave again?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

‘Bai fox, who told you?’ Cheng Yi asked.

‘Ling Jia, these four are Ni Sheng’s most trusted and valuable members,’ teacher said.

‘Little Gu Zai is smarter than you and Louis put together,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Little Gu Zai chose competent people to help with his workload. Unlike you and Louis who wear yourselves out by overworking.’

Yue Gu Zai’s gang members looked curiously at Ling Jia.

‘Let’s eat dinner,’ Ling Jia said.

Teacher and Zhen Wu were happy to eat dinner with everyone, because usually they ate dinner with just the two of them.

‘This is my mum, Ling Jia,’ Yue Gu Zai introduced. ‘The man next to my mum is my dad, Yue Cheng Tian.’

‘Madam Yue, it’s my privilege to finally meet you,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘I admire the security systems you setup for Ni Sheng.’

‘Cheng Yi is a good boy,’ Ling Jia praised.

‘Madam Yue, I’m Chu Gian,’ Chu Gian said. ‘I hope you’ll share your beauty secret with me. Your beautiful face looks younger than my face.’

‘Chu Gian is a good girl,’ Ling Jia praised.

‘Madam Yue, I’m Huyen Di,’ Huyen Di said.

‘Huyen Di is a good boy too,’ Ling Jia praised.

Ling Jia liked Huyen Di’s straight-forwardness.

‘Madam Yue, I’m Bai Yu Tian, Ni Sheng’s principal doctor,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

‘Are you an herbal physician?’ Ling Jia asked.

Bai Yu Tian looked confusedly at Ling Jia. He was a doctor in the modern era, not an herbal physician.

‘Mum, Bai Yu Tian is one of the best doctors in the modern era,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Little Gu Zai, if he’s not an herbal physician then why are there faint scars all over your body?’ Ling Jia asked.

Ling Jia’s heart ached to see the faint scars on Yue Gu Zai’s body.

Bai Yu Tian thought it was pointless to say he was a surgeon not a plastic surgeon.

After a restful night sleep, Ling Jia secretly woke up Zhen Wu and she snuck him into a black car.

‘Grandma, why are you taking me out in secret?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘Little boy, do you want to give my identity away?’ Ling Jia asked. ‘Don’t call me grandma when we’re outside. Think about it, would your dad let me take you out if I asked for his permission?’

‘You’re right,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Dad is overprotective. He’ll be angry when he finds out I’m not at home.’

'Little boy, don't worry,' Ling Jia said. 'Your dad is my son. I won't let him ground you.'

Zhen Wu believed Ling Jia. Last night, they played family games together after dinner. Ling Jia won most of the games and she flicked Yue Cheng Tian and Yue Gu Zai's face black and blue.

'Grandma, why did you take me to dad's work building?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Little boy if you call me grandma again, I'll sell you,' Ling Jia said. 'Call me aunty. I want to see if I can crack open the treasure vault.'

'Grandma, I want to see the treasure vault with you too,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu chased after Ling Jia, and he accidentally bumped into a fierce man.

'Do you dare to hit my imperial grandson?' Ling Jia asked coldly.

Zhen Wu didn't understand why Ling Jia referred to him as her imperial grandson all last night too. Did he look like a little prince?

'Little girl, don't interfere in my business,' Mr Biao said.

Mr Biao thought Ling Jia was lying to protect Zhen Wu. Ling Jia was too young to be Zhen Wu's grandma.

'I fight for justice,' Ling Jia said.

'Kick this little girl and little boy outside,' Mr Biao said to a guard.

'Yes, Mr Biao,' a guard said.

Ling Jia hated having a person point a finger at her face. She twisted the man's arm behind his back, and pressed his vital acupuncture points to immobilize him.

'Mr Biao have I told you I hate someone pointing a finger at my face the most?' Ling Jia asked.

'No... no...' Mr Biao said.

'Wow,' Zhen Wu said. 'How did you restrain Mr Biao?'

Ling Jia used Mr Biao's body to show Zhen Wu how to restrain another person.

'Let go of Mr Biao,' the guard said. 'He's the head of Xu Gai.'

'Who is Xu Gai?' Ling Jia asked.

‘Grandma, today dad has a meeting with Xu Gai’s members,’ Zhen Wu explained.

‘Yikes,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Little boy, we better run before your dad finds out we’re here.’

Ling Jia let go of Mr Biao’s arm. She held Zhen Zhen’s hand and they ran away.

Unfortunately, Ling Jia and Zhen Zhen were surrounded by guards when they were near the meeting room.

‘Little girl, did you think you can run away?’ Mr Biao asked.

‘Hit me if you dare,’ Ling Jia said.

Yue Gu Zai walked out of the meeting room to see the commotion.

‘Dad,’ Zhen Wu called.

Mr Biao’s face whitened. He foolishly threatened to hit Yue Gu Zai’s son.

The Xu Gai’s members left the meeting room to negotiate a contract with Ni Sheng on a less tensed day.

On the way home, Ling Jia tried to placate Yue Gu Zai.

‘Little Gu Zai, I promise today is a once off,’ Ling Jia said. ‘This situation won’t happen again. Zhen Wu, isn’t that right?’

‘Yes,’ Zhen Wu said.

Yue Gu Zai continued to frown.

‘Little Gu Zai is big now,’ Ling Jia said and cried. ‘He doesn’t love or need his mum anymore. I understand, I’ll leave.’

‘Mum, you can stop the crying act,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘It only works on dad.’

‘Do you promise not to be angry if I stop crying?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Mum, if you don’t want dad to kill me then stop crying,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘If your dad dares to hit you then I’ll make him sleep on the floor,’ Ling Jia said.

When Yue Gu Zai, Ling Jia and Zhen Wu walked into the living room, Zhen Zhen ran to Yue Gu Zai’s side while Ling Jia was shocked to see Louis sitting on the sofa.

'Gu Zai, what took you so long to come home?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai rubbed Zhen Zhen's stomach.

'Zhen Zhen, you can experiment in the lab if you're feeling restless,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Louis stood, he walked to Ling Jia and he hugged her. He dreamt of seeing her again for many years.

'Xiao Jia,' Louis called.

Yue Cheng Tian would have killed Louis if he didn't know how much Ling Jia loved him. He also knew if he killed any of Ling Jia's friends, she would leave him.

'How long has it been since we saw each other?' Louis asked.

'Gu Zai, doesn't your dad mind Louis hugging your mum?' Zhen Zhen whispered in Yue Gu Zai's ear.

Zhen Zhen thought Yue Cheng Tian looked like he wanted to kill Louis.

'Dad minds,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'What can he do? There are many men who wants to be with mum. But mum chose to be with dad because she loves dad.'

'Gu Zai, if you were in your dad's shoes and you saw another man hugging me, would you do nothing too?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen wouldn't be gracious like Yue Cheng Tian if another woman hugged Yue Gu Zai in front of her.

'I wouldn't let another man hug you,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai, I pity your dad,' Zhen Zhen said.

End of Chapter Fifty-Nine

Related



Chapter Sixty

Grandma.

'Xiao Jia, if I didn't come visit Gu Zai, would you have left without seeing me?' Louis asked.

'What's the point of seeing you when I'll be leaving soon?' Ling Jia asked.

Upstairs, Zhen Zhen looked out the bedroom window into the garden. She saw Ling Jia and Louis sitting together in the garden under the moonlight.

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen from behind.

‘Gu Zai, I pity Louis too,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘He loves your mum. But he can’t change the reality, and he can’t see your mum whenever he misses her. On the rare days he gets to see your mum, he has to look at her being happy with your dad.’

‘Zhen Zhen, let them deal with their own lives,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘It’s late, let’s sleep.’

Zhen Zhen saw Ling Jia left Louis alone in the garden before she walked to the bed.

The next day, Ling Jia took Zhen Zhen on a baby shopping trip. Although Yue Gu Zai could buy all the children’s shops for his and Zhen Zhen’s baby, Ling Jia wanted to choose clothes for her second grandchild.

Zhen Zhen didn’t need to buy designer clothes for the baby. She was happy to buy comfortable clothes for the baby.

Ling Jia didn’t like wasting money, but she wanted the best clothes for her grandchild. She bought all the baby clothes in a children’s clothing shop that sold designer baby clothes, and she became the shop assistants’ favorite customer of the day.

‘I want to buy two cute baby outfits,’ Lam Zheng said.

‘Miss, I’m sorry,’ the shop assistant said. ‘Today this lady bought all the baby clothes in the shop. Miss, you can come back another day to buy baby clothes.’

Lam Zheng thought the shop assistant meant Zhen Zhen bought all the baby clothes.

‘Oh it’s you,’ Lam Zheng said. ‘I’ll pay you double if you give me two of the baby outfits you bought.’

‘Zhen Zhen, is she your friend?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Mum, this is Lam Zheng,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘She’s an old classmate. The man next to her is Yang Cheng.’

If Lam Zheng and Yang Cheng weren’t Zhen Zhen’s friends, Ling Jia didn’t want to give away her grandchild’s baby clothes.

‘Are the baby clothes wrapped up?’ Ling Jia asked the shop assistant.

'Yes,' the shop assistant said.

'Deliver the baby clothes to this address,' Ling Jia said.

'Hey, I said give me two of the baby outfits you bought,' Lam Zheng said.

'Lam Zheng, We can go somewhere else to buy baby clothes,' Yang Cheng said.

'No, big sister wore clothes from here since she was a little girl,' Lam Zheng said.

Lam Zheng didn't want to make life easy for the vixen Zhen Zhen.

'Are you deaf?' Lam Zheng asked. 'Didn't you hear me tell you to give me two baby outfits?'

'I'm sorry,' Ling Jia said. 'I'm not deaf. I can hear humans talking clearly. But I can't understand a crazy dog's bark.'

'Did you call me a crazy dog?' Lam Zheng asked.

'Mum, watch out,' Zhen Zhen warned.

Ling Jia hit Lam Zheng's raised arm before Lam Zheng could hit her.

'Zhen Zhen, do you think I need a rabies vaccine after touching a crazy dog?' Ling Jia asked.

'Mum, don't worry,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Looks like this crazy dog has no teeth and only knows how to bark.'

'Lam Zheng, let them go,' Yang Cheng said.

'No,' Lam Zheng said. 'If those two have guts then they'll stay here and fight.'

Lam Zheng raised her arm again to hit Ling Jia. Ling Jia knocked Lam Zheng's phone out of her hand.

'You!' Lam Zheng said. 'Do you know who my dad is? He's the CEO of Lam's company. He'll make you pay for hitting me.'

'Zhen Zhen, I haven't heard of Lam's company,' Ling Jia said. 'It can't be that big if Yue's company is the biggest company in Asia.'

'Mum, you're right,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Yue's company has headquarters all over Asia.'

'Zhen Zheng, we don't need to be angry over a crazy dog,' Ling Jia said. 'Let's go home.'

'You two dare run away after hitting me?' Lam Zheng asked. 'Lam's company is negotiating a business contract with Yue's company. Now you two know how big Lam's company is.'

Ling Jia smiled at Lam Zheng and she called Louis.

'Louis, is it true Lam's company wants to collaborate with Yue's company?' Ling Jia asked.

On Louis' end of the phone, Yue Cheng Tian stared at Louis' phone. Yue Cheng Tian was curious why Ling Jia's voice was coming out of Louis' phone.

'Lam's company?' Louis asked. 'I don't know. I left Wo Ta Tian in charge while I'm on work leave.'

'Um, Louis tell Wo Ta Tian to say to Mr Lam not to let his daughter run around outside barking at Gu Zai's wife unless Mr Lam wants Lam's company to go bust.'

'Xiao Jia, did you meet a hateful person?' Louis asked.

'Not a person,' Ling Jia said. 'Only a hateful crazy dog.'

Ling Jia held Zhen Zhen's hand and they left a frightened Lam Ting standing frozen in the shop.

In the meeting room at Yue's company, Lam Li Zhang was waiting for Wo Ta Tian to sign on behalf of Louis to authorize the business contract Lam Li Zhang worked hard to get with Yue's company.

After Wo Ta Tian received a call from Louis, he smiled apologetically at Lam Li Zhang.

'Mr Lam, I'm sorry to say that Yue's company won't be settling this contract today,' Wo Ta Tian said.

'Mr Wo, why is the settlement day suddenly changed?' Lam Li Zheng asked.

'Mr Lam, your daughter offended Louis's friend and Yue Gu Zai's wife,' Wo Ta Tian said. 'You should go home and discuss it with your daughter.'

Lam Li Zhang left Yue's company with an unsigned contract. He was angry at Lam Zheng for ruining Lam's company business deal with Yue's company. He called Yang Cheng's phone to talk to Lam Zheng.

'Hello,' Yang Cheng greeted.

'Give the phone to Lam Zheng,' Lam Li Zhang said.

'Hello,' Lam Zheng greeted.

'You bitch,' Lam Li Zhang cursed. 'Do you know what you've done? Yue's company refused to sign the business contract with Lam's company because of you. Tonight you better explain what you did.'

Lam Zheng hung up the phone. She didn't think she did anything wrong. Wo Ta Tian was sick of Lam Zheng's bad behaviour, he turned around and walked away from Lam Zheng.

'Ta Tian, wait for me,' Lam Zheng said.

When Ling Jia and Zhen Zhen arrived home, Zhen Zhen received a phone call from Zhen Wu's teacher.

'Hello, is this Zhen Wu's mum?' Miss Chen asked.

'Yes, I'm Zhen Wu's mum,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Miss Zhen, you need to come to the school,' Miss Chen said. 'Zhen Wu was involved in an incident at school.'

'What happened?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Zhen Wu fought with his classmate,' Miss Chen said.

'I'll be there soon,' Zhen Zhen said and hung up the phone.

'Zhen Zhen, what happened?' Ling Jia asked.

'Zhen Wu fought with his classmate,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Um, Zhen Zhen calm down,' Ling Jia said. 'You're pregnant. Don't worry, children fighting with each other is common.'

'Mum, Zhen Wu is a good boy,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He wouldn't hurt anyone.'

'Um, there's no rush,' Ling Jia said. 'I'll take you to Zhen Wu's school safely.'

Ling Jia took Zhen Zhen to Zhen Wu's school. Zhen Wu was playing on his computer in the school office. There was a small bruise on the corner of his lips and a small bruise on his arm.

Next to Zhen Wu was the mother of a boy taller than Zhen Wu. Behind them were the mother's two guards. The mother wore designer clothes, and the taller boy sat on his mother's lap. There were bruises all over the taller boy's face.

Zhen Zhen ran to Zhen Wu and she checked Zhen Wu's body for injuries.

'Zhen Wu, are you in pain?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Wu shook his head.

'Miss Chen, Zhen Wu's mum is here,' Sun Li Li said. 'You can ask his mum why she taught Zhen Wu to hit other people. Look at what Zhen Wu did to Xu Xiao Fei's face.'

Sun Li Li heard Zhen Zhen was a single mum. She wasn't surprised Zhen Zhen didn't know how to teach good behavior to Zhen Wu.

'Miss Chen, what happened?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Xiao Fei wanted to play with the little girl Tiao Yuan,' Miss Chen said. 'Tiao Yuan wanted to play with Zhen Wu. Zhen Wu only wanted to play on his computer. Xiao Fei was upset Zhen Wu didn't pay attention to Tiao Yuan when she was talking then Zhen Wu hit Xiao Fei.'

'Did you hear Miss Chen?' Sun Li Li asked. 'It was your son who hit my son first. Hitting your classmates is wrong.'

Zhen Zhen ignored Sun Li Li.

'Zhen Wu, did you hit Xiao Fei first?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Wu nodded his head.

'Xiao Fei deleted a program I spent two weeks coding,' Zhen Wu said.

'Zhen Wu, it's wrong to hit your classmate,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mum, I'm sorry,' Zhen Wu said. 'I know it was wrong of me to hit Xiao Fei.'

'Miss Sun, I'm sorry Zhen Wu hit Xiao Fei,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Zhen Wu admitted he was wrong. I'll pay for Xiao Fei's medicine.'

‘Do you know how precious Xiao Fei is?’ Sun Li Li asked. ‘He’s the Xu Household’s heir. What happens if he was beaten to the point of being an invalid? Do you think paying for medicine and saying sorry is enough to compensate Xiao Fei’s bruised face?’

Ling Jia thought Sun Li Li was an eyesore. Ling Jia thought Xu Xiao Fei provoked Zhen Wu first. Zhen Wu wouldn’t have hit Xu Xiao Fei if Xu Xiao Fei didn’t try to break Zhen Wu’s computer.

Ling Jia gently rubbed the small bruise on the corner of Zhen Wu’s lips.

‘Little boy, why did you let another person hit you?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Grandma, Xiao Fei’s face has more bruises than my face,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Um,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Next time if someone provokes you first, you can hit them to the point they become an invalid. Your grandma will take responsibility.’

‘Grandma, you’ll be going home soon,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘How can you take responsibility if you’re gone?’

‘You have nothing to fear,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Even if I’m gone, you have your dad. Your dad wouldn’t let anyone hurt you. You have teacher, Louis, uncle Bai, Cheng and Huyen and aunty Chu too.’

‘Mum, Zhen Wu is still young,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘We shouldn’t teach Zhen Wu bad behavior even if we’re only joking.’

‘What are you three whispering about?’ Sun Li Li asked. ‘How are you going to compensate my son?’

‘Miss Sun, I’m sorry,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘What compensation do you want?’

‘I don’t want money,’ Sun Li Li said. ‘You should let my son hit your son’s face like how your son hit my son’s face.’

‘Miss Sun, it’s wrong to teach children to use fists to clear misunderstandings between them,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Zhen Wu was wrong to hit Xiao Fei, and Xiao Fei was wrong to wreck Zhen Wu’s computer.’

‘Wrong to use fists?’ Sun Li Li asked.

Miss Chen panicked when the two guards behind Sun Li Li walked up to Zhen

Wu.

Zhen Zhen protected Zhen Wu in her arms.

'Ah!' the two guards cried out.

Ling Jia had kicked the two guards onto the floor.

End of Chapter Sixty

Related

part 1



Chapter Sixty-One (Part 1)

Brothers.

The two guards got up to hit Zhen Wu, and Xu Xiao Fei jumped off Sun Li Li's lap to hit Zhen Wu too. Ling Jia kicked the two guards, they fell on top of Xu Xiao Fei and Xu Xiao Fei fell unconscious.

Miss Chen called an ambulance to the school to take Xu Xiao Fei to the hospital, and Zhen Zhen called Bai Yu Tian to go to the hospital to help examine Xu Xiao Fei.

Half an hour later at the hospital, Bai Yu Tian informed about Xu Xiao Fei's condition to Su Li Li and Xu Ha.

'Doctor Bai, will my son wake up?' Su Li Li asked.

'There is a chance if the patient wakes up, the patient will be in a vegetable state for life,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Su Li Li cried on Xu Ha's shoulder.

'Husband... our son,' Su Li Li said.

'Doctor Bai, save our son,' Xu Ha pleaded.

'To keep the patient alive, it'll cost three thousand yuan a day because the patient can't breathe on their own,' Bai Yu Tian said.

A while later, Yue Gu Zai arrived at the hospital to drive Zhen Zhen, Zhen Wu and Ling Jia home.

When Ling Jia walked into the living room, Louis was babysitting Yue Cheng Tian while Yue Cheng Tian was watching Tom and Jerry.

An explosion was heard, and Yue Dui Yi appeared in the living room.

‘Dui Yi, what are you doing here?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Imperial mother,’ Yue Dui Yi greeted.

Yue Dui Yi hugged Ling Jia.

Zhen Zhen was startled a grown man was attached to Ling Jia like a child.

‘Dui Yi, why aren’t you in the palace?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Imperial mother, don’t worry,’ Yue Dui Yi said. ‘The palace won’t miss me if I’m gone for several days. Minister Tao and Minister Yu agreed to take care of my imperial duties while I’m away from the palace.’

‘Did old man Tao Fang and old man Yu Cheng Tu really volunteer to help you?’ Ling Jia asked.

Ling Jia knew Tao Fang and Yu Cheng Tu had ulterior motives to help Yue Dui Yi. They would ask her to visit them in return for doing a favor for Yue Dui Yi.

‘Um, it’ll give the two old men something to do,’ Ling Jia said. ‘They’ve been living off you for a long time.’

Yue Cheng Tian thought living in the modern era with Ling Jia was a good option. Since he abdicated the throne to Yue Dui Yi, there was no reason for him and Ling Jia to return to the past. In the past, he had to deal with Tao Fang and Yu Cheng Tu who wanted to steal Ling Jia away from him. Whereas in the modern era, he only had to deal with one pesky Louis who didn’t want to leave Ling Jia’s side. He thought handling one man was easier than handling two men.

Yue Dui Yi let go of Ling Jia. He ran to Yue Gu Zai and he hugged Yue Gu Zai.

‘Imperial brother Gu Zai, I finally found you,’ Yue Dui Yi said.

‘Dui Yi?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai remembered the little boy Yue Dui Yi who followed him everywhere

around the palace many years ago.

‘Imperial brother Gu Zai, I’m happy you remembered my name,’ Yue Dui Yi said.

Yue Gu Zai thought Yue Dui Yi’s personality was like Yue Dui Yi’s mother, Consort Lam more than their father, Yue Cheng Tian. He suppressed his urge to squeeze Yue Dui Yi’s cheeks.

‘Dui Yi, while you’re here, you can’t call me imperial brother,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Why?’ Yue Dui Yi asked. ‘You are my imperial brother Gu Zai.’

‘Dui Yi, you can call my name or anything you like but not imperial brother,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I left the palace many years ago.’

Zhen Zhen’s maternal side pitied Yue Dui Yi. Yue Gu Zai not letting Yue Dui Yi acknowledge they were brothers made Yue Dui Yi sad.

‘Imperial brother Gu Zai, have you forgotten you abandoned me in the palace?’ Yue Dui Yi asked. ‘Imperial brother Gu Zai, you are the one who is meant to be emperor, not me. But you ran away and left me to rule the kingdom. I didn’t resent you because I wanted you to live a happy life. Since you left, I couldn’t see imperial mother anymore. I was forced to read imperial reports every day to the point I couldn’t sleep at night. But I’m happy as long as imperial brother Gu Zai is happy. If imperial brother Gu Zai doesn’t want to see me then I’ll go back to the palace.’

Yue Dui Yi cried, and he turned around to leave.

‘Wait,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Dui Yi turned around, he smiled at Yue Gu Zai and hugged Yue Gu Zai.

‘I knew imperial brother Gu Zai didn’t want me to leave,’ Yue Di Yi said. ‘Imperial brother Gu Zai treats me the best and I love imperial brother Gu Zai the most.’

Later that night, Zhen Zhen showered and prepared for bed. She laid on the bed and thought about how Ling Jia and Yue Cheng Tian doted on Yue Dui Yi more than Yue Gu Zai.

‘Zhen Zhen, what are you thinking about?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Gu Zai, I’m thinking about if your mum actually gave birth to you,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Your mum raised you and your little brother. But your mum dotes on your little brother more even though she isn’t your little brother’s biological mum. I think you grew up into a cold man because your little brother received most of your mum’s love.’

‘Zhen Zhen, do you think I’m abnormally cold and my little brother’s behavior is normal?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Gu Zai, it’s normal for you and your little brother to be opposites by the opposite ways your mum raised you and your little brother,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Let’s sleep,’ Yue Gu Zai said

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen to sleep.

Several days later, Yue Dui Yi followed Yue Gu Zai everywhere. Sometimes Yue Gu Zai would chase Yue Dui Yi away, but Yue Dui Yi persisted to follow Yue Gu Zai everywhere. Zhen Zhen knew if Yue Gu Zai didn’t love Yue Dui Yi then Yue Gu Zai would have turned Yue Dui Yi into shark bait since the first day Yue Dui Yi arrived in the modern era.

End of Chapter Sixty-One (Part 1)

Related

part 2



Chapter Sixty-One (Part 2 of 2)

Tom and Jerry.

Zhen Zhen wanted to walk to the hospital for an obstetrician's appointment. Yue Gu Zai was at work. He asked Yue Dui Yi to take Zhen Zhen to the hospital for him.

Since Yue Cheng Tian and Yue Dui Yi arrived in the modern era, Yue Cheng Tian broke a TV and a fridge. Yue Dui Yi didn't break anything. It wasn't because Yue Dui Yi wasn't curious about his new surroundings, it was because his attention was focused on Yue Gu Zai. So when Yue Dui Yi took Zhen Zhen to the hospital, he touched everything at the hospital, especially the confectionary on the counter at the hospital cafe.

'Imperial sister Zhen Zhen, I want to eat that,' Yue Dui Yi said.

Yue Dui Yi pointed at a jar of cookies. He looked at Zhen Zhen with puppy eyes similar to how Ling Jia would look at Yue Cheng Tian if Ling Jia wanted something.

‘Dui Yi, you’ll get a stomach ache if you eat cookies before dinner,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Young man, if you want a cookie, you can take one for free,’ the cafe owner said.

‘Thank you,’ Yue Dui Yi said and smiled at the cafe owner.

‘Dui Yi, you can’t accept the cookie,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Dui Yi, tomorrow I’ll buy you cookies.’

‘Imperial sister Zhen Zhen is stingier than imperial mother,’ Yue Dui Yi said.

In that same moment Ling Jia sneezed while sightseeing on a Hawaiian island with Yue Cheng Tian and Louis.

‘Old man, someone must be saying something bad about me,’ Ling Jia said.

‘Let’s go home,’ Yue Cheng Tian said.

Tourists and locals were staring at Ling Jia, Yue Cheng Tian didn’t want another Louis, Tao Fang or Yu Cheng Tu to steal his Ling Jia away from him.

What Yue Cheng Tian didn’t know was the tourists and locals were staring at Ling Jia was because they didn’t understand why such a plain woman like Ling Jia were loved by handsome men like Yue Cheng Tian and Louis.

At the hospital, the obstetrician informed Zhen Zhen the baby was healthy. Afterward Zhen Zhen walked with Yue Dui Yi in the direction of the parking lot, but their path was obstructed by Tan Xu Er.

‘Big sister Zhen Zhen,’ Tan Xu Er greeted.

Tan Xu Er didn’t see Yue Gu Zai with Zhen Zhen.

‘My little brother-in-law,’ Zhen Zhen said politely.

‘Hello, I’m Tan Xu Er,’ Tan Xu Er said.

Yue Dui Yi didn’t shake Tan Xu Er’s offered hand. His attention was focused on the biscuits he could see through the cafe window.

'Big sister Zhen Zhen, I want to ask your advice about an experiment I'm working on,' Tan Xu Er said.

'I have a lab at home,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You can show me your experiment in my lab.'

'Thank you big sister Zhen Zhen,' Tan Xu Er said.

Zhen Zhen knew Yue Dui Yi wouldn't leave the hospital unless she bought him cookies.

'Dui Yi, I'll buy cookies for you on one condition,' Zhen Zhen said. 'You can't eat the cookies until tomorrow. If you eat them today, I'll tell Gu Zai.'

Yue Dui Yi smiled and hugged Zhen Zhen. Zhen Zhen bought the cookies for Yue Dui Yi and Tan Xu Er followed them to the parking lot.

At the parking lot, Xu Ha hired men to kidnap Zhen Zhen.

Armed men held guns at Zhen Zhen, Yue Dui Yi and Tan Xu Er.

'Who are you people?' Tan Xu Er asked. 'What do you want?'

'Imperial sister Zhen Zhen, do they want to kidnap us?' Yue Dui Yi asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Why do you look happy about being kidnapped?'

Zhen Zhen touched her blue diamond earrings to send an emergency signal to Yue Gu Zai.

'Imperial sister Zhen Zhen, if we're kidnapped, imperial brother Gu Zai will come rescue us and we'll get to see him.'

Zhen Zhen didn't doubt Yue Dui Yi truly loved his big brother Yue Gu Zai.

'Get in the car,' one of the men said.

The men drove Zhen Zhen, Yue Dui Yi and Tan Xu Er to one of Xu Ha's apartments.

Xu Ha was drinking a glass of wine on a sofa in the living room. It was Zhen Zhen's fault Xu Xiao Fei was in a coma. If Xu Xiao Fei couldn't wake up then he wanted Zhen Zhen to feel his and Sun Li Li's pain, he wanted to kill Zhen Zhen's baby.

Tan Xu Er pushed Zhen Zhen in front of her. Luckily Yue Dui Yi had quick reflexes and he supported Zhen Zhen.

Xu Ha threw a vase at Zhen Zhen, but Yue Dui Yi shielded Zhen Zhen. The vase hit Yue Dui Yi's back and broke into pieces onto the floor.

'Imperial sister Zhen Zhen, are you OK?' Yue Dui Yi asked.

Yue Dui Yi loved having fun outside the palace, but he wouldn't allow anyone to hurt Yue Gu Zai's family.

'Dui Yi, watch out,' Zhen Zhen warned.

Yue Dui Yi defeated seven armed men with his bare hands.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, you hurt my son,' Xu Ha said. 'Now I'm returning the favor by killing your baby.'

'Xu Ha, I'm a parent too,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I understand your pain. What happened to Xiao Fei is my fault. Let me help save Xiao Fei.'

'If Doctor Bai can't save my son, who else can save my son?' Xu Ha asked.

'My husband's mum, Doctor Ling,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai confided in Zhen Zhen that Ling Jia's medical knowledge and surgical skills surpassed Bai Yu Tian's knowledge and skills. The problem was Zhen Zhen didn't know how to convince Ling Jia to save someone who wanted to hurt Zhen Wu.

'Doctor Ling the renowned reclusive neurosurgeon?' Xu Ha asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Why would she save my son when she is the person who put my son in hospital?' Xu Ha asked.

'Your son wouldn't have been injured if your son didn't want to hurt my son,' Zhen Zhen said. 'As a parent, I want to help save your son. I'll find a way to get mum to save your son.'

Xu Ha didn't think Zhen Zhen looked like she was lying.

'Why should I believe you?' Xu Ha asked.

Yue Gu Zai broke down the front door.

‘You don’t have to believe my wife,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai wanted to kill Xu Ha for kidnapping Zhen Zhen and Yue Dui Yi and threatening to kill his and Zhen Zhen’s baby.

‘Imperial brother...’ Yue Dui Yi said.

Yue Dui Yi closed his mouth after Yue Gu Zai gave him a warning look.

‘Mr Xu, Yue Gu Zai is my husband,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘He’s the leader of Ni Sheng. You’ve heard about Ni Sheng’s golden rule, any member of Ni Sheng who go back on their word will be shark bait. If I don’t do everything I can to save your son then you can throw me and my husband into the ocean.’

‘Alright,’ Xu Ha said. ‘I’ll believe you.’

Xu Ha knew his only choice was to believe Zhen Zhen. Since he dared to kidnap Yue Gu Zai’s wife, he knew he wouldn’t live unless he cooperated with Zhen Zhen. As long as there was a chance to save his son, he would agree to anything.

‘Zhen Zhen, let’s go home,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai ignored Xu Ha and Tan Xu Er, he took Zhen Zhen and Yue Dui Yi home.

In the morning, Ling Jia, Yue Cheng Tian and Louis flew home from Hawaii on a private plane.

‘Gu Zai, what are your mum’s interests?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Zhen Zhen, why do you want to help someone who has no relation to us?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Gu Zai, think about it,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘If the situation was reversed and it was our son who is lying on the hospital bed, wouldn’t you want someone to save our son? Think of asking your mum to save Xiao Fei’s life as doing a good deed for our baby.’

‘Zhen Zhen if this is what you want, I’ll help you,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Mum isn’t interested in reason. If you suck up to her, she’ll consider saving the boy.’

Ling Jia was in a bad mood when she got home. She didn’t have a good time on

the island, because the tourists and locals on the Hawaiian island looked at her like she was an evil witch who cast a spell on Yue Cheng Tian and Louis.

‘Mum, today you look beautiful,’ Zhen Zhen praised.

Yue Gu Zai coughed.

‘I meant, mum looks beautiful every day but you look exceptionally beautiful today,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Mum, I admire your sense of justice that is deeper than the ocean.’

‘My good daughter-in-law,’ Ling Jia said. ‘My husband tells me I’m a beautiful heroine every day. Tell me something I don’t know.’

‘Mum, you have too many good traits for me to list in my lifetime,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘You’re the bright sunlight over the horizon, you’re the family’s strongest pillar and my admiration for you won’t falter.’

Yue Gu Zai coughed, and Zhen Zhen understood she sucked up to Ling Jia too much.

‘Continue,’ Ling Jia said.

Ling Jia didn’t want Yue Cheng Tian to get big headed because some strangers looked his way. She wanted him to know how blessed he was to marry her.

‘Mum, you’re my light I want to follow for the rest of my life,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Are you done?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Yes,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Alright,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Tell me what you want.’

‘Mum, I want you perform a surgery for Xu Ha’s son,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Who?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Xiao Fei, the little boy you accidentally kicked to the floor at Zhen Wu’s school,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Zhen Zhen, are you sure you want me to save the boy?’ Ling Jia asked coldly.

‘Yes,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Alright,’ Ling Jia said. ‘I’ll save the boy.’

Zhen Zhen looked at Yue Gu Zai for confirmation, and he nodded his head.

The following day, Ling Jia performed a brain surgery on Xu Xiao Fei in the hospital operating room. The surgery was a success, Xu Xiao Fei regained consciousness and all his body functions.

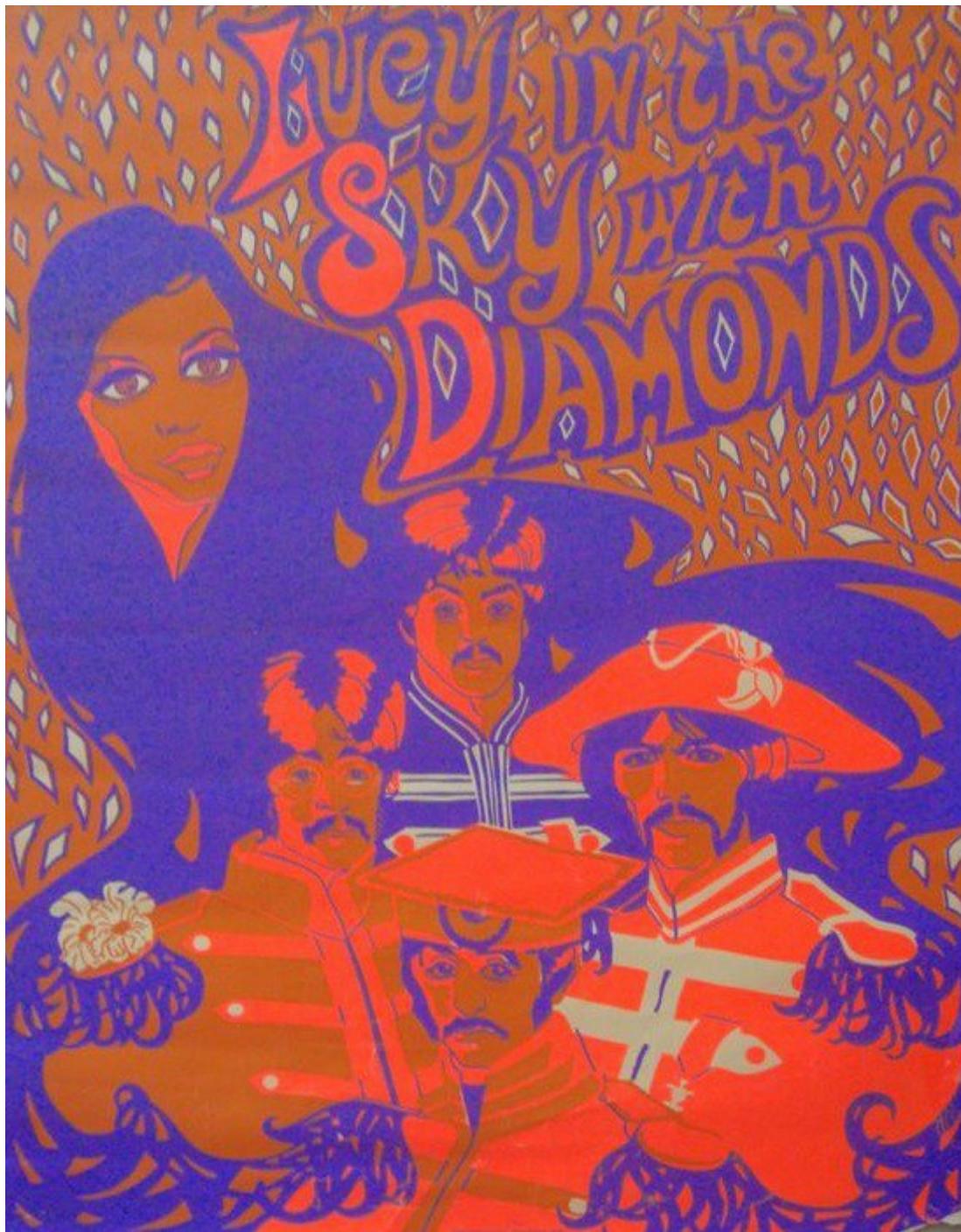
Ling Jia was unhappy about saving Xu Xiao Fei's life because Xu Xiao Fei wanted to hurt Zhen Wu. But Yue Gu Zai agreed to let Ling Jia join him and Zhen Zhen on a trip to Italy to improve Ling Jia' mood.

Yue Dui Yi wanted to follow Yue Gu Zai everywhere. Yue Gu Zai used Yue Dui Yi's weakness to stop Yue Dui Yi from following Yue Gu Zai everywhere, Yue Gu Zai bought him a Tom and Jerry DVD boxset.

End of Chapter Sixty-One (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1



Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 1)

Lucy.

Yue Gu Zai's business trip to Italy turned into a family vacation. He didn't want to leave a pregnant Zhen Zhen at home. He agreed to let Ling Jia to join him and Zhen Zhen to fly to Italy. Yue Cheng Tian insisted on going with Ling Jia so Yue Dui Yi tagged along to Italy too. Louis' home was in Italy, but everyone knew Louis wanted to fly home because Ling Jia was flying to Italy. Even Zhen Wu wanted to visit Italy, and that was how Yue Gu Zai's business trip turned into a

family vacation.

‘Imperial mother, what is this bird?’ Yue Dui Yi asked.

‘Dui Yi this is a plane,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Dui Yi, don’t break anything on the plane.’

Ling Jia was scared of her two country bumpkins. Yue Cheng Tian wasn’t as bad as Yue Dui Yi. Yue Cheng Tian only broke a TV and a fridge. Yue Dui Yi broke cameras and Chu Gian’s sports car. Ling Jia had to bribe Chu Gian with vintage bracelet that was more valuable than Chu Gian’s sports car. Ling Jia’s frugal heart broke to see the herbal physician Bai Yu Tian put her precious vintage bracelet on Chu Gian’s wrist.

‘Imperial mother, it’s only a bracelet,’ Yue Dui Yi said. ‘When we get back, I’ll give imperial mother all the bracelets in the palace.’

‘Du Yi, at this rate you’ll waste all the treasure your imperial father saved up in the palace,’ Ling Jia said.

‘Imperial mother, I don’t care if all the treasure in the palace are gone,’ Yue Dui Yi said. ‘If that happens I don’t need to be emperor anymore, and I can see the world with imperial mother.’

Ling Jia decided when she got back to the palace, she was going to write a sign outside the palace treasure room, ‘Emperor Yue Dui Yi is forbidden to enter this room.’

‘Uncle Dui Yi, you can’t act like a country bumpkin after we get off the plane,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Zhen Wu, how can you say that to your uncle?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Mum, grandma calls uncle Dui Yi a country bumpkin,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Zhen Wu, I’m Dui Yi’s imperial mother,’ Ling Jia said. ‘Only I can call Dui Yi a country bumpkin.’

‘Grandma, you’re supposed to set a good example for your grandson,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Who says?’ Ling Jia asked.

‘Grandpa taught me,’ Zhen Wu said.

Ling Jia didn't want to fight with Yue Cheng Tian so she let the matter slide.

Cheng Yi read the entry rules of the international IT competition to Zhen Wu.

'Imperial mother, what is a computer?' Yue Dui Yi asked.

Ling Jia gave an ice-cream cone to Yue Dui Yi.

'Dui Yi, eat the ice-cream,' Ling Jia said. 'You can't eat a computer.'

'Young master, you're eligible to enter the competition,' Cheng Yi said.

'Mum, can I enter the competition?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Zhen Wu, if you want to enter the competition then you can,' Zhen Zhen said.
'It'll be a good experience for you.'

Through Cheng Yi's connections, Zhen Wu was admitted into the prestigious international IT competition.

On the first day of the competition, Zhen Wu wore a cute white T-shirt and jeans outfit to the competition venue. It made everyone want to squeeze and kiss his cheeks.

Zhen Wu's family and Louis were at the venue to support Zhen Wu. Having strangers stare at Zhen Wu, his family and Louis made Zhen Wu nervous.

'Mum,' Zhen Wu called.

'Zhen Wu, do your best,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Your dad and I and everyone else are here to support you no matter if you win or lose.'

Zhen Zhen understood Zhen Wu felt nervous entering a public competition for the first time.

Zhen Wu's anxiety lessened after he received Zhen Zhen's encouragement. He showed his entry ID to one of the competition's judges.

The judge looked curiously at Zhen Wu who was the competition's youngest contestant. The judge thought it wouldn't matter if Zhen Wu was admitted through the back door, because Zhen Wu wouldn't pass the first round. The judge led Zhen Wu on stage while Zhen Wu's family and Louis sat on the front row.

The contestants on the stage chatted with each other. But Zhen Wu played on

his computer to keep his anxiety low.

La Ba Te was an eleventh grade student. He was used to entering IT competitions. He felt threatened by Zhen Wu who was the youngest contestant. He walked to where Zhen Wu was focused on a computer, and he was relieved to see Zhen Wu playing games.

'I bet the little boy can't even read the instructions for the first round,' John said to La Ba Te.

'It'll be a good chance for the little boy to get used to losing,' La Ba Te said.

Zhen Wu acted like he couldn't understand John and La Ba Te insulting him in English.

'Are you here to participate in the competition?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu looked up from his computer because the little girl spoke Mandarin. The little girl wore a blue dress and her ebony hair was tied in a ponytail. She looked like a five-year-old.

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said politely.

Zhen Wu didn't like socialising with other children his age, but he didn't want to be rude to the little girl.

Lucy struggled to climb onto the chair next to Zhen Wu that was too high for her. She opened the small back pack on her back, and she chose two of her luckiest candies.

'These are for you,' Lucy said. She offered the two candies to Zhen Wu. 'They are lucky candies. I hope they'll bring you luck and you'll win the competition.'

Zhen Wu like Yue Gu Zai hated eating sweets. But Zhen Wu didn't want to reject the little girl's sincerity, he accepted the candies.

'Why aren't you eating the lucky candies?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu opened the wrapper of one candy.

'Are you participating in the competition too?' Zhen Wu asked.

'No because I'm not as smart enough,' Lucy said. 'I'm Lucy Brenda. My mum is Mandarin so I can speak Mandarin.'

'Zhen Wu,' Zhen Zhen cheered from the front row.

'Look at my grandson,' Ling Jia said. 'Everywhere he goes, he attracts honey.'

Lucy saw a judge coming onto the stage. She kissed Zhen Wu's cheek and smiled at him.

'My dad said giving someone a good luck kiss can help them win,' Lucy said. She jumped off the chair. 'Do your best. I hope you'll win.'

Zhen Wu watched Lucy run to an old man who looked like her grandpa. The old man wanted to hold Lucy's back pack, but she shook her head.

'Zhen Zhen, that little girl has good vision,' Ling Jia said. 'She's young but she instinctively recognises a rich little boy when she sees one.'

'Mum, the competition is starting,' Zhen Zhen said.

End of Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 1)

Related

part 2



Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 2 of 2)

Soccer Ball.

‘Ladies and gentlemen please sit in your assigned seats,’ the MC said. ‘All contestants must come onto the stage before the commencement of round one otherwise they’ll be disqualified. The winners of round one will be eligible to move onto round two. Contestants not abiding by the rules will be instantly disqualified by the judging panel. There’ll be an intermission between round one and round two for the judging panel to judge and to setup round two. The third round will commence tomorrow morning.’

The contestants sat at their assigned tables on stage. Zhen Wu sat in the

middle row on stage and La Ba Te sat behind him.

Zhen Wu carefully read the instructions for round one then he began to code a program onto his computer.

La Ba Te read the instructions of round one. It was a challenging round one, and he saw many contestants forfeit the competition. He was startled to see Zhen Wu calmly start round one in front of him.

'Zhen Wu, do your best!' Lucy cheered.

Lucy stood on her chair in the front row, and she waved her hands in the air to cheer for Zhen Wu. Her guard held her waist because he was scared she would fall off the chair.

Zhen Wu looked up and he felt shy to have Lucy cheer him on in the audience when everyone else were quiet. He saw the head judge turned around and gave Lucy a stern look. Lucy smiled, sat down on her chair and he looked back at his computer screen and continued to code.

One second before the end of round one, La Ba Te uploaded his completed program. He looked up, and as he expected Zhen Wu was sitting still in front of him. He felt confident Zhen Wu would be knocked out in round one.

The contestants who received a fail from the judging panel cursed or cried because they were knocked out of the competition. When Zhen Wu received a pass, he calmly walked off stage toward Zhen Zhen.

La Ba Te obstructed Zhen Wu's way and he spoke to Zhen Wu in Italian.

'Congratulations for passing round one,' La Ba Te said.

Zhen Wu replied in Italian too.

'Thank you,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu walked around La Ba Te and he didn't look back.

'The little boy got lucky,' John said to La Ba Te.

'The little boy isn't bad if he can pass round one,' La Ba Te said.

'Anyone who wins first place today will be sought after by the biggest companies,' John said.

'I only want to be accepted into Dawson's company,' La Ba Te said.

Zhen Wu ran to hug Zhen Zhen.

'Mum,' Zhen Wu called.

'Zhen Wu, you did well,' Zhen Zhen praised.

'Round two doesn't start until the afternoon,' Ling Jia said. 'Let's go and eat lunch. The competition rules state all family members of contestants who pass round one are rewarded a free lunch.'

Zhen Zhen smiled at the way Ling Jia's eyes lit up at the sight of a free lunch.

The richest companies sponsored the extravagant lunch buffets for the competition. Luckily Ling Jia didn't know Yue's company was one of the sponsors otherwise she wouldn't be happily eating lunch at the table reserved for Zhen Wu's family.

'Congratulations Zhen Wu,' Lucy said.

Lucy held her grandpa's hand to walk to Zhen Wu's table.

'Thank you,' Zhen Wu said politely.

Zhen Wu recognised the old man holding Lucy's hand was the head judge.

'Grandpa, I want to sit and eat lunch with Zhen Wu,' Lucy said.

'Lucy, behave,' Dawson Brenda said affectionately.

Lucy pouted her lips.

'It's OK,' Zhen Zhen said. 'There are many free seats at this table.'

Zhen Zhen smiled at Lucy. She moved to sit next to Louis for Lucy to sit next to Zhen Wu. She thought it was a good opportunity for Zhen Wu to become friends with Lucy who was close to Zhen Wu's age.

'Thank you,' Dawson Brenda said. 'I'm Dawson Brenda and this is my granddaughter Lucy.'

'Hello, I'm Zhen Zhen,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen introduced her family but Louis introduced himself before she could.

'Dawson, it's a pleasure to meet you,' Louis said. 'I'm Louis. I've heard good things about you.'

Zhen Zhen didn't read business articles, which was why she didn't recognise Dawson Brenda was the CEO of Dawson's company, a renowned IT company around the world.

Ling Jia was a skilful surgeon and a computer programmer, it wasn't unusual for her to know who Dawson Brenda was. But she was surprised Lucy was Dawson Brenda's granddaughter. She decided when she and her family returned home, she was going to speak privately with Zhen Wu. She would tell him the advantages of marrying Lucy. If Yue's company and Dawson's company merged through marriage, Zhen Wu would be king of the business world. If Zhen Wu wouldn't agree then she would ask Yue Cheng Tian to persuade Zhen Wu to marry Lucy in the future. She thought Lucy could be groomed to be the perfect wife for Zhen Wu since Lucy was a sweet and a loveable person by nature.

'Zhen Wu, let's go play in the children's playground,' Lucy said.

Lucy ate half her lunch, and she was restless to play in the sandpit.

Zhen Wu hesitated and he looked at Zhen Zhen's eyes for advice.

'Zhen Wu, you should go and play with Lucy,' Ling Jia interrupted.

'Grandpa...' Lucy pleaded.

Dawson Brenda nodded his head. Lucy jumped off her seat, held Zhen Wu's hand and they walked to the children's playground.

At the children's playground, Lucy and Zhen Wu took off their shoes to play in the sandpit. Zhen Wu lined up his shoes and Lucy's shoes together outside the sandpit. He sat next to Lucy, she built a sandcastle while he played games on his computer.

Dawson Brenda approved Zhen Wu being friends with Lucy. Louis smiled at the match-making gleam in Ling Jia's eyes, he knew Ling Jia wanted Zhen Wu to marry Lucy and conquer the business world. Zhen Zhen was happy to see Zhen Wu to play with someone close to his age.

Zhen Wu put his computer down when he noticed Lucy was crying and a taller

girl was holding her soccer ball.

'Lucy, what happened?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Zhen Wu, she stole my soccer ball,' Lucy said.

Lucy showed Zhen Wu her red hands. He was angry someone hit her hands. He gently rubbed her red hands.

'You played with the soccer ball for too long,' Ni Lei said.

Zhen Wu stood in front of Lucy to protect Lucy. He glared at Ni Lei.

'There are many free soccer balls over there,' Zhen Wu said. 'You didn't need to steal Lucy's soccer ball.'

'I want this soccer ball,' Ni Lei said.

Zhen Wu took back Lucy's soccer ball from Ni Lei's hands, and he gave it to Lucy.

Ni Lei's mum saw Ni Lei crying and she ran to the children's playground.

'What happened?' Ni Lei's mum asked.

'Mum, those two kids stole my soccer ball,' Ni Lei said.

'Xiao Ni Lei, don't cry,' Ni Lei's mum said. 'I'll help you get your soccer ball back.'

'Give me the soccer ball,' Ni Lei's mum said to Zhen Wu and Lucy.

Ni Lei stood behind her mum, and she stuck out her tongue at Zhen Wu and Lucy.

'Aunty, Lucy and I were playing with this soccer ball first,' Zhen Wu explained. 'It was your daughter who stole our soccer ball.'

'I don't care who the soccer ball belongs to,' Ni Lei's mum said. 'Give the soccer ball to my daughter.'

Ni Lei's mum snatched the soccer ball from Lucy's hands.

Zhen Wu thought Ling Jia was right about some people didn't know how to listen to reason. He was about to take back the soccer ball again for Lucy, but their family came to protect them.

Yue Cheng Tian held Zhen Wu in his arms and Dawson Brenda held Lucy in his arms.

'You have guts to bully my grandson,' Ling Jia said to Ni Lei's mum.

'It's those two bad kids who stole my daughter's soccer ball,' Ni Lei's mum said.

Dawson Brenda fumed and he glared at Ni Lei's mum for insulting Lucy.

La Ba Te ran to his mum and his little sister when he saw they made Dawson Brenda angry.

'Mum,' La Ba Te called.

'This is my son La Ba Te,' Ni Lei's mum said proudly. 'Don't think my family is easy to bully. My son is going to win today and he's going to be accepted into Dawson's company.'

'Mum, apologise to them,' La Ba Te said.

La Ba Te knew the head judge was Dawson Brenda. He didn't want his mum's temper to ruin his chances of being accepted into Dawson's company.

'Big brother, why does mum need to apologise to them?' Ni Lei asked.

'I'm sorry on behalf of my mum and little sister,' La Ba Te said.

La Ba Te's family was poor. He knew he would be his family's bread winner in the future. But he would have no future if his family offended Dawson Brenda.

'I'm sorry,' Ni Lei's mum said.

Ni Lei's mum knew La Ba Te only apologised to someone with a high status.

Yue Cheng Tian and Dawson Brenda carried Zhen Wu and Lucy back to their table.

John ran to La Ba Te because he was curious why La Ba Te apologised to Zhen Wu and Lucy's families.

'Why did you apologise to them?' John asked.

'Didn't you see the old man was on the judging panel?' La Ba Te asked. 'All the other judges valued his opinion the most. It means he has a high status.'

La Ba Te wanted to win and to receive a college scholarship from Dawson's company.

Minutes before the second round, Dawson Brenda couldn't coax Lucy to stop crying.

Zhen Wu took out a gold pearl from his pocket and he gave it to Lucy.

'Lucy don't cry,' Zhen Wu said. 'This is for you. You won't be beautiful if you cry.'

Lucy held the gold pearl in her hands and she stopped crying.

Ling Jia smiled because she was happy Zhen Wu gave her priceless gold pearl to Lucy.

Dawson Brenda was grateful for Zhen Wu. Dawson Brenda knew Lucy wasn't someone easily coaxed when she was upset. Dawson Brenda had reviewed all the contestants' entries from round one. He was impressed with Zhen Wu's program the most, and he thought La Ba Te's program was good too.

The second round of the competition commenced. The one hundred contestants remaining were given three minutes to crack the program's password. By the end of three minutes only fifty contestants passed.

The final hurdle of the second round was the contestants needed to gain administrative control over a program. It was a challenging task because Dawson Brenda was the creator of the program, and he coded a new firewall each time a contestant attempted to gain administrative control.

'Zhen Wu's mum, do you think Zhen Wu can win?' Lucy asked.

Lucy thought her grandpa was the smartest person she knew. She was worried Zhen Wu would lose to her grandpa's challenge.

'Lucy, don't worry,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Let's believe in Zhen Wu.'

Zhen Zhen didn't care if Zhen Wu won or lost as long as he was having fun in the competition.

It was a fierce competition between Zhen Wu, La Ba Te and Lien Shen. Lien Shen couldn't bypass firewalls as fast as Zhen Wu and La Ba Te. After the end of the second round, both Zhen Wu and La Ba Te passed.

Zhen Wu calmly walked off the stage. Lucy ran to him and she kissed his cheek.
‘Congratulations Zhen Wu!’ Lucy said and smiled.

Dawson Brenda carried Lucy in his arms so she wouldn’t run to Zhen Wu’s home.

‘Grandpa, let’s invite Zhen Wu to our home to play with me,’ Lucy said.

‘Lucy, tomorrow morning Zhen Wu needs to compete in the next round of the competition,’ Dawson Brenda said. ‘We can invite Zhen Wu to our home after the competition ends.’

‘Oh...’ Lucy said.

Lucy was disappointed Zhen Wu couldn’t come to her home to play that day.

Zhen Wu didn’t know why he was sad to see Lucy look disappointed.

‘Lucy, don’t worry,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘After I win the competition, I’ll visit your grandpa’s company.’

‘Um, that’s right,’ Dawson Brenda said. ‘Then Lucy will be Zhen Wu’s tour guide.’

‘Really?’ Lucy asked.

‘Yes,’ Dawson Brenda said.

Dawson Brenda said bye to Zhen Wu’s family and he took Lucy home.

La Ba Te was jealous Zhen Wu was the star of the competition. The other contestants were envious of Zhen Wu’s family’s luxury cars, and the smaller companies wanted to recruit Zhen Wu because Dawson Brenda praised Zhen Wu’s programming skills.

End of Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 2 of 2)

Related



Chapter Sixty-Three

Catenaccio.

Zhen Wu walked into Yue Gu Zai's study room at ten in the evening.

'Dad,' Zhen Wu called.

Yue Gu Zai put the reports to the side, and focused his attention on Zhen Wu.

'Son, are you having trouble sleeping because you're competing again tomorrow morning?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'No,' Zhen Wu said. 'Dad, I want to train at Ni Sheng's secret headquarters in Africa.'

'Is this what you want?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai didn't play favoritism even with his own son. Ni Sheng's secret headquarters in Africa was a dangerous place.

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said.

'Um, I'll ask your mum's opinion,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'If your mum agrees then you have my permission.'

'Mum said she'll support my decision but she said I needed your permission,' Zhen Wu said.

'Um, go to sleep,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I don't expect you to win tomorrow. I'll

always be proud of you as long as you do your best.'

'OK,' Zhen Wu said. 'Dad, one day I'll take your place to protect Ni Sheng's members.'

Yue Gu Zai was happy to hear Zhen Wu wanted to follow his footsteps, but he would only agree to hand over Ni Sheng to Zhen Wu if it was what Zhen Wu truly wanted.

The next day was a sunny day. At the competition venue, no one underestimated Zhen Wu again. They found out he was Yue Gu Zai's genius son.

La Ba Te's family background was different to Zhen Wu, he was poor and he felt pressured to win and succeed for his family.

Lucy waved her hands in the air to get Zhen Wu's attention.

'Zhen Wu,' Lucy called.

Zhen Wu walked to Lucy and he greeted Dawson Brenda.

'Zhen Wu, do you believe you'll get first place today?' Dawson Brenda asked.

Zhen Wu shook his head. He thought La Ba Te was a good programmer too.

'It's not important to win,' Dawson Brenda said. 'Whatever happens, I want you to take away a good experience from this competition.'

'Yes grandpa Dawson,' Zhen Wu said.

'Do your best,' Dawson Brenda said and rubbed Zhen Wu's head.

'Ladies and gentlemen please return to your assigned seats,' the MC announced. 'The final round of the competition is about to start. The finalists are the eighteen-year-old La Ba Te and the seven-year-old Zhen Wu. It'll be a nail biting final round.'

The audience clapped to cheer on the finalists.

'The winner will receive first place and a college scholarship from Dawson's company,' the MC said. 'Finalists, your time starts now.'

Most of the audience speculated La Ba Te would win because Zhen Wu was young and inexperienced. Also, La Ba Te began strategizing before Zhen Wu.

Zhen Wu was taking his time to read the Catenaccio instructions of the final round. Since Ling Jia returned to the modern era, Zhen Wu often played Catenaccio with Ling Jia. But it wasn't easy for him to code bolts quickly to prevent the opponent from scoring.

In the front row, Zhen Zhen was nervous watching Zhen Wu struggle.

'Mum, how do you think Zhen Wu will fare today?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Zhen Zhen, don't worry,' Ling Jia said. 'When I was versing Zhen Wu, it was hard for me to erase his bolts to score. This Catenaccio program was designed by Dawson Brenda. Our programming skills are on par with each other. I believe Zhen Wu has a good chance of winning.'

Three hours later, neither Zhen Wu nor La Ba Te scored. Their twenty fingers typed continuously on their keyboards. Many people in the audience went to take a morning tea break, and when they came back, Zhen Wu and La Ba Te were still neck and neck.

The bell rang and signalled overtime. During overtime La Ba Te looked like he had the edge over Zhen Wu. In the last minute of overtime, Zhen Wu bypassed La Ba Te's defences and Zhen Wu scored.

'The winner is Zhen Wu,' the MC announced.

The audience clapped, and Dawson Brenda presented Zhen Wu the winner's trophy.

La Ba Te was disappointed he lost to Zhen Wu.

'Congratulations,' La Ba Te said.

La Ba Te didn't expect Zhen Wu would give him Zhen Wu's phone number.

'Thank you,' Zhen Wu said. 'If you need anything, you can contact me.'

Zhen Wu took Yue Gu Zai's advice. Zhen Wu thought La Ba Te was a skilful programmer. Yue Gu Zai advised Zhen Wu to surround himself with talented people who would be helpful to Zhen Wu in the future.

La Ba Te didn't think Zhen Wu could help him with anything, but he accepted Zhen Wu's phone number.

Zhen Wu walked off stage to his family.

John ran to La Ba Te.

'La Ba Te, it unfair,' John said. 'You should have won. That little boy entered the competition through the back door, and his family has a connections with Dawson Brenda. The competition was rigged.'

'John, we should be gracious losers,' La Ba Te said. 'We have another chance to win next year.'

La Ba Te was prepared to work hard to be accepted into Dawson's company.

After the competition, Zhen Wu asked Yue Gu Zai to stop the media from reporting about the competition results because Zhen Wu didn't want to be a famous genius prodigy.

Yue Gu Zai kept his promise, he booked a flight to Africa for Zhen Wu. Zhen Wu was sad he would miss the birth of his sibling, but he was determined to train hard and become stronger to protect the people he loved.

At the airport, Yue Gu Zai hugged the tearful Zhen Zhen. She regretted giving her permission to let Zhen Wu train in Africa.

'Zhen Zhen, don't worry,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Zhen Wu is our son, we need to believe in him.'

At Dawson's company, Lucy waited in Dawson Brenda's office for the whole day.

'Lucy, let's go home,' Dawson Brenda said.

'Grandpa, I can't go home yet,' Lucy said and cried. 'What if Zhen Wu comes here when I'm gone?'

'Zhen Wu isn't coming here,' Dawson Brenda said.

Dawson Brenda knew Zhen Wu had left Italy straight after the competition ended.

'Lucy, don't cry anymore,' Dawson Brenda said. 'If Zhen Wu doesn't like you then he wouldn't have given you the gold pearl.'

'Grandpa...' Lucy said.

For many years, Lucy couldn't forget Zhen Wu.

End of Chapter Sixty-Three

Related



Chapter Sixty-Four

Tick Tock.

At one of the Da Household's homes, Tina broke everything in her bedroom.

'Tina, why are you breaking everything?' Dao Sheng asked.

'Mum, it's unfair,' Tina said. 'Why does Zhen Zhen get to have Phil and everything, but I have nothing?'

'Tina, didn't you say Tan Lang will help you?' Dao Sheng asked.

'Now that Da Tu Li sided with Ni Sheng to save Da Fu Li's life, Shu Tang Jue won't let Tan Lang's members make any moves against Ni Sheng,' Tina said.

'Shu Tang Jue is a smart man,' Dao Sheng said. 'Do you want me to have dinner with him and persuade him to help you?'

'Shu Tang Jue rejected my dinner invitation,' Tina said.

'I don't believe Phil has no weaknesses,' Dao Sheng said.

'His weakness is his wife,' Tina said. 'Mum, forget it. His wife is well protected.'

Dao Sheng disagreed with Tina, and she secretly schemed to kidnap Zhen Zhen.

At Yue Gu Zai's home, Ling Jia was depressed after she returned from Italy. Zhen Wu was training in Africa, Yue Dui Yi was obsessed with Tom and Jerry and Yue Cheng Tian and Louis only knew how to glare at each other like love rivals.

Ling Jia snuck out of the mansion to go vintage vase shopping.

Dao Sheng mistook Ling Jia for Zhen Zhen, and she kidnapped Ling Jia when Ling Jia was outside alone. She took Ling Jia to Tina's home.

'Do you know who I am?' Dao Sheng asked.

'If you don't tell me then how will I know?' Ling Jia asked.

'I'm Tina's mum,' Dao Sheng said.

Ling Jia was disappointed her kidnapper was someone useless.

'I want you to call Phil,' Dao Sheng said. 'Tell him to stay out of the Da Household's business unless he wants you dead.'

'Um, give me your phone,' Ling Jia said.

Dao Sheng was suspicious why Ling Jia wasn't scared.

'How can I call Phil if you don't give me your phone?' Ling Jia asked.

Dao Sheng gave her phone to Ling Jia.

'Don't try any tricks,' Dao Sheng warned.

Ling Jia called Yue Gu Zai.

'Phil, it's mum,' Ling Jia said. 'The Da Household kidnapped me. They told me to tell you not to be involved in their business unless you want me dead.'

'Mum, don't you have anything else to do?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'Why did you go visit the Da Household?'

'Did you hear me?' Ling Jia asked. 'Your mum is kidnapped.'

Ling Jia was upset Yue Gu Zai only saw Zhen Zhen as a human. Ling Jia regretted she didn't call Yue Cheng Yi first.

'Does that mean I shouldn't wait for you to come home to eat dinner,' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'You bad son,' Ling Jia said. 'They want to kill your mum.'

'Alright,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll let Cesar know not to cook dinner for you. Mum, come home after you had your fun. Help me deal with the Da Household. Lately I have a heavy workload on my plate.'

'You bad son,' Ling Jia said.

Ling Jia smashed the phone on the floor.

‘My son doesn’t love me,’ Ling Jia said. ‘I’ll call Louis. Do you know Louis?’

Dao Sheng couldn’t believe she kidnapped the wrong person. If Yue Gu Zai didn’t care about his own mother, she didn’t believe Louis would care about Ling Jia. But she had nothing to lose. She asked a guard to bring her another phone to give to Ling Jia.

‘If you can’t persuade Louis then I’ll shoot you dead,’ Dao Sheng said.

Ling Jia called Louis.

‘Louis, I’m kidnapped,’ Ling Jia sulked.

‘Who’s the unlucky person who kidnapped you?’ Louis asked.

Yue Cheng Tian heard Ling Jia’s voice, and he got into another glaring match with Louis.

‘Louis, this isn’t a joke,’ Ling Jia said. ‘They said if Ni Sheng doesn’t stay out of the Da Household’s business, they’ll shoot me dead.’

‘Gu Zai called me before,’ Louis said. ‘He told me you won’t be back for dinner. What a shame, I was planning to personally cook your favorite dinner dishes tonight.’

Louis passed the phone to Yue Cheng Tian.

‘Louis, don’t you love me anymore?’ Ling Jia asked.

Yue Cheng Tian knew Louis wanted him to lose his temper.

‘Where are you?’ Yue Cheng Tian asked.

‘Husband, I’m kidnapped,’ Ling Jia sulked. ‘Come save me.’

‘Do you want me to ask Louis on your behalf if he still loves you?’ Yue Cheng Tian asked coldly.

‘Husband, you misheard me before,’ Ling Jia said. ‘I asked if my husband loves me.’

‘Woman, stop talking nonsense!’ Dao Sheng warned.

Yue Cheng Tian hung up the phone, and Ling Jia knew he was angry.

'Look what you've done,' Ling Jia said. 'You made my husband angry. My husband is a petty man. You're in big trouble.'

'You crazy woman, you're the one who is in big trouble,' Dao Sheng said. 'I should have shot you the moment I saw you.'

Ling Jia intended to have a little fun. But Dao Sheng made her husband angry. She took out three bombs from her pocket and threw one bomb at the window. She escaped through the window, threw the second bomb into the house and she ran into the dense wood.

Ling Jia used the phone to call Da Tu Li.

'Who are you?' Da Tu Li asked.

'I'm helping you take care of Tina,' Ling Jia said. 'I want you to drive me home so I can eat dinner.'

Da Tu Li hung up and drove to Tina's home.

Tina arrived home in her red sports car. Her home was burned down. She noticed a figure hiding in the woods. Before she could step out of her car, Ling Jia's third bomb exploded and killed Tina instantly.

Da Tu Li arrived at Tina's burnt home, and she gave Ling Jia a lift home.

'You should be happy I helped you get rid of Tina,' Ling Jia said.

'Um, but it'll be troublesome to explain her death,' Da Tu Li said.

'Don't worry,' Ling Jia said. 'Dead people can't talk. Drive faster, I want to make it home in time to eat dinner.'

End of Chapter Sixty-Four

Related

part 1



Chapter Sixty-Five (Part 1)

Baby.

Ling Jia was happy Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen were living a good life together. Ling Jia felt it was the right time to go back.

'Mum...' Yue Gu Zai called.

'Gu Zai, Zhen Zhen's a good woman,' Ling Jia said. 'Take good care of her.'

'Yes mum,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Imperial brother Gu Zai...' Yue Dui Yi called.

Yue Dui Yi was sad to separate from Yue Gu Zai again.

Yue Gu Zai saw the Tom and Jerry box set in Yue Dui Yi's arms and he smiled.

'Dui Yi, what are you going to do with the box set at home?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Gu Zai, Dui Yi said the box set is the first gift you bought him,' Zhen Zhen said.
'He wants to bring it home as a momentum. Let him take it home.'

Yue Gu Zai nodded his head.

Yue Cheng Tian was relieved Louis didn't come to farewell Ling Jia.

'Let's go home,' Yue Cheng Tian said.

Yue Cheng Tian held Ling Jia and Yue Dui Yi's hands. The moment they were about to leave, Louis jumped out of the shadows and held onto Ling Jia's hand. An explosion was heard and the four of them disappeared.

Yue Gu Zai smiled at the empty spot. He knew it was going to be a lively place in the palace with Louis living with Ling Jia, Yue Cheng Tian and Yue Dui Yi.

Months past, Zhen Zhen was close to her delivery date. Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai missed the lively days when their family members were together. If Zhen Zhen had an appointment on a day Yue Gu Zai was on a business trip, Yue Gu Zai assigned a guard to drive Zhen Zhen to the hospital.

After a hospital visit, Zhen Zhen walked outside and waited for the guard to pick her up. Her complexion paled when she saw Shu Tang Jue stepped out of a car.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, I want you to come with me to visit small rice grain,’ Shu Tang Jue said. ‘She misses you.’

‘Do I have a choice?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

Shu Tang Jue opened the front passenger seat for Zhen Zhen. She sat in his car, and he opened an empty blue box.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, I want you to put all your jewellery in here,’ Shu Tang Jue said.

Zhen Zhen took off her blue diamond earrings, bracelet and diamond ring. Shu Tang Jue put the bracelet and diamond ring in the blue box, but he crushed the blue diamond earrings into powder.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, Tan Lang prepared a more beautiful pair of diamond earrings for you,’ Shu Tang Jue said.

Zhen Zhen knew Shu Tang Jue found out about the blue diamond earrings Yue Gu Zai bought for her that had a tracking device installed.

Shu Tang Jue drove Zhen Zhen to a beautiful mansion, but she was in no mood to appreciate the architecture.

Shu Tang Jue led Zhen Zhen to his and Nan Ma’s bedroom door.

‘Miss Zhen Zhen, Nan Ma is pregnant,’ Shu Tang Jue said. ‘For several days she refused to eat. I hope you can persuade her to eat.’

Zhen Zhen was surprised Nan Ma was pregnant.

A chef brought a platter of food to Shu Tang Jue, and he passed it to Zhen Zhen.

'I'm not coming in,' Shu Tang Jue said.

Zhen Zhen opened the door. Nan Ma sat in front of the window.

'I said I don't want to eat anything,' Nan Ma said.

Zhen Zhen was sad to see Nan Ma looked like a skeleton.

'Nan Ma, you should at least eat for the baby,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen...' Nan Ma called.

Zhen Zhen put the platter of food on a table. Nan Ma ran to hug Zhen Zhen and she cried.

Zhen Zhen was angry Shu Tang Jue made the usually strong Nan Ma cry.

'Why are you here?' Nan Ma asked.

'Shu Tang Jue invited me here to visit you,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Who does he think he is?' Nan Ma asked. 'I'll go tell him to release you.'

'Ah... Nan Ma... my stomach hurts...' Zhen Zhen said.

Nan Ma helped Zhen Zhen to the bed. Then Nan Ma ran outside to ask Shu Tang Jue to find someone to help deliver Zhen Zhen's baby. When Nan Ma left the bedroom, Zhen Zhen was unconscious.

That day Yue Gu Zai returned from England and his gang members reported to him.

'Boss, the guard waited for your wife outside the hospital,' Cheng Yi said. 'The guard didn't see her come out. I went to the hospital to review security footage, Shu Tang Jue forced your wife into his car.'

Yue Gu Zai snapped the pen in his hand in half.

'Boss, Tan Lang's members have been snooping around your home and the hospital for the last couple of days,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'What if Shu Tang Jue wants to use your wife to take revenge on you?'

'Why didn't anyone tell me about this sooner?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Your wife wouldn’t let us tell you because she didn’t want you to worry,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

‘I want everyone to leave,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

At Shu Tang Jue’s mansion, he ordered the head doctor of Tan Lang to help deliver Zhen Zhen’s baby.

‘Small rice grain, don’t worry,’ Shu Tang Jue said. ‘Nothing will happen to Zhen Zhen and the baby.’

Nan Ma pushed Shu Tang Jue’s arms away from her.

‘If anything happens to Zhen Zhen and her baby, I’ll never forgive you,’ Nan Ma said.

Nan Ma stared at the door and she prayed for Zhen Zhen and the baby.

Shu Tang Jue didn’t know how his and Nan Ma’s relationship became strained.

A baby’s cry was heard. Nan Ma turned around and she smiled at Shu Tang Jue.

‘Zhen Zhen gave birth,’ Nan Ma said. ‘The baby is here.’

Shu Tang Jue was grateful Zhen Zhen’s baby was born safely because it meant he could see Nan Ma smile.

‘Boss, it’s a baby girl,’ Mo Yi said. ‘The mother and baby girl are healthy. The baby girl needs a ventilator for the first two days.’

Mo Yi had to perform a C-section to take out the baby girl because Zhen Zhen was unconscious.

Nan Ma walked into the room, and she carried her adorable goddaughter. For the first time she wondered if her baby would be adorable like her goddaughter.

The next several days, Shu Tang Jue agreed to let Nan Ma take care of Zhen Zhen and the baby girl because Nan Ma agreed to eat.

Zhen Zhen was unhappy she gave birth to a baby girl. She decided when she got home, she would tell Yue Gu Zai if she was pregnant again, she wouldn’t give birth unless they were having a baby boy.

‘Zhen Zhen, do you think your daughter looks more like your husband?’ Nan

Ma asked.

‘The baby is too young to see who she looks like,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Nan Ma, do you know why Shu Tang Jue is holding me and the baby captive?’

‘Didn’t he ask you to come here to cheer me up?’ Nan Ma asked.

‘I don’t think it’s that simple,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Zhen Zhen, I won’t let him hurt you or your daughter,’ Nan Ma said. ‘If he dares, I’ll make him suffer more than if he was dead.’

‘Nan Ma do you have a phone?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘I want to call Gu Zai.’

Zhen Zhen was disappointed Nan Ma shook her head.

‘I’ll go find him and tell him to release you and your daughter,’ Nan Ma said.

Nan Ma left the room with the baby girl, and Zhen Zhen laid on the bed to rest.

Someone came out of an underground tunnel.

‘Who’s there?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘Gu Zai...’

Yue Gu Zai walked to the bed, he hugged Zhen Zhen and she cried on his shoulder.

‘Zhen Zhen, I’m sorry I came late,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘We need to leave.’

Zhen Zhen knew if Yue Gu Zai fell into Shu Tang Jue’s hands then even Nan Ma couldn’t save Yue Gu Zai’s life.

‘Follow me,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai led Zhen Zhen through the tunnel.

‘Gu Zai, our daughter,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Zhen Zhen, go outside first,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Cheng Yi, Chu Gian and Bai Yu Tian are waiting in the car for us. I’ll go find our daughter.’

Zhen Zhen hesitated to let go of Yue Gu Zai’s hand. He kissed her cheek and he ran to look for their daughter.

Zhen Zhen walked through the tunnel exit. Cheng Yi, Chu Gian and Bai Yu Tian were happy to see Zhen Zhen was alive and safe.

'Where's boss?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'Gu Zai went back inside to look for Yue Ni,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, come sit in the car,' Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian was worried to see Zhen Zhen's pale face.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I want to wait for Gu Zai.'

Zhen Zhen noticed someone on the roof.

'Who is on the roof?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'It's Gu Zai.'

Zhen Zhen saw Shu Tang Jue behind Yue Gu Zai.

'Gu Zai, behind you!' Zhen Zhen warned.

Chu Gian pulled Zhen Zhen onto the ground and she shielded Zhen Zhen's body from bullets.

The gun shots stopped. Zhen Zhen could only see Shu Tang Jue on the roof.

'No... no...' Zhen Zhen said.

Chu Gian and Bai Yu Tian held Zhen Zhen back from running into the mansion.

'Miss Zhen Zhen, running back inside is pointless,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Let me go...' Zhen Zhen said and fell unconscious.

Chu Gian and Bai Yu Tian carried Zhen Zhen to the car and Cheng Yi drove them home.

End of Chapter Sixty-Five (Part 1)

Related

part 2



Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 2 of 2)

Window.

One year later.

A young man who lost his memories was cleaning a small living room. The

phone rang, he had no feelings toward the photo of the woman on the phone. He looked at the plush tiger on the sofa, and he wanted to put it in the bin. The woman told him that he bought her the tiger, but he felt like he was someone who hated buying plush toys. She told him that they were married, but he didn't believe her. He couldn't remember his name, she said his name was Du Yi. He hated the name Du Yi.

'Du Yi, I'm home,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I bought your favorite food.'

Tan Xu Er was happy Yue Gu Zai couldn't remember Zhen Zhen, and he believed he lost his memories after a car accident.

Yue Gu Zai saw Tan Xu Er bought many sweet food. He hated sweet food.

Tan Xu Er saw the newspaper on the table, and she panicked.

'Du Yi, do you want to find a job?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'Why can't I work?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'You can't work!' Tan Xu Er said.

Tan Xu Er realised she was acting strange in front of Yue Gu Zai. She calmed herself, and held his hand.

'You're still recovering from the car accident,' Tan Xu Er said. 'My responsibility is to work to support us.'

'Are you saying you want to support me for the rest of your life?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I don't mind,' Tan Xu Er said.

Yue Gu Zai gripped Tan Xu Er's hand.

'Are we really married?' Yue Gu Zai asked coldly.

'We... ah...' Tan Xu Er said.

'If we're really married and love each other then why do I feel like you don't understand a single thing about me?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai let go of Tan Xu Er's hand. After he cleaned the room, he went to sleep because he had no appetite to eat dinner.

The next day, Yue Gu Zai walked downstairs and he saw Tan Xu Er made breakfast for him.

'I'm sorry,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I should be more understanding that you want to work to share half the burden with me. I overreacted because I care about your health.'

'I'm sorry I overreacted too,' Yue Gu Zai said.

A year ago, Tan Xu Er found Yue Gu Zai in the woods. There were wounds all over his body. He didn't remember who he was. She took him to a place that was located on the quiet side of the city, because she was scared Zhen Zhen would find him. The first month he was on the news, and search parties were sent to look for him.

'Have you found a job yet?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'After breakfast, I'll look for a job,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'It's hard to find a job without qualifications,' Tan Xu Er said. 'When you find a job, call me straight away.'

Yue Gu Zai had no job qualifications. So he applied to be a waiter at a restaurant, the owner hired him because his good looks would attract more female customers.

Tan Xu Er was happy Yue Gu Zai found a low key job where Zhen Zhen couldn't find him.

On Yue Gu Zai's first day at work, Jiu Tu passed him a plate of steak and vegetables.

'Du Yi, the young woman is here again,' Jiu Tu said.

'Who?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'The young woman by the window,' Jiu Ju said.

Yue Gu Zai looked at the young woman. She looked frail and sad. He didn't know why his heart ached.

'I don't know who her rich husband is,' Jiu Tu said. 'She reserved that table for a year now. She comes here and sits there by herself. I don't know why she

didn't come here in the last three days, but she's back.'

'How do you know she's married?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai didn't know why finding out the young woman was married made him feel uncomfortable.

'I overheard her driver call her Mrs Yue,' Jiu Tu said. 'She doesn't like having someone follow her. The driver would drive her here and pick her up at closing time.'

Yue Gu Zai served the plate of food to Zhen Zhen's table.

'Mrs Yue, your lunch,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Thank you,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen thought she heard Yue Gu Zai's voice. She couldn't see after Yue Gu Zai died. Bai Yu Tian said her crying everyday made her partially blind. Bai Yu Tian wanted her to have an eye laser surgery to restore her sight, but she refused. If she couldn't see Yue Gu Zai's face then she didn't want to see again.

Yue Gu Zai waved his hand in front of Zhen Zhen.

'I'm blind,' Zhen Zhen said.

'I'm sorry Mrs Yue,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I'm OK,' Zhen Zhen said and smiled. 'Your voice sounds like someone close to me.'

'Is that why you look happy?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'If you're him... you would know me,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mrs Yue, wait here,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll be back.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't know why he wanted to cry. He walked to Jiu Tu and told him that he needed a toilet break.

'Du Yi, you look sick...' Jiu Tu said.

Yue Gu Zai didn't reply to Jiu Tu, he walked to the toilet and washed his face. After he composed himself he walked outside.

'This is Mrs Yue's coffee,' Jiu Tu said. 'Are you sure you're OK?'

'I'm OK,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai brought the coffee to Zhen Zhen.

'Mrs Yue, your coffee,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Thank you,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen carefully stirred the cup of coffee.

The whole day Yue Gu Zai's eyes lingered on Zhen Zhen.

After closing time Yue Gu Zai ate dinner at Tan Xu Er's home.

'How's work?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'Good,' Yue Gu Zai said coldly. 'What about you?'

'Good,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I replaced the big sister who used to work there. I'm finally a permanent employee at the lab.'

'Um,' Yue Gu Zai said. He put his chopsticks down and stood. 'I'm going to take a shower.'

In the shower Yue Gu Zai looked at the wounds on his body, and he knew Tan Xu Er lied to him. He didn't lose his memories from a car accident. There was a bullet wound on his chest and faint scars everywhere below his stomach.

Yue Gu Zai turned off the tap, and dressed. When he walked to the living room, Tan Xu Er was waiting for him on the sofa like usual. He sat on the sofa, she wanted to dry his hair but he avoided the towel in her hands.

'I poured you a glass of milk,' Tan Xu Er said. 'It's on the table.'

Tan Xu Er stood, she pretended to fall and Yue Gu Zai caught her before she fell. She closed her eyes, and he knew what she wanted.

'It's late,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'You should sleep.'

Tan Xu Er was disappointed even after a year, Yue Gu Zai didn't kiss her even though she lied to him that they were married.

'Du Yi, you should sleep too,' Tan Xu Er said and walked to her bedroom.

Yue Gu Zai walked to his bedroom. He laid on his bed. He couldn't sleep because he kept thinking about the young woman who sat by the window at the

restaurant.

End of Chapter Sixty-Five (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1



Chapter Sixty-Six (Part 1)

Hot chocolate.

‘Du Yi, why do you think that rich woman comes here every day?’ Jiu Tu asked.
‘Do you think she’s sick or is she waiting for someone?’

‘Make her a hot chocolate,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘She ordered a coffee,’ Du Yi said.

‘Hot chocolate,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai brought a cup of hot chocolate to Zhen Zhen’s table.

‘Mrs Yue, your drink,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Zhen smiled because she loved hearing the waiter’s voice that sounded like Yue Gu Zai. She took a sip and she frowned.

‘I want to drink coffee,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Drinking too much coffee isn’t good for you,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘What’s your name?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Du Yi,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

The next several days, Zhen Zhen ordered hot chocolate. Yue Gu Zai thought she looked skinner by the day. Some days he would order her a meal, and she would take a bite.

Mr and Mrs Yue asked Zhen Zhen to come home but she declined. For a year there was no news of Yue Gu Zai or their daughter. There was no reason for her

to restore her sight. She didn't want to accept Yue Gu Zai and their daughter died. That day she was happy she finally received news about their daughter.

'Mrs Yue, your hot chocolate,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Thank you,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Can you sit with me for a while?'

Yue Gu Zai didn't know if it was right for him to sit.

'Sit,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll reimburse the owner for your pay today.'

Yue Gu Zai sat opposite Zhen Zhen.

'You don't like to talk,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He doesn't like to talk either. Can you talk a little more today?'

'Is he your husband?' Yue Gu Zai asked coldly.

'Yes,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Your voice sounds exactly like my husband's voice.'

'Is that so?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'Why do you come here every day?'

Yue Gu Zai was jealous of Zhen Zhen's husband.

'Do you come here to wait for him?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Zhen Zhen didn't know why the waiter made her feel like she was sitting with Yue Gu Zai.

'After today, I'm not coming here anymore,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai teared the napkin in half.

'Why?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I can't stay here forever,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I need to accept my reality.'

Zhen Zhen received news that Shu Tang Jue was raising a one-year-old baby girl. If the baby girl was her daughter, she wanted to her daughter back.

Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai sat in tensed silence until closing time.

'Du Yi, the woman closed her account here and she also left a generous tip,' Jiu Tu said. 'What did you two talk about? Why isn't she coming back?'

'Jiu Tu, do you want to turn into a gossiping mother hen?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Hey, if you don't want to tell me then you don't have to,' Jiu Tu said. 'There's

no reason to be angry.'

Yue Gu Zai walked outside. He saw Zhen Zhen was still waiting for her driver. Usually her driver picked her up at the back of the restaurant because there were more street lights.

'Mrs Yue, where do you live?' Yue Gu Zai asked. 'I'll take you home.'

'You don't have to,' Zhen Zhen declined.

'Fine,' Yue Gu Zai said coldly.

A second later, Yue Gu Zai pushed Zhen Zhen away and a car crashed into him.

'Miss, are you OK?' a man asked.

'Miss, is he your husband?' a woman asked. 'Someone call an ambulance. There's a car accident.'

A minute later, Bai Yu Tian arrived at the restaurant. He was shocked to see Yue Gu Zai lying on the ground, and Zhen Zhen holding Yue Gu Zai's hand.

'Boss!' Bai Yu Tian called.

Bai Yu Tian knelt on the ground and he examined Yue Gu Zai.

'Mrs Yue, let go of boss' hand,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'The ambulance is here. We need to take him to the hospital.'

Zhen Zhen followed Yue Gu Zai into the ambulance. She couldn't see him, but she felt she was holding his hand. He wasn't Du Yi if Bai Yu Tian called him boss. Was he really Yue Gu Zai? If he was Yue Gu Zai, she didn't want to let go of Yue Gu Zai's hand.

End of Chapter Sixty-One (Part 1)

Related

part 2



Chapter Sixty-Six (Part 2 of 2)

Daughter.

Tan Xu Er left work early, and she went to pick up Yue Gu Zai at the restaurant. But when she arrived at the restaurant, paramedics were carrying Yue Gu Zai into an ambulance and the woman by his side was Zhen Zhen.

Tan Xu Er drove home, and she sat in the quiet dining room. She knew one day Zhen Zhen would find Yue Gu Zai but she didn't expect it would be so soon.

At the hospital, Yue Gu Zai was in a stable condition. Zhen Zhen sat by his bedside and she held his hand.

'Mrs Yue, boss is going to OK,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'He lost his memories a year ago. When he wakes up, there is a good chance he'll regain his memories.'

'Bai Yu Tian, I want you perform the laser surgery on my eyes,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mrs Yue, everything is prepared,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'I was only waiting for you consent.'

'Um,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen kissed Yue Gu Zai's forehead.

'Gu Zai, wait for me,' Zhen Zhen said.

In the operating room, before Zhen Zhen was induced to sleep, she thought about how she was fated to meet Yue Gu Zai and how cruelly they were

separated. After she regained her sight, she didn't want to be separated from him again.

Zhen Zhen didn't think she could ever love someone like the way she loved Yue Gu Zai. Her biggest dream was simple, she wanted to be with Yue Gu Zai for the rest of their lives.

Although Yue Gu Zai didn't say he loved Zhen Zhen, she knew how much he loved her. He sacrificed everything for her to be alive.

After the eye laser surgery, Zhen Zhen opened her eyes and the sunlight she hadn't seen for a year slowly appeared in front of her eyes.

Yue Gu Zai hugged Zhen Zhen, and their pain melted away.

'You regained your eyesight,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'You're not allowed to cry.'

'Gu Zai, do you know how much I missed you?' Zhen Zhen asked. 'I thought you died... did you know how much pain I was in when I thought you died... in that moment I finally understood how much I loved you. Everyone consoled me, but I couldn't stop crying. I cried to the point I couldn't see. During the months you weren't with me, I didn't want to live. I missed you so much, but why did you forget me?'

'Zhen Zhen, I'm sorry,' Yue Gu Zai said.

After Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen were discharged from the hospital they went home together. Louis informed him what happened in the year he disappeared. Unexpectedly, Tan Lang didn't make any moves against Ni Sheng when he was missing.

Two weeks later, Yue Gu Zai received evidence Shu Tang Jue had his and Zhen Zhen's daughter.

'Zhen Zhen, I want to go get our daughter back,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said. She held onto Yue Gu Zai's hand. 'Don't go.'

'Zhen Zhen, he has our daughter,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Our daughter belongs with us.'

'Gu Zai, I want to come with you,' Zhen Zhen said.

‘Zhen Zhen, stay home and wait for me,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I’ll bring our daughter home.’

‘Gu Zai, you have to come back to me,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘I will,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai kissed Zhen Zhen’s forehead.

Yue Gu Zai drove to Tan Xu Er’s home first.

At Tan Xu Er’s home, she left all of Yue Gu Zai’s clothes on the sofa. He hadn’t returned for two weeks. She suspected he regained his memories.

When Tan Xu Er heard a knock on the door, she ran to open the door.

‘Du Yi, you’re back,’ Tan Xu Er said and smiled.

Tan Xu Er wanted to hug Yue Gu Zai, but he looked at her coldly the same way he looked at her before he lost his memories.

Yue Gu Zai walked to the sofa and he put a one way plane ticket and a cheque on the coffee table.

‘Thank you for saving me,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Here is a plane ticket to the U.S. and a generous cheque.’

Tan Xu Er lost hope that Yue Gu Zai wanted to stay with her. She resented why she had to leave.

‘Why do I have to leave?’ Tan Xu Er asked.

‘Because I don’t want to see your face,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai wanted to kill Tan Xu Er. If Tan Xu Er didn’t save him, he would have killed her the moment he regained his memories. He hated Tan Xu Er, because of her, he was separated from Zhen Zhen for a year.

‘What did I do wrong?’ Tan Xu Er asked and cried. ‘All I did was love you. Is it wrong of me to love you?’

‘The plane leaves tomorrow afternoon at three,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘It’ll give you time to pack and tie up loose ends here.’

Yue Gu Zai turned around and left Tan Xu Er’s home for good.

'I hate you,' Tan Xu Er said to Yue Gu Zai's back.

Tan Xu Er didn't want to accept it was meaningless to love a man who loved his wife. But she was powerless to change her reality. She knew he would kill her if she stayed.

At Shu Tang Jue's mansion, Yue Gu Zai for the first time since he met Shu Tang Jue sat at the same table with Shu Tang Jue.

Strangers would have mistaken Shu Tang Jue as a gentle priest if they didn't know he was the cold blooded leader of Tan Lang.

Yue Ni was a mischievous one-year-old baby girl. Shu Tang Jue and Nan Ma loved Yue Ni more than their baby son, Shu Tang Li.

Yue Ni wasn't scared of strangers. She looked curiously at Yue Gu Zai. Yue Gu Zai didn't have anything for her to play with. She pulled Shu Tang Jue's hair and she jumped on Shu Tang Jue's lap to get him to put her down so she could go and play.

'Small dad,' Yue Ni called. 'Play, play.'

Yue Gu Zai didn't show that hearing Yue Ni call another man dad made him furious with Shu Tang Jue.

'Xiao Ni, let small dad talk to uncle first,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'Then small dad will take you out to play.'

Yue Gu Zai wanted to kill Shu Tang Jue because he wasn't Yue Ni's uncle, he was Yue Ni's biological father. When he saw Shu Tang Jue let Yue Ni put a loaded gun in her mouth, he wanted to take the gun out of her hands and shoot Shu Tang Jue.

Yue Gu Zai in a flash, grabbed the gun out of Yue Ni's hands and pointed the gun at Shu Tang Jue. Shu Tang Jue also pointed a gun at Yue Gu Zai.

Yue Ni's cry broke the silence. But Yue Gu Zai refused to let Yue Ni hold the gun again.

Shu Tang Jue was angry at Yue Gu Zai for making Yue Ni cry.

'Xiao Ni, don't cry,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'If Xiao Ni stop crying then later small dad will take you out to shoot birds.'

Yue Ni stopped crying and she smiled at Shu Tang Jue.

Yue Gu Zai thought it was unfair he didn't get to take care of Zhen Wu and he missed Yue Ni's birth too. But Shu Tang Jue got to be there for Yue Ni and Shu Tang Li's births.

'I came here to take Yue Ni home,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'I'll let you take Xiao Ni home,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'I don't believe you'll let me take my daughter home this easily,' Yue Gu Zai said.

The truth was Shu Tang Jue loved Yue Ni like his own daughter. He didn't want to give Yue Ni back to Yue Gu Zai. But Nan Ma threatened to divorce him if he didn't give Yue Ni back to Yue Gu Zai.

'I don't want to give Xiao Ni to you,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'If you give me full custody of Xiao Ni, I'll raise Xiao Ni and love Xiao Ni like she's my own daughter.'

'Stop dreaming,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai carried the crying Yue Ni to the car.

Shu Tang Jue wanted to call the cops and report someone kidnapped his daughter that he raised since she was born.

Nan Ma pinched Shu Tang Jue's ear.

'If you dare try to take Xiao Ni back, I'll divorce you and take Xiao Li with me,' Nan Ma threatened.

'Wife, didn't you see me give Xiao Ni back?' Shu Tang Jue asked and hugged Nan Ma.

'It's too empty here without Xiao Ni,' Nan Ma said. 'Xiao Li is such a good baby boy, he rarely cries.'

A couple of days later, a miracle happened. Shu Tang Jue attended Yue Gu Zai's wedding in peace.

Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen held a small wedding to renew their vows. They invited some of Ni Sheng's gang members, Mr and Mrs Zhen, Nan Ma, Shu Tang Jue and Shu Tang Li.

The news spread about Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Li having dinner at the same table. Ni Sheng members and Tan Lang members speculated why Yue Ni called Yue Gu Zai dad and Shu Tang Li small dad. Since their leaders didn't kill each other, an unspoken truce was made between Ni Sheng and Tan Lang.

Five years later, Yue Ni was a six-year-old and Zhen Wu was a thirteen-year-old.

Early in the morning, Zhen Zhen wore a white dress and she knocked on Zhen Wu's bedroom door.

'Zhen Wu, where's your little sister?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Wu had returned home from training in Africa a year ago, he was tanned, taller and stronger.

'Little sister said everyone here bullies her and doesn't love her,' Zhen Wu said. 'She ran away to live with her small dad. Mum, you should call my godmother and ask her to tell her husband not to give little sister everything she wants then she won't run away from home anymore. It's troublesome to bring her back every time she runs to her small dad.'

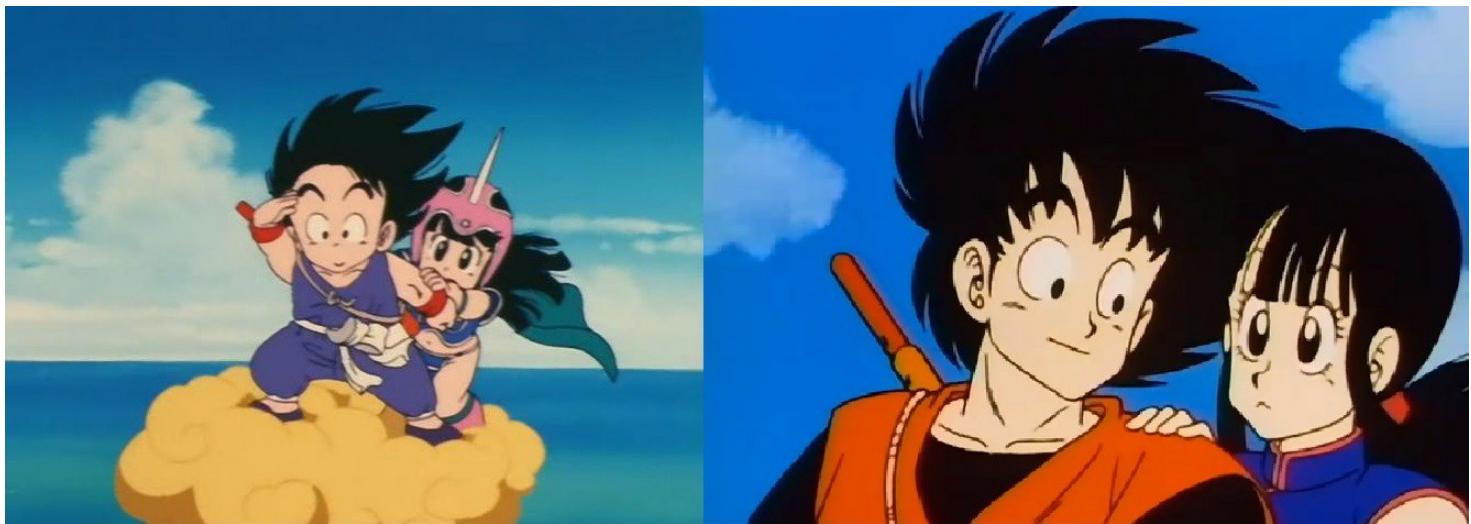
'Zhen Wu, get dressed and bring your little sister home,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mum, you know Xiao Li is like his dad,' Zhen Wu said. 'Xiao Li is only six, but he's possessive of little sister like his dad is possessive of godmother. Do you know I risk my life every time I take little sister back home?'

Zhen Zhen smiled at the sleepy Zhen Wu who looked exactly like Yue Gu Zai. Since Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai were reunited, they were grateful they got to live happy and peaceful lives together with Zhen Wu and Yue Ni. Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai loved each other more every year and they wanted to fulfil their dream of growing old together.

End of Chapter Sixty-Six (Part 2 of 2)

Related



Timeskip

Chapter Sixty-Seven

Timeskip.

The elite private college only admitted the smartest students and students from the richest families. The two richest families in the city were the Dawson and the Yue families.

Zhen Wu was grateful he got to go to college incognito. The teachers and students all thought Zhen Wu was a love child of businessman's mistress.

'Lam Ting isn't this the boy who gave you a love letter?' Chu Lan asked and pointed at sleeping Zhen Wu.

Lam Ting was one of the most beautiful girls on campus. She wanted her boyfriend to be the richest, smartest and most handsome boy on campus. Many boys chased after Lam Ting. She looked down on lazy boys like Zhen Wu.

'He's a small frog in a well that wants to marry a princess,' Chu Lan said.

'Chu Lan, don't say anything else,' Lam Ting said.

The truth was Zhen Wu was framed. Zhen Wu was sleeping on a desk when Lam Ting collected college assignments on behalf of a tutor. A love letter fell out of Lam Ting's textbook onto Zhen Wu's desk, and she took Yue's company

prototype design by mistake. Zhen Wu chased after Lam Ting to exchange the love letter and the design. Zhen Wu wasn't interested in having a girlfriend, and he didn't bother to clear the misunderstanding because he knew the rumor would quiet down soon.

'Look out the window,' the first student said. 'Isn't she the exchange student from Italy?'

'What's there to look at?' the second student asked.

'She's Lucy Brenda,' the first student said. 'She's the heiress of Dawson's company, and she's more beautiful than Lam Ting. All the boys want to date her.'

'You have no chance with her,' the second student said.

'I can admire from a close distance,' the first student said.

Last night Zhen Wu stayed up reviewing Yue's company financial reports. He thought he could catch up on sleep at college, but the gossip in the tutorial room were like a thousand bees buzzing around his head.

A tutor escorted Lucy into the tutorial room.

'Hello,' Lucy greeted. 'I'm Lucy Brenda. It's my privilege to study at this college.'

'Lucy, it's our privilege you're studying at this college,' most of the boys in the tutorial room cheered.

'Everyone go back to your seats,' the tutor said. 'Lucy take a seat anywhere.'

Most of the boys cleared the books and stationary off the seat next to them because they hoped Lucy would sit next to them. They were disappointed when Lucy chose to sit next to the sleeping Zhen Wu.

Zhen Wu sensed there were many people giving him daggers. He opened his eyes, and the boys in the room were glaring at him. Then he turned around and he was startled to see someone sitting next to him.

'Hello,' Lucy greeted and smiled at Zhen Wu.

Old students or new students were the same to Zhen Wu, he didn't recognise

any of the students.

'Hello,' Zhen Wu greeted and went back to sleep.

The students in the class were used to Zhen Wu's aloofness toward them.

Lucy diligently wrote lecture notes, and if someone stared at her, she would smile politely at them.

Zhen Wu woke up after the tutorial class ended, and packed his bag.

'You can borrow my notes,' Lucy said.

'Thank you,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu accepted Lucy's notes. Her handwriting was impeccable.

'My pleasure,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu walked to the front gate. Every time he turned around, Lucy smiled at him. He must have gone crazy because he smiled back at her. If there wasn't only one entry and exit gate, he would have thought Lucy was following him.

Although Zhen Wu didn't remember Lucy, she was happy to be by his side after more than ten years. She stood at the front gate, and watched him walk home. When she couldn't see him anymore, she took out a gold pearl, held it to the sky and it sparkled.

At home, Zhen Wu walked past Yue Ni who was always cursing someone on the phone. He thought Yue Ni's personality was more like Ling Jia than Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen. He entered the kitchen where Yue Gu Zai was making dinner.

'Dad, where's mum?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Your mum's in the lab,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Go wash up and dinner will be ready.'

Yue Gu Zai set the table in the dining room. He was angry to see Yue Ni dyed her hair burgundy.

'Yue Ni, dye your hair back to your natural hair color,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Ni frowned and picked up her keys.

'Dad, are you having that time of the month again?' Yue Ni asked. 'It's been more than a week since mum hasn't come out of the lab. You're using me as

your punching bag to vent your frustrations.'

'Yue Ni, where are you going?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Running away from home,' Yue Ni said. 'My dad doesn't love me. I'm going to small dad's home.'

Yue Ni waved bye to Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Wu and she ran to her car.

Zhen Wu shook his head. It was Shu Tang Jue's fault for spoiling Yue Ni, he pitied Yue Gu Zai.

Yue Gu Zai cursed Shu Tang Jue. Why did Shu Tang Jue hog Yue Ni affections when Shu Tang Jue had Shu Tang Li?

'Zhen Wu, go call your mum to eat dinner,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Dad, I'll do my best,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu walked toward the lab. Zhen Zhen skipped sleep and meals when she was experimenting inside the lab.

Yue Gu Zai was frustrated he didn't get to sleep with Zhen Zhen when she was in work mode.

'Zhen Wu, tell your mum if she doesn't come out to eat dinner, I'll blow up her lab,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Zhen Wu thought Yue Ni was right, Yue Gu Zai was having that time of the month again.

That night Zhen Wu couldn't sleep because Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen stayed up all night bickering about Yue Gu Zai threatening to blow up Zhen Zhen's lab.

In the morning, Zhen Wu rode a bicycle to college with panda eyes. When he entered his morning tutorial room, a girl with a long pair of legs bumped into him.

'I'm sorry,' Lucy said. 'I didn't see you.'

Zhen Wu suspected Lucy didn't accidentally bump into him.

'It's my fault,' Zhen Wu said. 'I should have looked out for a pig's legs.'

Zhen Wu learned how to insult people from Ling Jia. But unlike Yue Ni, he

rarely insulted people.

Lucy laughed, and it was music to most of the boys in the room.

Zhen Wu looked at Lucy's smiling face, and he remembered about the notes she loaned him. He took out her notes from his bag and gave the notes back to her.

'Thank you for the notes,' Zhen Wu said.

'My pleasure,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu yawned and walked to a seat in the back row. Lucy followed him and sat next to him.

Lam Ting purposely chose an unpopular elective so she could have some peace away from the rowdy boys who chased her. She resented Lucy for choosing the same elective because the boys in their year changed their classes to match Lucy's classes.

Chu Lan kicked Zhen Wu's seat.

'If you're going to sleep in class, go home and make room for students who want to learn,' Chu Lan said.

Lucy frowned, she was angry Chu Lan disturbed Zhen Wu's sleep.

'Hey did you hear me?' Chu Lan asked. 'Make room for Lam Ting and me to sit.'

Zhen Wu moved his seat closer to Lucy's seat to make room for Lam Ting and Chu Lan to sit.

Chu Lan kicked Zhen Wu's seat again, because Chu Lan wanted Zhen Wu to sit somewhere else.

'Chu Lan, forget it,' Lam Ting said. 'Let's sit.'

Since Chu Lan and Lam Ting helped Lucy to sit closer to Zhen Wu, Lucy let their rudeness slide.

Half way through the tutorial class, Zhen Wu's phone rang.

'Hello,' Zhen Wu greeted.

'Big brother, where are you?' Yue Ni asked. 'I'm near your campus. I want to

use your car.'

'Yue Ni, where's your car?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Don't ask,' Yue Ni said.

'I only have a bicycle,' Zhen Wu said.

'Big brother, you're the CEO of Yue's company and leader of Ni Sheng,' Yue Ni said. 'Why are you so stingy?'

'Riding a bicycle is good for the environment and good exercise,' Zhen Wu said.
'Do you want to use my bicycle or not?'

'Yes,' Yue Ni said. 'I'll be right there. Wait for me.'

Zhen Wu hung up and he wanted to go back to sleep.

'You ride a bicycle?' Lucy asked. 'Next time can you give me a lift on your bicycle?'

'OK,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu agreed because Lucy loaned her notes to him.

'Look at the two country bumpkins,' Chu Lan said. 'What century are we living in? These two country bumpkins still want to ride a bicycle.'

Zhen Wu and Lucy weren't bothered by insults from a mosquito.

'You in the back seat,' the tutor said. 'Explain this theory to the class.'

The tutor was angry with students like Zhen Wu who slept and caused a nuisance in class.

'Do you mean me?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Yes you,' the tutor said.

The elective was Greek theology and text books were written in Greek. The tutor wanted to embarrass Zhen Wu and use him to warn the other students to be attentive during the tutorial class.

Lam Ting disagreed with the tutor's method of disciplining a disruptive student. Even she struggled to read the Greek words on the board.

The room became silent. Most of the students were anticipating Zhen Wu to

embarrass himself.

Lucy looked at the board. She could understand the Greek words on the board but she could only read each Greek word slowly.

Zhen Wu was sleeping during the class, how was he supposed to know what theory the tutor wanted him to explain?

Zhen Wu looked at Lucy, she pointed to a textbook page. He opened his textbook, and silently read the Greek words on the page. Then he stood and explained the theory to the class.

The tutor wanted to point out the flaws in Zhen Wu's explanation but Zhen Wu's explanation was accurate and straight forward for the class to understand.

Zhen Wu called the tutor a couple of times before the tutor heard him.

'You... can sit down,' the tutor said. 'Next time pay attention during class.'

Zhen Wu sat down. Lam Ting and Chu Lan looked strangely at Zhen Wu. They couldn't believe Zhen Wu could explain the Greek theory flawlessly, because he slept during class.

Lucy smiled at Zhen Wu. She knew her Zhen Wu was a genius.

Usually the boys ran out the room after a class, but they were thunder struck by Yue Ni. Yue Ni's burgundy hair, the piercings on each of her ears and the red leather dress made her look like a rebellious beauty. Yue Ni was only a fifteen-year-old, but she was tall, slender and looked mature for her age. She knew she was beautiful like Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen, although she looked more like Yue Gu Zai.

'Who's the boyfriend of the beautiful girl at the door?' a male student asked.

Zhen Wu packed his bag, and he looked at the door. He ran to Yue Ni, and he pulled her outside because he didn't want his classmates to find out about his identity.

'Yue Ni, why didn't you wait for me at the gate?' Zhen Wu asked.

Lam Ting and Lucy followed behind Zhen Wu.

'Is she your girlfriend?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu turned around and looked at Lucy.

'What girlfriend?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu didn't know why Lucy looked sick. He only wanted Yue Ni to leave the campus before anyone recognised Yue Ni.

'Yue Ni, didn't you want to use my bicycle?' Zhen Wu asked. 'Let's go.'

Yue Ni wasn't oblivious like Zhen Wu. Yue Ni could see Lucy was secretly in love with Zhen Wu.

Zhen Wu was right, Yue Ni was mischievous like Ling Jia. Yue Ni wrapped an arm around Zhen Wu and she smiled sweetly at him.

'Big brother, I changed my mind,' Yue Ni said. 'I want you to give me a lift home.'

'Yue Ni are you sure?' Zhen Wu asked. 'Because I don't know if I'm worthy enough to give our family's little princess a lift home.'

'Big brother, it's your lucky day,' Yue Ni said. 'You have the honor of giving me a lift home today.'

Lucy stood heartbroken at the front gate. She watched Zhen Wu happily give Yue Ni a ride home on his bicycle. She was wrong. She thought if Zhen Wu spent time with her then he would remember her. She didn't expect Zhen Wu would have a girlfriend. Zhen Wu looked like he loved his girlfriend. It meant she didn't have a chance to be with Zhen Wu.

Lam Ting was driven home. She rejected Li Tu who was a rich second son so she didn't know why she was drawn to the country bumpkin Zhen Wu riding a bicycle, who she heard was a mistress' son.

Zhen Wu obviously rode his bicycle home while Yue Ni hugged his waist.

'Big brother, today dad asked me if I wanted to take over Ni Sheng,' Yue Ni said.

'Yue Ni, I'll support your decision,' Zhen Wu said.

Although Zhen Wu was tired from managing Yue's company and Ni Sheng at the same time, Yue Gu Zai had done the same thing for many years. Zhen Wu

was happy to hand over Ni Sheng to Yue Ni, because he thought Yue Ni was more suitable to be the leader of Ni Sheng than him.

‘Big brother, are you tired?’ Yue Ni asked.

‘Yue Ni, it doesn’t matter if I’m tired,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘What I care about is if my precious little sister wants to take over Ni Sheng. If you don’t want to, I won’t force you. Yue Ni, what about the Tan Lang’s districts your small dad made you in charge of?’

‘Small dad gave those districts to me to play with,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Big brother, I heard uncle Wo resigned.’

Yue Ni hated seeing Zhen Wu overworked. Since Wo Ta Tian resigned from Yue’s company, Zhen Wu was sleep deprived.

‘Uncle Wo resigned because dad delegated all of his duties at Yue’s company to uncle Wo,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Uncle Wo said working at Yue’s company made him too busy to find a wife.’

Yue Ni scoffed.

‘More like uncle Wo has too many women and he doesn’t know who to marry,’ Yue Ni said.

Zhen Wu laughed.

‘Big brother, give Ni Sheng to me,’ Yue Ni said.

‘OK,’ Zhen Wu said.

At home it was the first time Yue Ni saw Zhen Zhen stepped out of the lab in the last fortnight. But Yue Ni almost dropped her bag when she saw Zhen Zhen carry a baby.

‘Mum... dad is going to go berserk,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Mum, did you have a love chid with another man?’

Zhen Zhen happily played with the baby boy in her arms.

‘Yue Ni, don’t say nonsense,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘True,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Mum, you’re always in the lab so you won’t have time to commit adultery. Mum, is the baby a robot?’

Yue Ni probed the baby for the switch, and the baby cried.

‘Mum, you made a realistic baby robot,’ Yue Ni praised.

Zhen Zhen hit Yue Ni’s probing hands.

‘Yue Ni, someone left this baby at our front door,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Wu walked into the living room, and he overheard Zhen Zhen and Yue Ni’s conversation.

‘Mum, do you want to keep the baby?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘Why not?’ Zhen Zhen asked. ‘Look how adorable this baby is.’

‘Mum, if you want to keep the baby then Yue Ni and I will love the baby as our sibling,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘But why did someone leave the baby at our front door?’

‘Zhen Wu, investigate this baby’s family background,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘If there are no complications then we’ll raise this baby.’

‘Yes mum,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Mum, is the baby a boy or a girl?’ Yue Ni asked. ‘What’s the baby’s name?’

‘It’s a baby boy,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Your dad said since we found him on the first day of the month, your dad named him Yue Di Yi.’

Zhen Wu was grateful he wasn’t named after the first day of the month.

Zhen Wu tickled Yue Di Yi’s stomach, and Yue Di Yi laughed.

Yue Ni walked into the kitchen, Yue Gu Zai was cooking dinner. Yue Gu Zai was happy to be a full time house husband after handing over Yue’s company and Ni Sheng to Zhen Wu and Yue Ni, because he got to spend more time with Zhen Zhen at home.

‘Dad, don’t you think it’s unfair you always have to cook?’ Yue Ni asked.

‘Yue Ni, do you want your mum to cook?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai couldn’t forget the first time he tasted Zhen Zhen’s cooking.

Yue Ni shook her head. She remembered the time she asked Zhen Zhen to cook a meal for her when Yue Gu Zai was working overtime. The taste of Zhen Zhen’s cooking was unforgettable.

‘Yue Ni, go wash up before dinner,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Dad, big brother agreed to give Ni Sheng to me,’ Yue Ni said.

‘Yue Ni, your big brother and I believe you’re more suitable to be the leader of Ni Sheng,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘But your big brother and I only want you to be happy. Are you sure you want Ni Sheng?’

‘Dad, I should earn my keep after living off you and mum for many years,’ Yue Ni said. ‘But dad, if I bankrupt Ni Sheng, you have to take responsibility.’

Yue Gu Zai rubbed Yue Ni’s head affectionately.

‘My little monkey, don’t take being the leader of Ni Sheng lightly,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

End of Chapter Sixty-Seven

Related



Chapter Sixty-Eight

Next in line.

In the last week, Yue Ni picked up Zhen Wu from college in a different sports car each day. Zhen Wu's classmates speculated Yue Ni was Zhen Wu's sugar mummy.

Zhen Wu sat in Yue Ni's car and sighed.

'Yue Ni, must you show off your flashy cars?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Big brother if I don't show off my cars then I wouldn't be your little sister,' Yue Ni said.

'You'll still be my little sister if you choose one car to drive,' Zhen Wu said.

'Big brother, the cars were given to me as gifts,' Yue Ni said. 'It'll be a waste if I

don't drive my cars.'

Yue Ni drove Zhen Wu to Yue's company. Then she followed him to his office through the back door.

'Big brother, when are you going to announce you're the CEO of Yue's company and use the front entrance?' Yue Ni asked.

'For now only uncle Wo and my secretary knows I'm the CEO,' Zhen Wu said.

In the marketing department of Yue's company, some female employees were gossiping.

'Did you hear Li Cheng the CEO of Tu's company divorced his first wife?' the first woman asked.

'I heard Li Cheng's first love came back from the U.S. and he's marrying his first love,' the second woman said.

'Li Cheng was married for five years but no one has met his first wife,' the first woman said.

'Li Cheng's first wife must be ugly,' the second woman said.

'If everyone is done gossiping, get back to work,' Mr Chu said. 'Su Xiao Ya, when you're done with the marketing plans and budgets, bring them to my office.'

'Yes Mr Chu,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya sat at her desk and remembered the day Li Cheng brought a woman home and he asked her to sign the divorce papers. Li Cheng's father forced him to marry her. For five years, Li Cheng resented her. She cried when she signed the divorce papers. Li Cheng looked happy with his new woman.

Li Cheng generously gave Shu Xiao Ya the house they lived in and three hundred thousand dollars after she signed the divorce papers. She sold the house because she didn't want to live somewhere she was unloved for five years. Qua Qua was right, she shouldn't have loved someone who didn't love her.

Su Xiao Ya kept herself busy with work. After work, she rushed to her second job in another building. When she ran to the elevators she bumped into a man.

'I'm sorry,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya was shocked the man she bumped into was Li Cheng.

'Li Cheng, do you know this woman?' Hang Jia Mei asked.

'No,' Li Cheng said.

Li Cheng escorted Hang Jia Mei outside. Then he ran back into the building and he dragged Su Xiao Ya to a corner.

'Why are you here?' Li Cheng asked. 'Are you following me?'

'No,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'I don't believe you,' Li Cheng said. 'What do you want? More money? Is three hundred thousand dollars not enough for you?'

'I don't want your money,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Li Cheng took out a cheque, signed it and gave it to Su Xiao Ya.

'Here's a cheque for one hundred thousand dollars if you promise to stay away from me,' Li Cheng said.

Su Xiao Ya looked at the man she lived together for five years. She knew all his habits. He preferred seafood over meat, he liked to read before bed and open windows instead of turning on the air-conditioner during summers. They lived together for five years yet he knew nothing about her.

Su Xiao Ya gripped the cheque in her hand, and told herself to endure the pain. It was pointless to explain anything to someone who didn't understand her and who didn't care about her.

For the first time, Su Xiao Ya lost her control in front of Li Cheng. She threw the cheque at his face and she ran upstairs.

'Miss Su, why are you late today?' a manager asked.

'I'm sorry,' Su Xiao Ya said. She wiped her tears. 'Today I'm feeling unwell. Can I take sick leave?'

'Alright,' the manager said. 'Take care of your health.'

'Thank you,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Li Cheng overheard Su Xiao Ya's conversation with the manager. Li Cheng had misunderstood her. Wasn't three hundred thousand dollars enough? She had a job, why did she have to work a second job?

Su Xiao Ya ran out of building. She didn't watch where she was going, and a car braked before it ran her over.

Huyen Di got out of the car.

'Miss, are you injured?' Huyen Di asked.

Su Xiao Ya shook her head. She had to stay alive. If she died, there was no one to take care of her little sister, Su Xiao Min.

Huyen Di nodded his head. He got back into his car and left.

Su Xiao Ya ran home, and she heard Su Xiao Min crying in the living room 'Big sister...' Su Xiao Min called.

'Xiao Min, it's OK,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'Big sister is here.'

'Bitch, you're home,' Su Wu Chun said. 'Where's the money? Isn't today your pay day?'

'I've given you one hundred thousand dollars,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya needed to save the rest of the divorce money to support Su Xiao Min through school and for their daily staples. If Su Wu Chun didn't have custody of Su Xiao Min, she would have given him nothing.

'One hundred thousand dollars isn't enough,' Su Wu Chun said. 'I still owe money. Give me another one hundred thousand dollars.'

'I don't have money,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'Where's your rich husband?' Su Wu Chun asked. 'Doesn't he give you a monthly allowance?'

'No,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'What do you mean no?' Su Wu Chun asked and raised his hand to hit Su Xiao Ya and Su Xiao Min.

Su Xiao Ya hugged Su Xiao Min and protected Su Xiao Min from Su Wu Chun.

'There's no money because we're divorced,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'Are you satisfied?'

Su Wu Chun didn't know where Su Xiao Ya found the courage to talk back to him. He punched Su Xiao Ya's face.

'Bitch, what do you mean divorce?' Su Wu Chun asked. 'With your ugly face, where are you going to find another rich husband? Go back and do whatever it takes to beg him to take you back. Get back my money. I don't care if you threaten to commit suicide in front of him, I want my money now.'

'Don't hit my big sister!' Su Xiao Min said.

Su Xiao Min let go of Su Xiao Ya. Su Xiao Min pushed Su Wu Chun back. He lost his balance, fell down and hit his head on the glass coffee table. Su Xiao Min was scared to see his head bleed and she hid her face on Su Xiao Ya's chest.

'Big sister... I didn't mean to...' Su Xiao Min said.

'Xiao Min, don't be scared,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'You didn't do anything.'

'You little bitch!' Su Wu Chun said. He got off the floor. 'You dare push me? Look at what you did? You made my head bleed. Today I'm going to give you a beating you won't forget.'

'Stop!' Su Xiao Ya said. 'Didn't you say you want money? I'll give you all my money.'

Su Xiao Ya didn't know what else to do to protect Su Xiao Min. Su Xiao Ya handed over all her money in her bag to Su Wu Chun.

'Bitch, at least you know how to be reasonable,' Su Wu Chun said.

Su Wu Chun left to go gambling. Su Xiao Ya and Su Xiao Min held onto their trembling bodies.

Su Xiao Ya was scared Su Wu Chun would be back after he gambled all the money. She quickly packed hers and Su Xiao Min's clothes and she took Su Xiao Min to Qua Qua's house.

'Xiao Ya, did he hit you and Xiao Min again?' Qua Qua asked.

'Qua Qua...' Su Xiao Ya said.

‘Why didn’t you come here sooner?’ Qua Qua asked. ‘Xiao Ya, your thighs, your face.’

‘I was clumsy,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

‘Xiao Ya...’ Qua Qua said.

‘Qua Qua, you don’t have to say anything,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

‘Alright,’ Qua Qua said. ‘I’ll go tidy up the guest room for you and Xiao Min.’

Su Xiao Ya wasn’t ugly. She had beautiful eyes. If she spent money on herself to dress well, she would have looked decent.

Later Qua Qua came out of the guest room, Su Xiao Min was sleeping on the sofa next to Su Xiao Ya.

‘Let me carry Xiao Min to the guest room,’ Qua Qua said.

‘I’ll carry her,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

‘You should sleep,’ Qua Qua said. ‘You need to work tomorrow.’

Su Xiao Ya nodded her head. She wanted to ask Qua Qua to loan her money, but she knew Qua Qua was poor too.

In the morning, Su Xiao Ya wore a simple black work dress and she hid the bruise on her face with makeup. She ignored her leg pain and went to work at Yue’s company.

At eleven in the morning, Su Xiao Ya knocked on Mr Chu’s office door.

‘Come in,’ Mr Chu said.

Su Xiao Ya walked in and she sat opposite Mr Chu. Mr Chu thought Su Xiao Ya was the most diligent employee in the marketing department. He poured her a cup of tea and smiled warmly at her.

‘Miss Su, if you need any help, you can ask me,’ Mr Chu said.

‘Mr Chu, I want to ask if I can receive my monthly salary in advance,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

Mr Chu knew Su Xiao Ya must be in trouble, because Su Xiao Ya was a frugal employee.

'Miss Su, can you tell me why you need money in advance?' Mr Chu asked.

'Mr Chu, I'm sorry for troubling you,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya stood to leave.

'Wait,' Mr Chu said. He signed a cheque for Su Xiao Ya's one month salary. 'Miss Su, you know about Yue's company pay policy that employees aren't allowed to receive their monthly salary in advance. Take this as a loan from me. After you receive your monthly salary, you can pay me back.'

'Thank you Mr Chu,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'I promise I'll pay you back when I receive my monthly salary.'

'Miss Su, let me treat you lunch,' Mr Chu said.

'Thank you Mr Chu,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'But I brought lunch today.'

Su Xiao Ya ate two buns and she worked throughout the afternoon.

While Su Xiao Ya worked, the other female employees spent the afternoon grooming themselves because Ni Sheng representatives were scheduled to come for an audit that afternoon. They all dreamt of marrying one of Ni Sheng's handsome directors.

That afternoon, Huyen Di and his secretary Miss Tong came to audit the marketing department of Yue's company.

'Mr Huyen, Miss Tong,' Mr Chu greeted.

'Mr Chu,' Huyen Di greeted.

Huyen Di had discussed with Zhen Wu that frequent audits by Ni Sheng weren't necessary after Zhen Wu settled into his CEO position.

'Miss Su, make Mr Huyen and Miss Tong cups of coffee,' Mr Chu said. 'Then bring the marketing plans and budgets you finalised yesterday into my office.'

'Yes Mr Chu,' Su Xiao Ya said.

The other female employees resented the ugly Su Xiao Ya got to make coffee for Huyen Di. But they weren't threatened by Su Xiao Ya because Huyen Di wouldn't be attracted to the ugly Su Xiao Ya.

Su Xiao Ya brought coffee, the marketing plans and budgets to Mr Chu's office.

She kept her head down so she didn't see Huyen Di was looking at the bruises on her thighs.

Half an hour later, Huyen Di and Miss Tong were satisfied with the marketing plans and budgets. They walked outside Mr Chu's office, Miss Tong ignored the flirtatious looks the female employees gave Huyen Di, because she was used to seeing women wanting to attract Huyen Di's attention.

Su Xiao Ya was relieved the audit went smoothly. She was startled when Huyen Di walked up to her desk.

'Mr Huyen,' Su Xiao Ya said and stood.

'Sit down,' Huyen Di said.

Su Xiao Ya sat down on her chair.

'Your legs are injured,' Huyen Di said. 'Come with me to the hospital.'

'I don't need to go to the hospital,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya couldn't afford to pay for hospital treatments.

Huyen Di remembered his car hit Su Xiao Ya yesterday. If he knew she was injured, he would have driven her to the hospital yesterday.

'You have two options,' Huyen Di said. 'You can volunteer to go to the hospital or I'll take you to the hospital.'

Su Xiao Ya couldn't remember the driver who accidentally hit her yesterday, because she was shaken by Li Cheng.

'I'll go to the hospital myself,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Huyen Di nodded his head and left. He wasn't going to fuss over an ordinary person.

Su Xiao Ya didn't go to the hospital after work. She would only take Su Xiao Min to the hospital if Su Xiao Min was sick. She tidied her work desk then she rushed to her second job.

Su Xiao Ya liked working at Yue's company. Mr Chu was a good manager, and her workload was reasonable. It wasn't laborious like cleaning toilets.

'Isn't the money I gave you enough?' Li Cheng asked. 'Why do you need to

come here to clean toilets after work?’

Li Cheng didn’t know why he was angry when he heard Su Xiao Ya sold the house they lived in. He used to give her a thirty thousand dollar monthly allowance. He didn’t know why Su Xiao Ya needed to work if she had saved all the money he gave her.

‘Cleaning toilets is my business,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

‘What do you think will happen if people found out my ex-wife is cleaning toilets?’ Li Cheng asked.

It was strange why Li Cheng was angry to see Su Xiao Ya clean toilets.

‘When we were married you didn’t acknowledge I was your wife,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘Now we’re divorced, no one will care that I’m cleaning toilets.’

Li Cheng remembered he married a timid Su Xiao Ya. He didn’t expect her to disagree with him.

‘Come home with me,’ Li Cheng said.

‘I’m not going anywhere,’ Su Xiao Ya said. She pushed Li Cheng’s arm away. ‘I have toilets to clean.’

‘Why do you need to degrade yourself?’ Li Cheng asked.

‘I’m not degrading myself,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘I’m not stealing or doing anything wrong. I’m working to support myself. I need money.’

‘Why are you this desperate for money?’ Li Cheng asked.

‘Yes, I’m desperate for money,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘I don’t care what work I do to earn money, even cleaning toilets.’

‘OK,’ Li Cheng said. ‘Come with me and I’ll give you money.’

Li Cheng didn’t want Su Xiao Ya to embarrass him by cleaning toilets.

‘Let go of my arm,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘I need to work.’

Outside the bathroom, Huyen Di helped free Su Xiao Ya from Li Cheng.

‘Why aren’t you at the hospital?’ Huyen Di asked.

‘I...’ Su Xiao Ya said.

'Who are you?' Li Cheng asked.

Li Cheng was displeased to see another man take Su Xiao Ya away.

Huyen Di dismissed the Li Cheng. Huyen Di thought Su Xiao Ya looked like she was going to faint. Huyen Di supported her to his car.

'Where are you taking me?' Su Xiao Ya asked.

'To the hospital,' Huyen Di said.

'I don't want to go to the hospital,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'Why?' Huyen Di asked.

'I don't have money,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'I'll pay for your hospital treatments,' Huyen Di said.

'The point is, it's my decision whether I want to go to the hospital or not,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'I caused your injury,' Huyen Di said. 'After you recover, I won't care if you go to the hospital or not.'

Su Xiao Ya didn't argue with Huyen Di if he was the driver that hit her yesterday.

Huyen Di took Su Xiao Ya to be examined by Bai Yu Tian.

Chu Gian was in a nightgown when she opened the door for Huyen Di and Su Xiao Ya.

'Where's the Bai fox?' Huyen Di asked.

Chu Gian turned to yell in the direction of the bedroom door.

'Bai fox, old man Huyen Di is looking for you,' Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian went into the bathroom and changed clothes. Afterward she walked to the front door to put on her shoes.

'Chu Gian, why aren't you taking responsibility after you ate me?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

Chu Gian took off the vintage bracelet Ling Jia gave her and she passed it to Bai Yu Tian.

‘Next Tuesday is an auspicious day to get married,’ Chu Gian said. ‘Prepare your family birth register. I’ll come pick you up next Tuesday.’

‘I don’t think it’s an auspicious day,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

‘It doesn’t matter,’ Chu Gian said. ‘Whether you’re alive or dead, you’ll always be my man. It’s your fault for being born with a phoenix tattoo. If you have guts, take your heart out now. Registering a marriage is only paperwork. If you don’t want to marry me then I’m free.’

‘Next Tuesday, pick me up on time,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

Chu Gian put on her jacket and waved bye to Bai Yu Tian.

‘Old man Huyen Di, I’m heading off,’ Chu Gian said.

Huyen Di laughed to see Bai Yu Tian look disgruntled.

Bai Yu Tian gave Su Xiao Ya a thorough examination.

‘Bai fox, can you be gentler?’ Huyen Di asked.

‘Do you want to examine her yourself?’ Bai Yu Tian asked.

Huyen Di silently let Bai Yu Tian continue to examine Su Xiao Ya.

‘Huyen Di, I didn’t think you’ll be the next in line after boss,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

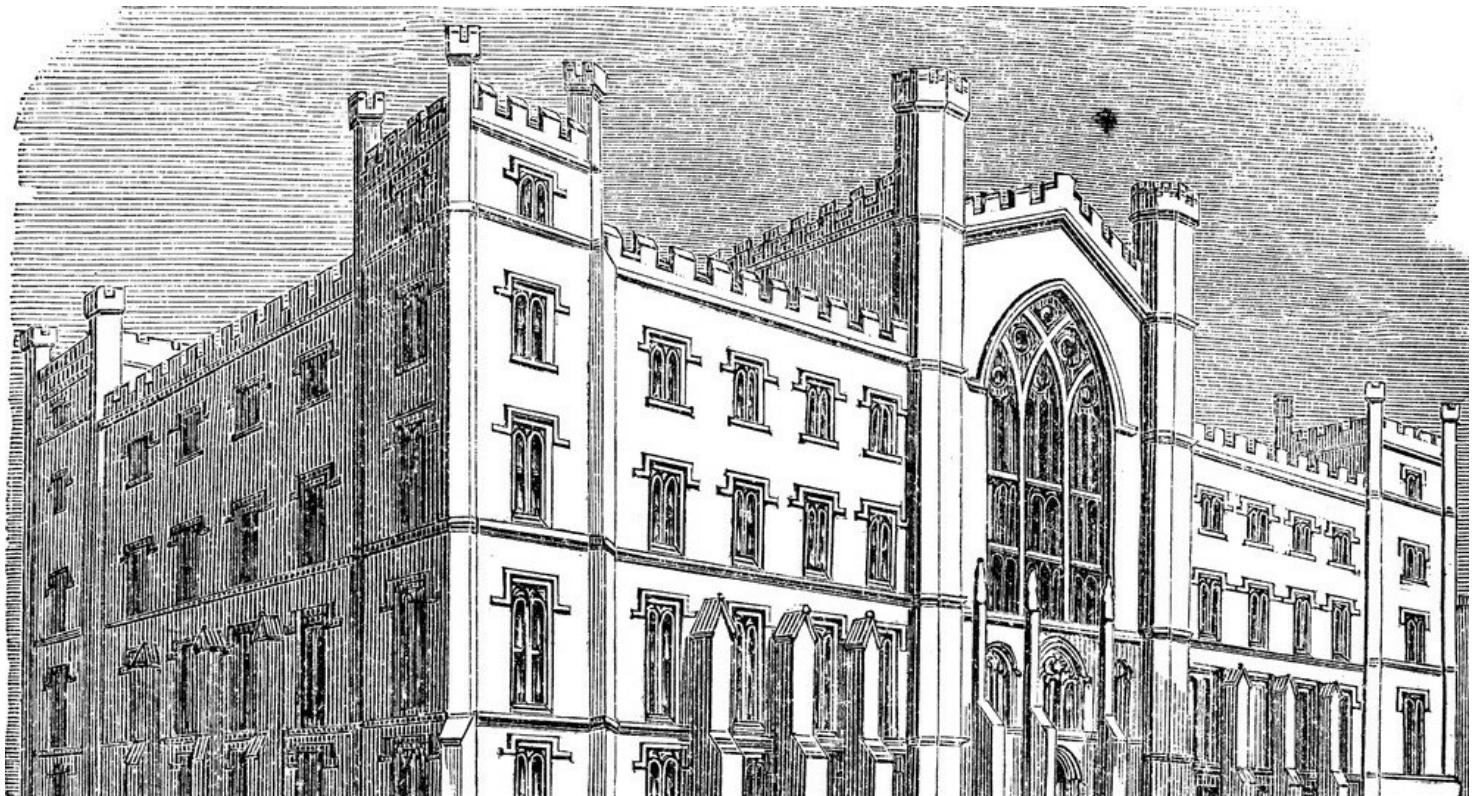
‘Bai fox, what do you mean?’ Huyen Di asked.

‘She’s pregnant,’ Bai Yu Tian said.

End of Chapter Sixty-Eight

Related

part 1



Chapter Sixty-Nine (Part 1)

Student council.

'Zhen Wu,' Lucy called.

Zhen Wu stopped his bicycle outside the college front gate. Lucy was waiting for him under a tree. Her smile was beautiful like in a memory buried deep in his mind.

Lucy hopped onto the back seat.

'You promised to give me a lift,' Lucy said. 'You can't break your promise. Take me to the student council's building.'

Zhen Wu remembered he promised to give Lucy a lift to thank her for the notes she loaned him. He pedalled while they chatted.

'I heard you defeated Lam Ting to be the president of the student council,' Zhen Wu said.

'It's true,' Lucy said. 'Why?'

Lucy loved the way Zhen Wu's hair shone under the sunlight.

'Congratulations,' Zhen Wu said.

'Thank you,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu's congratulations was more meaningful to Lucy than all the congratulations combined from their classmates.

'We're here,' Zhen Wu said.

Lucy hopped off the bicycle.

'Aren't you coming inside?' Lucy asked.

'Why do I need to go inside?' Zhen Wu asked.

'You signed up to be on the student council too,' Lucy said. 'Today is an official student council meeting to elect new members.'

Zhen Wu looked at Lucy's beautiful smiling face. He remembered he was sleeping during a tutorial class when Lucy gave him a form to sign. She tricked him to sign by saying it was a student attendance form.

'Come inside,' Lucy said. 'There are many students who signed up to be on the student council. You have a low chance of being elected.'

Lucy only joined the student council because she wanted to spend time with Zhen Wu before she returned to Italy.

Zhen Wu changed his mind about Lucy being adorable. It was true about looks and charm being deceiving. When she pulled him into the student council meeting room, there was only a handful of students. What many students signed up?

The historian of the student council was Sun Ling Hui.

'Zhen Wu is a twenty-two-year-old male,' Sun Ling Hui reported. 'He's unpopular, and rumored to be the love child of a businessman's mistress. He is the only student on campus who rides a bicycle. He gave a love letter to the vice-president of the student council, and he is rumored to be bitter from the rejection. To recover from his wounded ego, he found himself a sugar mummy. Lately there is a rumor the president of the student council is secretly in love with him. Judging by the way the president of the student council walking closely together with him into the student council meeting room, the rumor appears to

be true.'

Zhen Wu thought the rumors about him were laughable, and not worth confirming or denying.

'Can you give me your name?' Zhen Wu asked.

'I'm Sun Ling Hui,' Sun Ling Hui said. 'If you're elected as a student council member, I'll help you publish a favorable biography in the college magazine.'

'Everyone's here now,' Lam Ting said. 'Let's start the meeting.'

Lam Ting didn't understand why Lucy insisted Zhen Wu should be elected as a student council member.

'I oppose the president of the student council's decision to elect Zhen Wu as the secretary of the student council,' Lam Ting said. 'I believe Mei Jia is a better candidate to be the secretary than Zhen Wu. If Zhen Wu is the secretary, it'll harm the reputation of the student council.'

'I've weighed up all of Mei Jia and Zhen Wu's college achievements,' Lucy said. 'Zhen Wu won first prize for every competition Mei Jia entered like the essay competition. Zhen Wu is the best candidate to be the secretary.'

Zhen Wu didn't remember entering or winning an essay competition.

Lucy showed everyone the official records of Mei Jia and Zhen Wu's college achievements.

Everyone was waiting for Zhen Wu to confirm the records were real while Zhen Wu stared at his name next to the competitions he won but didn't remember entering.

Sun Ling Hui was itching to report the latest gossip from the student council meeting. She wanted to report about Lam Ting being bitter about Zhen Wu falling for Lucy's charms, which was why Lam Ting opposed Lucy's decision to elect Zhen Wu to be the secretary of the student council.

Zhen Wu put his hand up to support Lam Ting. He was busy managing Yue's company. He had no time to be the secretary of the student council.

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Wu said. 'No one needs to debate whether I'm suitable to be secretary or not, because I have no interest in being a member of the student

council.'

Zhen Wu stood, and he left the student council meeting room.

'President, we didn't reject Zhen Wu,' Tu Tai Chun said. 'It was Zhen Wu who walked out on us.'

Lucy had prepared for Zhen Wu to walk out of the student council meeting room. She inserted a CD into a laptop connected to the screen projector.

'Dawson's company security software wasn't an in-house design,' Lucy said. 'It was bought from a third party. The third party's initials are C.Y., who is Zhen Wu's alias.'

'Impossible,' Lam Ting said.

If Zhen Wu was C.Y., Lam Ting would raise both of her hands to elect Zhen Wu to have any position he wanted on the student council.

'What proof do you have that C.Y. is Zhen Wu's alias?' Tu Tai Chun asked.

'Are you doubting the integrity of Dawson's company?' Lucy asked.

Tu Tai Chun wouldn't dare. One bad word against Dawson's company and his family's company would be bankrupt.

'It's settled,' Lucy said. 'Zhen Wu will be elected as the secretary and Mei Jia will be elected as the treasurer.'

Outside the student council meeting room, Zhen Wu called Yue Ni on the phone.

'Hello,' Yue Ni greeted.

'Yue Ni, did you enter competitions under my name without my permission?' Zhen Wu asked.

'It's possible,' Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni remembered one time she wanted a rare watch she saw listed as a first prize reward for a competition. Zhen Wu kept his private essays and prototype designs in the study room. She used them to enter competitions under his name, he won all the first prizes including the rare watch she wanted.

'Yue Ni, don't you think you should have asked for my permission?' Zhen Wu

asked.

‘Big brother, if I asked for your permission, would you have agreed to let me use them?’ Yue Ni asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Big brother, it’s your honor to win first prizes for your little sister,’ Yue Ni said. ‘I love the watch prize the best. Big brother, you have to promise not to tell dad.’

Zhen Wu hung up the phone and he shook his head. He didn’t know what to do with the unreasonable Yue Ni. He looked at his watch, there was still time for him to go see Bai Yu Tian. Zhen Zhen asked him to get a prescription for Yue Di Yi’s cold.

End of Chapter Sixty-Nine (Part 1)

Related

part 2



Chapter Sixty-Nine (Part 2 of 2)

Wall.

‘Uncle Huyen, what are you doing here?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘Young master, I brought a friend here for a medical examination,’ Huyen Di said.

‘Uncle Huyen, a male friend or your girlfriend?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘Young master, she isn’t my girlfriend,’ Huyen Di said.

‘Uncle Huyen, is uncle Bai here?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘No,’ Huyen Di said. ‘He and Chu Gian are getting married today.’

‘Getting married?’ Zhen Wu asked. ‘Is uncle Bai marrying into aunty Chu’s family?’

It was no secret that Bai Tu Tian wanted to marry Chu Gian for many years, but Chu Gian refused.

‘Young master, don’t repeat your joke to him,’ Huyen Di said.

‘Uncle Huyen, if I dare repeat my joke in front of uncle Bai then I’m not a genius,’ Zhen Wu said.

The doctor who examined Su Xiao Ya followed her outside.

'Out of you two men, who is the baby's father?' the doctor asked.

'Doctor, what's wrong?' Huyen Di asked before Su Xiao Ya could explain.

'Sir, what sort of a husband and father are you?' the doctor asked. 'Do you know how poor your wife's body condition is? By the way you're dressed, you look like you can afford proper health care for your wife and baby. Will it kill you to buy nutritious meals for your wife to eat? Your wife doesn't want to keep the baby. If you're forcing her to abort the baby then you're not human. If you didn't want to have a baby then you shouldn't have impregnated your wife. Think about it, if your father forced your mother to abort you then you wouldn't be standing here. Take your wife home, take good care of your wife and think carefully before you and your wife make a decision about the baby.'

The doctor walked back into the room, and closed the door.

'I'm sorry the doctor misunderstood,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'It doesn't matter,' Huyen Di said. 'Let's go.'

'Uncle Huyen, can you give me a lift too?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu was curious about Huyen Di's girlfriend.

Huyen Di dropped off Su Xiao Ya home first.

'Xiao Ya, who was the man who drove you home in the fancy car?' Qua Qua asked.

'I'll go downstairs to buy you dinner,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'Xiao Ya, you didn't answer my question,' Qua Qua said. 'Don't tell me you got back together with your bad ex-husband.'

'Are you saying Li Cheng called you?' Su Xiao Ya asked.

'Yes,' Qua Qua said. 'Li Cheng asked me where you're staying. I didn't tell him. He thinks you're here because I'm your closest friend. He doesn't know where your father lives. If Li Cheng wants you to get back together with him, say no.'

'Qua Qua, Li Cheng has a beautiful girlfriend,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'Even if he doesn't have a girlfriend, he wanted to escape from me a long time ago. It doesn't matter what he wants, you can ignore him.'

‘What’s good about his girlfriend?’ Qua Qua asked. ‘If you change the way you dress, you’ll look more beautiful than her. Xiao Ya, you look like you’re hiding something from me.’

‘Qua Qua, I’m pregnant,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

‘Li Cheng’s baby?’ Qua Qua asked.

‘That night he was drunk,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘He doesn’t remember what happened.’

Su Xiao Ya remembered Li Cheng mistook her for Zi Lan that night he was drunk. It was the first time he slept with her.

‘So he doesn’t know,’ Qua Qua said. ‘Xiao Ya, what do you want to do?’

‘When I went to the hospital to abort the baby I couldn’t go through with it,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘I can’t kill an innocent baby.’

‘Then give birth to the baby and we’ll raise the baby together,’ Qua Qua said.

Su Xiao Min arrived home, and she saw Su Xiao Ya crying.

‘Big sister, what happened?’ Su Xiao Min asked.

‘Xiao Min, I’m OK,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘Did you like your new school?’

‘Yes,’ Su Xiao Min said. ‘My teachers recommended I buy some advance textbooks. But I said it’s not necessary.’

‘Xiao Min, how much do the textbooks cost?’ Su Xiao Ya asked. ‘I’ll buy them for you.’

Su Xiao Min was a top student, and Su Xiao Ya wanted to give Su Xiao Min a good education.

‘Thank you big sister,’ Su Xiao Min said.

‘Alright,’ Qua Qua said. ‘It’s time to eat dinner. I’ll go buy a nutritious dinner. Your big sister is pregnant.’

‘Big sister, am I going to be an aunt?’ Su Xiao Min asked.

‘Yes,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

Outside the marriage registration building, Bai Yu Tian was upset he didn’t get

to have a wedding reception and a honeymoon with Chu Gian. He carefully put their marriage certificate in his bag.

'Chu Gian, shouldn't we have a health check?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'We don't need to,' Chu Gian said. She got into her sports car. 'I trust you're healthy.'

'What if you have an STD?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

Bai Yu Tian was frustrated Chu Gian was less feminine than him.

'So what if I do?' Chu Gian asked. 'We've slept with other without protection. If I have an STD then we can go to hell together. Get in the car, I want to take you somewhere.'

Bai Yu Tian sat in Chu Gian's car. He was happy after years of scheming, he finally got Chu Gian to marry him. Chu Gian was like a kite, she didn't want to be tied down. Although they loved each other, she loved her freedom too. If he didn't use tricks then they would have lived together unwed for another eighty years.

Chu Gian took Bai Yu Tian to her family home.

'Mistress, you're back,' a servant said.

'Um,' Chu Gian said.

Many servants greeted Chu Gian.

'Xiao Gian,' Wen Jian Fei called.

'Why are you here?' Chu Gian asked.

Bai Yu Tian had investigated everything about Chu Gian's past. He was unhappy she had a childhood sweetheart, Wen Jian Fei. If Wen Jian Fei dared to even dream about stealing Chu Gian from him, he was going to castrate Wen Jian Fei.

Fortunately for Wen Jian Fei's intact manhood, Chu Gian pushed Wen Jian Fei before he could hug her.

'Xiao Gian, you're cold toward me as usual,' Wen Jian Fei said. 'I heard your grandma say you'll be here today. Did you miss me?'

Bai Yu Tian wanted to sharpen a scalpel. Didn't Wen Jian Fei see he was standing next to Chu Gian?

'I didn't miss you,' Chu Gian said. 'I'm going to see grandma first. You two behave. No fighting.'

Bai Yu Tian wanted his love rival to make the first move so he could tell Chu Gian he castrated Wen Jian Fei because Wen Jian Fei attacked him first.

A minute later, Chu Gian walked back to the living room. She saw Bai Yu Tian drinking tea. Wen Jian Fei's pants was stuck to a wall, because a scalpel was lodged through Wen Jian Fei's pants, one centimetre below his balls.

'Xiao Gian, save me,' Wen Jian Fei said.

'Why should I save you?' Chu Gian asked. 'You didn't listen to me. I told you not to fight with the Bai fox. Bai fox, my grandma wants to see you.'

'Yes,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian was in a good mood. His wife took his side over Wen Jian Fei.

'Bai fox, be gentle with my grandma,' Chu Gian warned.

Bai Yu Tian kissed Chu Gian's forehead.

'I'll treat your grandma like a goddess,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian didn't expect his words would come true. Chu Gian's grandma's bedroom looked like a shrine. Chu Gian pulled Bai Yu Tian's shirt sleeve and they knelt in front of the vintage sofa behind beaded curtains, her grandma was sitting on the vintage sofa.

Bai Yu Tian's knees became numb after kneeling for half an hour. He was about to wiggle his feet, but Chu Gian pinched his leg and he didn't dare move.

Two servants parted the beaded curtains, and Chu Gian's grandma opened her eyes.

'Are you the little boy Bai?' grandma asked.

'Yes,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Xiao Gian, go outside,' grandma said.

'Yes grandma,' Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian gave Bai Yu Tian a warning look, she bowed to her grandma and left.

'It was the Bai Household who cursed the Chu Household,' grandma said. 'I didn't want Xiao Gian to marry you. But she said she loves you.'

'Yes grandma,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Xiao Gian loves her freedom,' grandma said. 'Even the little boy Wen couldn't enter Xiao Gian's heart. I thought she would be single for the rest of her life. As long as she's happy, I'm happy. Yesterday she called me, and said she's getting married today. I thought she was joking. I only believed her when she showed me the marriage certificate before you came in here. I don't care how you schemed to make her love you and want to marry you. I don't care if you married her because of the curse. If you married Xiao Gian then you need to be good to her for the rest of your life. Can you do that?'

'Grandma, I promise I'll love Xiao Gian and treat her well for rest of my life,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Promises can be broken,' grandma said. 'If you break your promise and mistreat Xiao Gian, I don't care even if the Chu Household falls apart, I'll do everything to make you and the Bai Household suffer.'

'Grandma, I won't ever give you a reason to distrust me,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Little boy Bai, you're not too bad,' grandma said. 'You can go.'

'Yes grandma,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian stood slowly, and walked outside. Chu Gian was relieved to see he was in one piece.

'Did grandma bully you?' Chu Gian asked.

'No,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Grandma said I'm a good man.'

Bai Yu Tian draped arm around Chu Gian's shoulder and they walked to the front door.

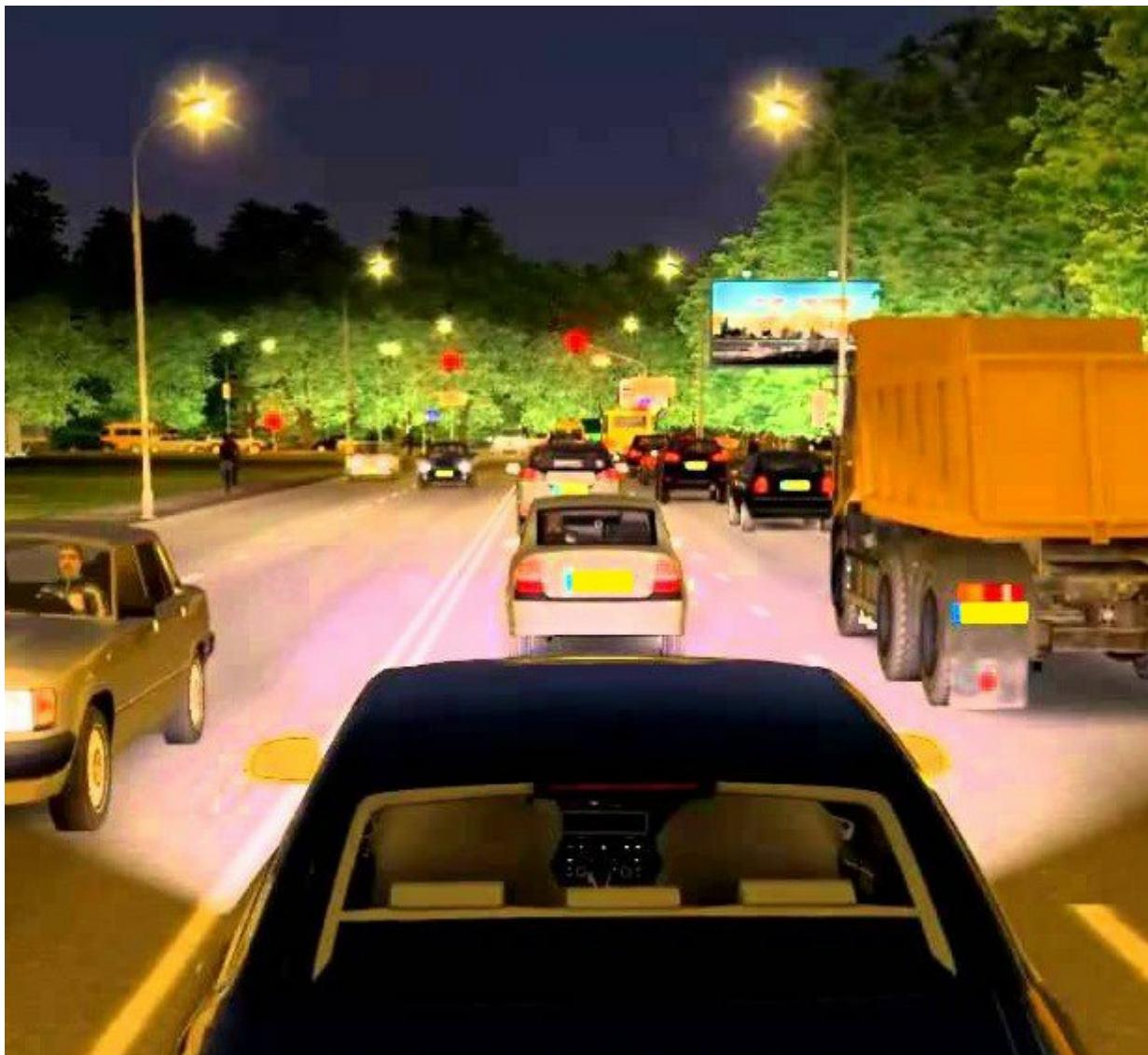
'I don't believe you,' Chu Gian said.

In the living room, two servants helped released Wen Jian Fei from the wall.

‘Bai fox, you’re not going to live under the same sky as me!’ Wen Jian Fei said.

End of Chapter Sixty-Nine (Part 2 of 2)

Related



Chapter Seventy

Caught.

'Zhen Wu,' Lam Ting called.

Zhen Wu turned around, and thought Lam Ting and Li Tu looked familiar.

'What is it?' Zhen Wu asked.

'I want you to join the student council,' Lam Ting said.

Li Tu was jealous Lam Ting spoke warmly to Zhen Wu.

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Wu said. 'I'm not interested.'

'There are benefits to being a member of the student council,' Lam Ting said.

Zhen Wu walked outside the college front gate. Huyen Di was giving him a lift

to Yue's company.

'What if I said I want you to join the student council?' Lam Ting asked.

Although Zhen Wu was poor, Lam Ting thought he was the most handsome boy on campus. If Zhen Wu was secretly in love with her then she thought he would be on the student council for her.

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Wu said. He smiled politely. 'I really have no interest in joining the student council.'

Zhen Wu's smile made Lam Ting's heart race.

Zhen Wu spotted Huyen Di's car. Huyen Di's girlfriend was waiting outside Huyen Di's car.

'Hello,' Su Xiao Ya greeted.

Su Xiao Ya found out Zhen Wu was her CEO.

'Hello,' Zhen Wu said. 'Where is uncle Huyen?'

'He's taking a phone call somewhere quiet,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya thought Zhen Wu looked handsome when he smiled. But she didn't dare stare at her CEO. She kept her head down. She didn't know why when she went to the hospital to have a baby check-up, Huyen Di was at the hospital and Huyen Di said he wanted to give her a lift to Yue's company.

Lam Ting and Li Tu chased after Zhen Wu because they were curious who Zhen Wu was talking too. Li Tu was shocked Zhen Wu was talking to Su Xiao Ya, and he pulled Su Xiao Ya aside to talk privately.

'Big sister, what are you doing here?' Li Tu asked. 'Did you come here to ask me for money because my big brother wouldn't give you money? Don't bother, no one in the Li Household will give you another dollar. Only my big brother was blind to give money to a greedy person like you. I would never give you a single dollar. My big brother is marrying another woman. Don't interfere in his relationship.'

'What's the problem?' Huyen Di asked Su Xiao Ya.

'Nothing,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'Li Tu, what happened between your big brother

and I has nothing to do with you. I didn't come here to see you. Your big brother and I are divorced. He is free to marry whoever he wants. I want nothing to do with a cold hearted man like your big brother.'

Li Tu saw Huyen Di standing behind Su Xiao Ya, and he understood why Su Xiao Ya dared to talk down to him.

'Big sister, I see why you're acting cocky,' Li Tu said. 'You found another man to support you. You're shameless. You divorced my big brother not long ago, and you've already seduced another man. Can't you live a day without a man? How can you sleep with any man for money? How much is he giving you a month? Thirty thousand dollars like my big brother or more?'

Su Xiao Ya slapped Li Tu's cheek.

'If you want people to respect you, first you need to learn how to respect other people,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'But no one in the Li Household understands the concept of respect. Don't worry, I don't want anything to do with the Li Household, you're all strangers to me.'

'You dare hit me?' Li Tu asked. 'Do you have a death wish?'

Li Tu raised his hand to hit Su Xiao Ya, but he put his hand down because Huyen Di was standing behind Su Xiao Ya.

'You should reconsider being with this woman,' Li Tu said. 'You don't want to offend the Li Household by being with this woman.'

'What if I want to be offensive?' Huyen Di asked.

Su Xiao Ya didn't want to involve Huyen Di into her mess. She held Huyen Di's arm and pulled him back to his car.

'Let's go,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Zhen Wu was watching the live drama unfold from the back seat in Huyen Di's car. Zhen Wu was disappointed Huyen Di didn't give Li Tu a beating. Huyen Di walked back to the car with Su Xiao Ya, and Huyen Di drove them to Yue's company.

Lam Ting was too prideful to call Zhen Wu's name and ask him to stay, because he rejected her twice.

When Zhen Wu arrived home from Yue's company, Yue Ni was riffling through CDs and Zhen Zhen was bottle feeding Yue Di Yi. Yue Di Yi was a healthy fourteen-month-old baby. Yue Gu Zai's mood improved since Yue Di Yi joined their family, because looking after Yue Di Yi kept Yue Gu Zai busy while Zhen Zhen was experimenting in the lab.

'Zhen Wu, what is your little sister looking for?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Something about finding evidence,' Zhen Wu said. 'Let her be.'

Zhen Wu ticked Yue Di Yi's stomach.

'Xiao Di Yi, can you say big brother?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Zhen Wu, Xiao Di Yi is too young to talk,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Mum, our Xiao Di Yi is a smart baby,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu ticked Yue Di Yi's stomach and Yue Di Yi laughed.

Yue Di Yi didn't understand Zhen Wu wanted him to speak. But he was happy to see Zhen Wu.

Zhen Zhen was jealous Yue Di Yi laughed with Zhen Wu. She fed and played with Yue Di Yi every day, but Yue Di Yi didn't laugh with her.

'Big brother, I found it!' Yue Ni said.

Zhen Zhen was used to Yue Ni's antics. She continued to play with Yue Di Yi and let Zhen Wu deal with Yue Ni.

'Big brother, look what the Bai fox filmed,' Yue Ni said. 'It's dad's cheek and another woman's back. I can't believe dad's living a double life. Dad married another woman behind mum's back.'

'Yue Ni, you're blind,' Zhen Wu said. He recognised the woman's back was Zhen Zhen's back when she was younger. 'Dad is only married mum.'

'Big brother, look,' Yue Ni said. 'Dad's turning around and looking lovingly at the other woman. How can dad do this to mum? I'm going to show mum this CD.'

'What other woman?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen carried Yue Di Yi to where Yue Ni and Zhen Wu were looking at a

laptop.

‘Mum, look,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Dad is married to another woman.’

When Zhen Zhen was looking at the footage, she saw her younger self turn around and smile at the younger Yue Gu Zai, it was their first wedding day.

Zhen Zhen smiled at her younger self when she lost her memories. The younger Yue Gu Zai asked if her younger self wanted to sign the marriage certificate, and her younger self nodded like a fool. After her younger self signed the marriage certificate, Yue Gu Zai asked if she regretted marrying him and her younger self shook her head.

‘Yue Gu Zai!’ Zhen Zhen called.

Zhen Zhen had evidence Yue Gu Zai did trick her into marrying him the first time when she lost her memories.

‘Big brother, I remembered small dad wants to see me,’ Yue Ni said. ‘I’m going to small dad’s home. Bye.’

Zhen Wu shook his head. It was typical of Yue Ni to cause trouble and run away. He carried Yue Di Yi in his arms and kissed Yue Di Yi’s cheek.

‘Xiao Di Yi, big brother will feed you dinner,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Mum will be busy for a long time.’

Yue Di Yi laughed with Zhen Wu.

Zhen Zhen was upset with Yue Gu Zai so she went back to the lab.

Zhen Wu carried Yue Di Yi to the dining room.

‘Where’s your little sister?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘She went to her small dad’s home,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Zhen Wu, you and Xiao Di Yi should eat dinner,’ Yue Gu Zai said and frowned.

Zhen Wu sat at the dining table, and he bounced Yue Di Yi on his lap.

‘Zhen Wu, your uncle Wo wants to hold a press conference next month,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘He wants to publicly announce you’re Yue’s company’s CEO.’

‘Why?’ Zhen Wu asked.

'Your uncle Wo is married and he wants to focus on his wife and child,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Although Wo Ta Tian was an outsider, Yue Gu Zai knew Wo Ta Tian was always loyal to Louis. Yue Gu Zai trusted Wo Ta Tian to help Zhen Wu manage Yue's company. Yue Gu Zai was sad to see Wo Ta Tian officially leave Yue's company, because it was rare to find a loyal and hard-working employee.

'I'll support uncle Wo's decision,' Zhen Wu said.

On Tuesday, a man threatened Zhen Wu with a knife when Zhen Wu locked his bicycle at the college.

'Who sent you here?' Zhen Wu asked.

The man waved the knife in front of Zhen Wu's face.

'Do you know why I like playing with knives?' Zhen Wu asked. 'If you don't put the knife away, I'll show why. I'll cut your face into two hundred pieces, and I'll use them to make a masterpiece artwork.'

'Mei Jia and Li Tu asked me to teach you a lesson,' the man said.

'Why?' Zhen Wu asked.

'They said they don't care what method I use to stop you from being a member of the student council,' the man said.

Zhen Wu's two secret guards came out of the shadows.

'Deal with this man,' Zhen Wu said.

'Yes young master,' the guards said.

Zhen Wu didn't know what were Mei Jia and Li Tu's motives to send someone to kill him. But it wouldn't be hard for Zhen Wu to find out if he joined the student council.

When Zhen Wu walked into the tutorial room, Lucy was happy Zhen Wu finally agreed to join the student council.

Lucy hugged Zhen Wu and smiled at him.

'Zhen Wu, I knew you would agree,' Lucy said. 'I'm happy you're joining the student council.'

Zhen Wu didn't like other people hugging him. But he was happy to see Lucy happy, and he let her hug him for however long she wanted.

Later at the student council meeting room, everyone on the student council elected Zhen Wu to be the secretary except for Mei Jia and Li Tu.

At night, Zhen Wu wanted to sneak into the college.

'Do you want to go inside?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu turned around. He frowned when he saw Lucy.

'Why are you here?' Zhen Wu asked.

'I was passing by and I saw you come here and followed you,' Lucy said. 'Why do you want to go inside at this late hour?'

'Go home,' Zhen Wu said.

'I don't want to go home,' Lucy said. 'I want to follow you.'

Zhen Wu thought Lucy's beautiful face didn't look intimidated by him. He opened his laptop and disabled the college's security system. He and Lucy snuck into the college before the guards detected them. He held Lucy's hand and they walked together in the shadows to the student council building. He saw Mei Jai and Li Tu using opium pipes to smoke though the lit windows. After Mei Jia and Li Tu through the back door, Lucy held onto his arm and they quietly entered the student council meeting room.

'What do you think they're doing inside the student council building?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu lifted the student council uniforms, and underneath were concealed bags of opium.

'What is that?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu cut open a bag, and he confirmed it was opium.

'Opium,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu understood why Mei Jia and Li Tu didn't want him to join the student council. They were paranoid he would find out about the opium and Mei Jia and Li Tu would lose hundreds and thousands of dollars.

Outside the student council building, Mei Jia and Li Tu were anxiously waiting for the dealers.

'What's taking them so long?' Mei Jia said.

'They're here,' Li Tu said.

Mei Jia and Li Tu led the dealers into the student council building.

'Hurry up and check the goods,' Li Tu said to the dealers.

When the two dealers picked up the opium bags, Zhen Wu shot the two dealers' heads with two bullets and the dealers fell onto the floor.

'Who's there?' Li Tu asked. 'If you have guts, come out and show yourself.'

Li Tu was scared of dying but he hid it better than Mei Jia.

Zhen Wu made sure Lucy hid behind him. They came out of their hiding spot and he pointed the gun at Li Tu and Mei Jia.

Li Tu took out his gun too and pointed it at Zhen Wu.

'Why are you here?' Li Tu asked.

'The man you two hired to kill me failed,' Zhen Wu said coldly. 'I didn't want to join the student council, but you two acting suspiciously persuaded me to join.'

'If you found out we're smuggling opium then why didn't you call the police?' Li Tu asked. 'Do you want to steal our opium?'

'To me money from selling opium is an eyesore,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu and Yue Gu Zai hated people who trafficked drugs the most.

'Compared to selling weapons, selling opium is nothing,' Li Tu said. 'Ni Sheng and Tan Lang monopolised the weapon market. We're not going to give up our share of the opium market.'

'I hate people who deal drugs in my district,' Zhen Wu said. 'You two should surrender yourself to the police.'

'Surrender?' Mei Jia asked. He took out his gun too and pointed it at Zhen Wu. 'What a naive boy.'

Zhen Wu laughed at Mei Jia and Li Tu's naivety.

Zhen Wu covered Lucy's eyes with one hand. She heard two gun shots then Li Tu and Mei Jia's screams.

'I knew asking you two to surrender yourselves would be too troublesome,' Zhen Wu said. 'I've called the police for you two. Your wounds weren't kill you before the police get here.'

Zhen Wu wrapped an arm around Lucy's waist and he led them outside.

After the police arrived, they didn't accept the bribes from Li Tu and Mei Jia.

'Do you two know who Zhen Wu is?' a cop asked. 'Zhen Wu's dad was the leader of Ni Sheng and the head of the national security department. Since his dad retired, of course Zhen Wu would be his successor. This small opium bribe isn't enough to save you two. You two should be grateful Zhen Wu let us arrest you. If you two fell into the hands of Ni Sheng, death would be a light punishment for you two. Your fathers are powerless to save you two from being imprisoned for life. This is what happens when someone offends the leader of Ni Sheng.'

'You don't need to waste your breath talking to these two fools,' another cop said.

The cops threw the bleeding Li Tu and Mei Jia into the back of the police van.

Zhen Wu walked with Lucy to her home. She suddenly turned around and kissed his cheek. He thought she looked beautiful under the full moon, and he liked being kissed by her.

'This is a lucky kiss,' Lucy said.

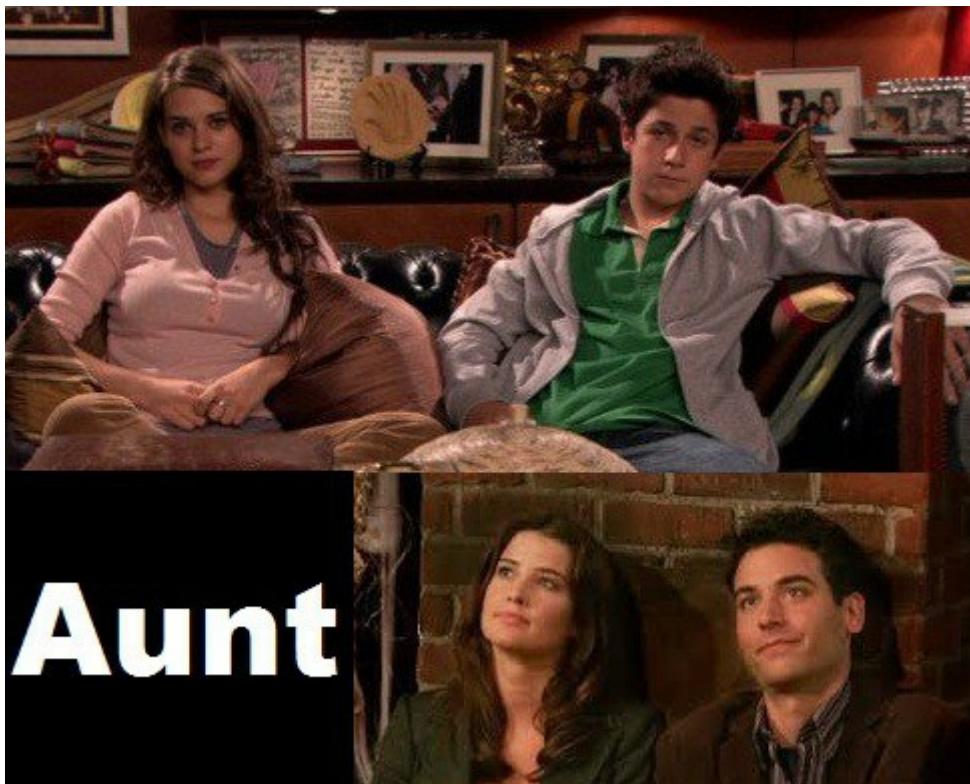
Zhen Wu remembered a little girl once kissed his cheek before a competition and she said her lucky kiss would help him win.

'You promised to join the student council,' Lucy said. 'You can't break your promise. Only small dogs break promises. Why are you smiling?'

Zhen Wu smiled and silently walked with Lucy.

End of Chapter Seventy

Related



Chapter Seventy-One

Aunt.

‘Dad,’ Lam Ting greeted.

‘I heard you have a classmate name Zhen Wu,’ Lam Huang said.

‘Yes dad,’ Lam Ting said.

‘News about Zhen Wu’s dad retiring will be publicly announced soon,’ Lam Huang said. ‘Zhen Wu will be his dad’s successor. He’ll be the new leader of Ni Sheng and the head of the national security department. Find a way to get close to him.’

‘Dad, is the news reliable?’ Lam Ting asked.

Lam Ting didn’t believe a mistress’ son like Zhen Wu would suddenly turn into Yue Gu Zai’s son.

‘Do you think I would believe nonsense?’ Lam Huang asked. ‘Xiao Ting, do you know how powerful Ni Sheng is after the treaty with Tan Lang? Look at the Yan Household who saved Yue Gu Zai’s wife’s life. They’re living the high life. Xiao Ting, you’re a beautiful girl, use your looks to attract Zhen Wu and your future

will be secured.'

Lam Ting remembered how handsome Zhen Wu looked when he smiled. She wondered if her looks were enough to attract Zhen Wu.

In the building of Su Xiao Ya's second job, Su Xiao Ya cleaned and she thought about the weeks she spent with Huyen Di. Su Xiao Ya couldn't believe how much her life changed since Huyen Di accidentally hit her with his car. The bruises on her thighs have healed. But Huyen Di assigned someone to deliver her nutritious meals. Huyen Di wasn't an easy man to befriend, but he was straight forward and a disciplined man.

Su Xiao Ya was cleaning the tables in the cafeteria. She noticed a beautiful young girl was smiling at her. The girl's face looked familiar.

A woman approached Su Xiao Ya and obstructed Su Xiao Ya's view of the girl.

'Are you Su Xiao Ya?' Zi Lan asked.

'Yes,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'Can we talk in private?' Zi Lan asked.

'My work shift is almost over,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'We can talk in the lobby.'

'I'll wait for you there,' Zi Lan said.

The smiling girl was Yue Ni. Yue Ni heard about Huyen Di's girlfriend, and she was curious to meet Huyen Di's girlfriend in person. She investigated Su Xiao Ya's background so she recognised Zi Lan was Su Xiao Ya's ex-husband's fiance.

In the lobby, Yue Ni called Huyen Di.

'Hello,' Huyen Di greeted.

'Uncle Huyen, do you know where I am?' Yue Ni asked.

Huyen Di hung up the phone.

Yue Ni pouted her lips, and she called Huyen Di again.

'Uncle Huyen, listen to me before you hang up otherwise you'll have something to regret,' Yue Ni said. 'I'm at the future Mrs Huyen's second workplace. Guess who I saw?'

'Who?' Huyen Di asked.

'Uncle Huyen, I need your help with the mission assigned to me for next week,' Yue Ni negotiated.

'I'll do it,' Huyen Di said.

'Zi Lan is the fiance of the future Mrs Huyen's ex-husband,' Yue Ni said.

'Get to the point,' Huyen Di said.

'Fine,' Yue Ni said. 'Zi Lan is here because she thinks the future Mrs Huyen is easy to bully.'

'Young mistress, I'll help you with your missions for the next month if you watch over her for me,' Huyen Di said.

'Uncle Huyen, leave it up to me,' Yue Ni said. 'I won't let anything happen to the future Mrs Huyen.'

After Su Xiao Ya's work shift was over, she changed out of her uniform into a simple black dress and talked privately with Zi Lan.

Zi Lan couldn't believe Li Cheng married an ugly country bumpkin like Su Xiao Ya.

'Miss Su, I'm Zi Lan,' Zi Lan said. 'I'm Li Cheng's fiance. I don't want you to interfere in my relationship with Li Cheng. Li Tu told me you've been disturbing everyone in the Li Household to beg for money. I don't care how generous Li Cheng was in the past. After I become Mrs Li, I don't want any money from the Li Household to be given to you.'

Zi Lan wouldn't accept her husband having a mistress, even if it was his ex-wife.

'I'm a woman and I have a right to protect my marriage,' Zi Lan said. 'Also, I want you to quit your work here. You'll embarrass Li Cheng if people found out his ex-wife is working here as a cleaner.'

'I'm sorry,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'I need this job. I can't quit.'

If Yue Ni was in Zi Lan's shoes, she would do the same and get rid of her husband's ex-wife. Unfortunately for Zi Lan, Li Cheng's ex-wife was Su Xiao Ya.

Yue Ni promised to watch over Su Xiao Ya for Huyen Di so she wouldn't let anyone bully Su Xiao Ya.

'I'm sorry for interrupting, Yue Ni said.

Su Xiao Ya recognised Yue Ni was the beautiful girl smiling at her during her work shift.

'It's you,' Su Xiao Ya said.

Yue Ni sat between Su Xiao Ya and Zi Lan on the sofa.

'Miss Zi,' Yue Ni said. 'This is my future aunt Huyen. You don't have to worry my aunt Huyen will steal your rotten fiance. My uncle Huyen is Huyen Di. In Ni Sheng, all Huyen Wu's districts are under uncle Huyen's control. He's a rich and powerful man. For him buying a small company like Tu's company is like buying a toy. Miss Zi, you don't need to worry your rotten fiance will bump into my aunt Huyen here. Today I bought this building, and I informed the security guards not to let you and your rotten fiance enter this building starting tomorrow.'

Yue Ni signalled the security guards to bring the sign to her.

'Miss Zi, this is the sign I'll ask someone to attach to the front entrance of this building,' Yue Ni said. 'As you can see the sign says anyone from the Li Household is prohibited from entering this building.'

Zi Lan had come to the building to threaten Su Xiao Ya, she didn't expect to be threatened by a little girl. If the little girl put up the sign, it would disgrace the Li Household.

'Who are you?' Zi Lan asked.

'Miss Zi, I forgot to mention one other thing,' Yue Ni said. 'After you and Li Cheng divorce, you can come find me and I'll help you get half of Li Cheng's assets.'

Yue Ni gave Zi Lan a Yue's law firm's business card.

'You!' Zi Lan said.

Zi Lan was confident Li Cheng wouldn't divorce her. Li Cheng was married to Su Xiao Ya for five years, but Li Cheng didn't stop loving Zi Lan. She stood, held her chin high and walked out of the building.

‘Aunt Huyen, I’m Yue Ni,’ Yue Ni said. ‘My big brother is Zhen Wu. It’s my pleasure to meet aunt Huyen.’

‘Hello,’ Su Xiao Ya greeted.

Su Xiao Ya couldn’t believe Yue Ni was her CEO’s little sister.

Yue Ni’s eyes lit up while she looked at Su Xiao Ya. Su Xiao Ya was her ticket to a six month work leave. She was going to give Su Xiao Ya a makeover to knock Huyen Di’s socks off at the celebration party after the press conference announcing Zhen Wu as the CEO of Yue’s company. Then Huyen Di would gratefully take on her missions for six months. The party was in two days, it gave her plenty of time to give Su Xiao Ya a makeover.

‘Aunt Huyen, do you want me to help you take revenge on the Li Household?’ Yue Ni asked.

Yue Ni checked out Su Xiao Ya’s body figure. Underneath the frumpy black dress was a model’s body.

‘I only want them to leave me and my little sister, Xiao Min alone,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘Li Cheng even went to my little sister’s school to look for me.’

For the next two days, Yue Ni’s family members were curious why she mysteriously disappeared. When they called Yue Ni, she told them she was busy with a secret mission.

Yue Ni instructed the best hairstylist in the city to straighten and cut Su Xiao Ya’s hair to suit Su Xiao Ya’s facial structure. Then Yue Ni brought Su Xiao Ya to a dress boutique, and she bought Su Xiao Ya a short designer cocktail dress that flattered Su Xiao Ya’s model body. Finally Yue Ni booked a makeup artist to apply makeup on Su Xiao Ya’s face, Yue Ni specifically asked the makeup artist to accentuate Su Xiao Ya’s beautiful eyes.

‘Aunt Huyen, what do you think?’ Yue Ni asked.

Su Xiao Ya stared at herself in the mirror. She couldn’t believe the beautiful woman in the mirror was her. Yue Ni bought her a short silver dress with silver kitty heels, because Yue Ni didn’t want her to injure herself while pregnant.

Yue Ni walked a circle around Su Xiao Ya.

‘Aunt Huyen, you’re missing one thing,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Confidence. It’ll make you look even more beautiful.’

‘Xiao Ni, thank you,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘But you can stop teasing me by calling me aunt Huyen all day long.’

‘Aunt Huyen it doesn’t matter if I stop calling you aunt Huyen,’ Yue Ni said. ‘You’ll still become my aunt Huyen soon, and a beautiful woman inside and out. Later let’s go into the banquet hall, and show how blind the Li Household are to overlook my beautiful aunt Huyen.’

‘Young mistress, here are the jewellery you asked us to prepare,’ a Ni Sheng gang member said.

‘Thank you,’ Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni took out the diamond necklace and diamond earring and she helped Su Xiao Ya wear them.

‘Xiao Ni, this is too valuable,’ Su Xiao Ya said. ‘Even if I combined my whole life’s earnings, I still can’t afford to buy these diamond jewellery.’

‘Aunt Huyen, don’t worry,’ Yue Ni said. ‘I sent the invoices to uncle Huyen, and he’ll reimburse me. Besides, I designed these diamond jewellery for aunt Huyen. If you don’t wear them then it means you hate my designs.’

‘Xiao Ni, I love your designs,’ Su Xiao Ya said.

Su Xiao Ya thought the mischievous Yue Ni was a loveable girl.

‘Uncle Huyen, what took you so long?’ Yue Ni asked.

‘I was busy with someone’s mission,’ Huyen Di said.

Huyen Di stepped in front of Su Xiao Ya, and he linked arms with her.

‘Everything looks good on you,’ Huyen Di said.

Su Xiao Ya realised the main reason she agreed to the makeover was because she wanted to impress Huyen Di instead of making Li Cheng regretful.

Yue Ni patted Huyen Di’s stiff shoulder.

‘Uncle Huyen, if you think aunt Huyen looks beautiful then say so,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Aunt Huyen ignore uncle Huyen. Uncle Huyen watched me grow up, and not

once have I heard him praise someone.'

Su Xiao Ya agreed with Yue Ni. Huyen Di was someone who didn't like to flatter people, he was a straight forward man but that made him endearing to her.

Huyen Di escorted Su Xiao Ya into the banquet hall. Wo Ta Tian brought his pregnant wife to attend the celebration. Zhen Wu the guest of honor was missing. The other guests didn't recognise Su Xiao Ya, they thought she was Huyen Di's girlfriend.

Huyen Di led Su Xiao Ya to where Cheng Yi, Bai Yu Tian and Chu Gian were chatting while the other guests were admiring them.

'My fiance, Su Xiao Ya,' Huyen Di said.

The four of them were taken back by Huyen Di's words. Chu Gian was the first to recover.

'Congratulations,' Chu Gian said.

'Old man Huyen Di, if you're getting hitched too then I'm the only bachelor left,' Cheng Yi said.

Chu Gian patted Cheng Yi's shoulder.

'Cheng Yi, do your best,' Chu Gian said.

Bai Yu Tian and Cheng Yi followed Chu Gian to the buffet table to give Huyen Di and Su Xiao Ya privacy.

'Why did you say I'm your fiance?' Su Xiao Ya asked.

'Don't you like me?' Huyen Di asked.

'I... are you being serious?' Su Xiao Ya asked.

'Do I look like I'm joking?' Huyen Di asked.

'No,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'Boss Huyen,' a Ni Sheng gang member called.

'We'll discuss this later,' Huyen Di said. 'I have to go take care of something.'

Su Xiao Ya went to get a glass of juice, and she bumped into a man.

'I'm sorry,' Su Xiao Ya said.

'It's OK... Su Xiao Ya?' Li Cheng asked.

Li Cheng thought Su Xiao Ya was Huyen Di's beautiful girlfriend. But after he heard Su Xiao Ya's voice, he recognised her.

Su Xiao Ya remembered Yue Ni's advice to be confident.

'I'm sorry,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'I don't know who you are.'

Li Cheng grabbed Su Xiao Ya's arm before she walked away.

'I know it's you,' Li Cheng said. 'Why are you dressed like this?'

'Yes, I'm Su Xiao Ya,' Su Xiao Ya. 'I can dress however I want to. We are strangers.'

'Are you acting like you don't know me because you want to be with Huyen Di?' Li Cheng asked. 'Does he know you're my ex-wife, and second hand goods?'

Li Cheng didn't know why he said cruel words to Su Xiao Ya. He was jealous Su Xiao Ya dressed plainly when she was married to him, but turned into a different woman for Huyen Di.

Su Xiao Ya was used to insults from members of the Li Household.

'Huyen Di knows who I am,' Su Xiao Ya said. 'He said he doesn't care because he loves me. He's my fiance. Mr Li, leave me and my fiance alone. Go and spend time with your fiance.'

'Li Cheng, what's wrong?' Zi Lan asked.

'Nothing,' Li Cheng said.

'Su Xiao Ya?' Zi Lan asked.

After Su Xiao Ya met Huyen Di, she realised she didn't love Li Cheng. If Zi Lan wanted to be with a pathetic man like Li Cheng then that was Zi Lan's mistake to make.

End of Chapter Seventy-One

Related



Chapter Seventy-Two

Engagement.

‘Xiao Ya,’ Huyen Di called.

Su Xiao Ya walked past Li Cheng and Zi Lan to Huyen Di.

On stage, Wo Ta Tian introduced Zhen Wu as the CEO of Yue’s company.

‘Thank you for the congratulations,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I look forward to receiving guidance from everyone.’

The guests applauded Zhen Wu. They admired the twenty-two-year-old man who succeeded Yue Gu Zai at a young age.

‘Big brother Zhen Wu,’ Shu Tang Li greeted. ‘I’m sorry I’m late.’

The guests looked curiously at the fifteen-year-old leader of Tan Lang. Shu Tang Li looked like his dad, Shu Tang Jue. Gentle on the outside and deadly on the inside.

Shu Tang Li smiled at Zhen Wu and he gave Zhen Wu an envelope.

‘Big brother Zhen Wu, this is a small gift to say congratulations,’ Shu Tan Li said.

The small gift was a valuable land in the city from Tan Lang to give to Ni Sheng to turn into a development area.

Zhen Wu smiled at Shu Tang Li, he knew what Shu Tang Li wanted in return for the small gift.

‘Xiao Li, if you run outside now, you can catch up to Xiao Ni,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Big brother Zhen Wu, I’ll catch up with you next time,’ Shu Tang Li said.

Zhen Wu watched Shu Tang Li run like the wind. When Zhen Wu turned around, Li Cheng introduced himself.

‘CEO Zhen,’ Li Cheng greeted. ‘Congratulations. I’m Li Cheng, CEO of Tu’s company.’

Li Cheng lusted after half of the small gift in Zhen Wu’s hands. If Tu’s company received the business deal with Ni Sheng then Tu’s company would defeat their rival company, Tan’s company.

Zhen Wu politely nodded his head at Li Cheng then he turned around to greet Tan Tu Hang.

‘Uncle Tan,’ Zhen Wu greeted.

‘Xiao Wu,’ Tan Tu Hang called.

‘Uncle Tan, are you interested in building something small with me?’ Zhen Wu asked.

Tan Tu Hang was surprised Zhen Wu chose to give him a juicy piece of meat.

Zhen Wu didn’t care what company he collaborated with as long as he could tolerate the company’s owner.

‘Of course I’m interested in building with my Xiao Wu,’ Tan Tu Hang said.

Li Cheng gripped his wine glass, losing to Tan Tu Hang was another insult to his ego.

‘Zhen Wu,’ Lam Ting called.

Lam Ting wore a strapless ocean blue dress, she looked like a sea mermaid princess.

‘Aren’t you going to ask me to dance?’ Lam Ting asked.

Zhen Wu gave the small gift in his hand to a Ni Sheng gang member to store in

a safe place.

'Uncle Tan, I'll ask my secretary to schedule a meeting with you next week,' Zhen Wu said.

'She's a pretty little girl,' Tan Tu Hang said. 'Xiao Wu, you have good vision.'

Zhen Wu didn't clear the misunderstanding. He walked with Lam Ting to the dance floor.

Lam Ting danced with Zhen Wu, but she sensed his heart wasn't with her.

'You won't be the person who wrote the love letter to me,' Lam Ting said.

'Um,' Zhen Wu said. 'You took my designs by mistake.'

'Why didn't you clear the misunderstanding?' Lam Ting asked.

'Gossip has nothing to do with me,' Zhen Wu said.

'Is that so?' Lam Ting asked. 'My feet hurts. Can I trouble you to give me a lift home?'

'My pleasure,' Zhen Wu said.

Lam Ting linked arms with Zhen Wu to his sports car.

'I thought you only rode bicycles,' Lam Ting said.

'Riding a bicycle is a good workout,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu drove Lam Ting home.

'Thank you,' Lam Ting said.

Zhen Wu looked out the window at Lam Huang who was waiting at the front door.

'Is it worth smiling at me even though you don't like me?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Why sacrifice yourself for your father?'

'How do you know I don't like you?' Lam Ting asked.

'You're a prideful person,' Zhen Wu said. 'After I rejected you twice, you kept your distance from me. But tonight you approached me in front of your father's business acquaintances.'

‘My dad is right,’ Lam Ting said. ‘The leader of Ni Sheng is a smart person.’

Lam Ting’s beauty didn’t blind Zhen Wu.

‘Your father used the wrong chess piece,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘The leader of Ni Sheng and head of the national security department is my little sister. If you have a little brother, you can ask your father to give him to my little sister. Whether my little sister accepts him or not is up to my little sister.’

‘A pity, I’m an only child,’ Lam Ting said. ‘Your little sister owns Ni Sheng, but it doesn’t mean you can’t influence your little sister’s decisions.’

‘True,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘But I’m prudent businessman. I only like making profitable business deals. A pity, going into business with your father wouldn’t be profitable.’

Lam Ting stood at the front gate of her home. Was she in love with Zhen Wu? She must be if the wind felt colder than usual.

The following day, Zhen Wu rode his bicycle to college. The difference was the male students looked enviously at him, and the female students ran up to him to give him flowers.

Zhen Wu carried the flowers to his tutorial room. He sat in the back seat next to the jealous Lucy.

‘CEO Zhen, today you’re a popular man,’ Lucy said.

Zhen Wu didn’t know what he did to upset Lucy.

Lucy opened the college magazine and she read an article written by Sun Ling Hui.

‘CEO Zhen is the young college prince, Zhen Wu,’ Lucy said.

‘If you like flowers, take these,’ Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu wanted a clear desk to sleep.

Lucy put the flowers on the floor. She was going to burn them after class.

Lucy gave a jewellery box to Zhen Wu.

‘It’s a small gift for you,’ Lucy said. ‘Congratulations. I’m sorry I couldn’t attend your celebration last night.’

'What is it?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Open it and see what's inside,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu opened the jewellery box. Inside was an engagement ring. Why did Lucy give him an engagement ring?

'Is it beautiful?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu smiled. Lucy asked if it was beautiful like she was giving him a tie or a watch.

'Beautiful,' Zhen Wu said.

Lucy put the ring on Zhen Wu's ring finger.

'It looks beautiful on you,' Lucy praised.

'Lucy, are you asking me to marry you?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Will you say yes?' Lucy asked.

'My mum said it's not good to marry too young,' Zhen Wu said.

'Your mum gave birth to you when she was our age,' Lucy said.

'True,' Zhen Wu said.

'Is that a yes?' Lucy asked. 'You'll receive many benefits if you marry me. I'm eye candy, and you won't be embarrassed to be seen with me on the streets. Our children will inherit our good genes. I'm a good cook. I can cook Chinese, Japanese, French and Italian cuisines. I'll learn to cook all your favorite dishes. I'm good at housework. After you marry me, you won't need to hire a housekeeper and you'll save money. You'll get a sizeable dowry. Dawson's company will become yours. You don't need money, but it doesn't hurt to have more money. I'll be a good wife, I'll take good care of you. I'll listen to you. If you say go east, I won't go west.'

'Marry the girl,' a male student said. 'Where are you going to find another girl that is as good as Lucy?'

'Lucy, you forgot to say something to me,' Zhen Wu said. 'Shouldn't you tell me you love me?'

'I love you,' Lucy said.

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said.

'Yes, you'll marry me?' Lucy asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said.

'Zhen Wu, I'm really happy,' Lucy said.

Lucy jumped onto Zhen Wu's lap. She wrapped her arms around his neck, and she kissed his cheeks.

Most of the boys in the class resented Zhen Wu for taking Lucy off the market.

'Zhen Wu, if you're my man, isn't it reasonable if you grant my small requests?' Lucy asked.

'Tell me your requests,' Zhen Wu said.

'From today, inside your heart can only be me,' Lucy said. 'Your eyes can only look at me, you can't look at other women. You can't take another woman home. You can't accept gifts from other women. You can't smile at other women. If I call your phone, you can't reject my call. Before you go out, you need to let me know where you're going so I can come to you if there's an emergency. If you take a lunch break longer than an hour then you have to tell me why. You have to introduce me to your parents and siblings. You need to tell me what your family members' interests are so I can prepare gifts for them. Only I can sit on the back seat of your bicycle. If I'm sad, you have to kiss me and cheer me up. You have to tell me the identity of your former sugar mummy...'

Zhen Wu held Lucy's cheeks, and he kissed her lips.

'Is it strange for me to kiss you?' Zhen Wu asked.

'No,' Lucy said. 'I'm not sure if it was you who kissed me.'

'He kissed you,' a male student confirmed.

'The girl who picked me up was my little sister,' Zhen Wu said. 'I'll introduce you to her soon. My dad is Yue Gu Zai. He loves my mum the most. My mum is Zhen Zhen. She loves her lab the most. My little sister is Yue Ni. You met her last time. She loves many things, especially polar bears. I have a baby brother, Yue Di Yi. He loves playing with tissues. If no one pays attention to him, he'll pull out one hundred tissue boxes in a day. He's a happy baby. You found out my contact

number a long time ago. I only pick up phone calls from my family members and people I care about. If you call me, I'll always pick up. I'm either working or at home. If I want to go out, I'll ask your permission first. Do you have any other requests?’

‘No,’ Lucy said.

Lucy felt like she was dreaming. She didn't expect Zhen Wu would agree to all her requests. She sat back on her seat.

Lam Ting walked to the back row. The ring on Zhen Wu's ring finger was an eyesore.

‘Is there room for me to sit?’ Lam Ting asked.

‘I’m sorry,’ Lucy said. ‘There is no room for you.’

Lucy was angry at the opportunistic Lam Ting, who wanted to seduce Zhen Wu last night when she couldn't attend the celebration.

‘There is an empty seat next to Zhen Wu,’ Chu Lan said.

Lucy picked up the rubbish flowers, and she put it on the empty seat.

‘I’m sorry,’ Lucy said. ‘The seat is taken.’

‘You’re too much,’ Chu Lan said.

‘Chu Lan, we’ll go sit at the front,’ Lam Ting said. ‘Zhen Wu, thank you for taking me home last night.’

Lucy pinched Zhen Wu’s shoulder, and he smiled at her.

‘Lucy, where were you last night?’ Zhen Wu asked. ‘Did you get a goodnight sleep?’

‘My grandpa is sick,’ Lucy said.

‘Your grandpa will be OK,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Um,’ Lucy said.

‘You in the back seat,’ the tutor said.

‘Me?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘No... CEO Zhen, I didn’t mean you,’ the tutor said.

End of Chapter Seventy-Two

Related



Chapter Seventy-Three

Knock knock.

Summary of Side Story:

Li Cheng's dad threw a fit. He told Li Cheng off for divorcing Su Xiao Ya, he disapproved of Li Cheng marrying Zi Lan and he told Li Cheng was useless for losing the business development deal to Tan Tu Hang.

Su Xiao Ya's dad came to Qua Qua's home to demand money from Su Xiao Ya after he found out Su Xiao Ya's engaged to Huyen Di. Huyen Di's busy on a mission. Huyen Di sent Cheng Yi to get rid of Su Xiao Ya's dad and take Su Xiao Ya

to the hospital to check up on the baby.

Chapter Seventy-Three

At the hospital, Cheng Yi was surprised to see Chu Gian had an appointment with an obstetrician.

‘Chu Gian, why do you look so lost?’ Cheng Yi asked.

Chu Gian stared at her pregnancy test results.

‘I’m pregnant,’ Chu Gian said.

‘Does the Bai fox know?’ Cheng Yi asked.

‘I don’t want to have a baby this soon,’ Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian didn’t think she would be married. She wasn’t used to being a good wife to Bai Yu Tian. She wasn’t ready to be a wife and a mother.

‘Chu Gian, talk to the Bai fox,’ Cheng Yi said. ‘He’s your husband and the father of your baby.’

‘I’ll tell him when I’m ready,’ Chu Gian said.

Cheng Yi was worried Chu Gian would abort her baby in secret. If that happened and Bai Yu Tian found out he knew and didn’t tell Bai Yu Tian, there would be no place for him to hide.

At the Yue Household, Zhen Zhen spring cleaned the mansion. She didn’t want a messy mansion to scare away her future daughter-in-law.

‘Mum, if keep cleaning, you’ll scare off big sister,’ Yue Ni said. ‘She’ll think you have a germ phobia.’

Usually Zhen Zhen was easy going about her family members’ eating habits. But Yue Ni eating snacks in front of the TV minutes before Zhen Wu and Lucy’s arrival made Zhen Zhen anxious.

‘Xiao Ni, stop eating snacks,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘There are crumbs everywhere. Your big brother and big sister will be here soon.’

‘Mum, big sister isn’t here yet but you’re already favoring your daughter-in-law

over your daughter,’ Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni continued to snack and watch TV.

‘Xiao Ni, I’ll go see if your dad needs help in the kitchen,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Oh, I forgot to tell you. Tonight, your small dad and small mum are coming over for dinner too.’

‘Mum!’ Yue Ni said. ‘Why didn’t you tell me sooner? Is the little boy Shu Tang Li eating dinner here too?’

‘Xiao Ni, if I told you sooner, you would have ran away by now,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘You and Xiao Li are like cat and mouse. I think Xiao Li’s a good boy. He’s respectful to his elders, and he treats you and everyone fairly.’

‘Mum... you don’t know what the little boy Shu Tan Li is really like,’ Yue Ni said.

Zhen Zhen ignored Yue Ni, and she walked into the kitchen.

‘Gu Zai, do you think I’m underdressed?’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai thought Zhen Zhen looked as young as the day he married her. She didn’t look like someone old enough to be a mother-in-law. The only difference between her and her younger self was her hair being short instead of long.

Yue Gu Zai put the knife on the kitchen bench. He hugged Zhen Zhen, kissed her and he helped adjust her clothes.

‘Zhen Zhen, you look beautiful,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Relax, you’re too tensed.’

‘Really?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Yes,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘You met our daughter-in-law before.’

Yue Gu Zai had investigated Lucy since she transferred to Zhen Wu’s college.

‘Mum, someone’s knocking on the door,’ Yue Ni yelled.

‘Xiao Ni, why can’t you open the front door?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Mum, I know you’re anxious to see big sister,’ Yue Ni said.

Zhen Zhen ran toward the front door.

The guests who arrived first were Bai Yu Tian, Chu Gian and Cheng Yi.

‘Have you told the Bai fox yet?’ Cheng Yi asked Chu Gian softly.

'I'll tell him later,' Chu Gian said. 'He'll be suspicious if you don't be quiet.'

'Mrs Yue,' Bai Yu Tian greeted.

Bai Yu Tian, Chu Gian and Cheng Yi walked inside.

'Young mistress, why are you sitting here so free when boss is slaving in the kitchen?' Bai Yu Tian asked Yue Ni.

Yue Ni put her snacks down, jumped off the sofa and linked arms with Bai Yu Tian.

'Uncle Bai, I'm tired from completing my mission,' Yue Ni said.

'Oh?' Bai Yu Tian asked. 'Young mistress, I heard old man Huyen Di is taking on your missions for six months.'

Bai Yu Tian pitied Huyen Di, because he didn't want to be in Huyen Di's shoes. He would be depressed if he had to be separated from Chu Gian for six months.

'Uncle Bai, you understand me the best,' Yue Ni said.

'Sucking up to me isn't going to help,' Bai Yu Tian said.

'Uncle Bai, what about I assign missions for you and aunt Chu to go to Italy together?' Yue Ni asked.

'Alright,' Bai Yu Tian said.

Bai Yu Tian got what he wanted so he would let Yue Ni off the hook for bit longer before he ask her to give Huyen Di a break.

'Mum, someone's knocking on the door again,' Yue Ni said. 'I'll go open the door.'

Yue Ni ran to the door. She wanted to close the door when she saw Shu Tang Li.

'Xiao Ni,' Shu Tang Li called.

Shu Tang Li was happy to see Yue Ni.

'Why are you smiling?' Yue Ni asked. 'You don't need to show off your white teeth. You can't call me Xiao Ni. Call me big sister. I'm older than you.'

Shu Tang Li was used to Yue Ni acting like she was older than him by years even

though she was only a couple of months older than him.

'Aunty Zhen, I got you the latest microscope,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I hope aunty Zhen will like my gift.'

'Xiao Li, you shouldn't have,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen would have ran into the lab and test out the microscope if she wasn't excited to meet her future daughter-in-law.

'Mum, don't accept a gift from a robber like little boy Shu Tang Li,' Yue Ni said.

Shu Tang Li held Yue Ni's wrist quicker than she could evade his hand.

'Xiao Ni, don't you know my heart by now?' Shu Tang Li asked.

Yue Ni blushed because Shu Tang Li's face was too close to her face.

'I don't know what you're talking about,' Yue Ni denied.

'Xiao Ni,' Shu Tang Jue called from the door.

Yue Ni was saved by Shu Tan Jue. She ran to Shu Tan Jue and Nan Ma.

'Small dad, small mum,' Yue Ni greeted.

'Xiao Ni is small dad's good daughter,' Shu Tang Jue praised.

Yue Gu Zai walked out of the kitchen, and he shot a chopstick at Shu Tang Jue's pig hand that was rubbing Yue Ni's head.

Everyone were used to Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Jue fighting over which father loved Yue Ni more. They were grateful Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Jue stopped fighting with guns and knives.

Shu Tang Jue caught the chopstick, and taunted Yue Gu Zai.

'Xiao Ni, your dad's jealous again,' Shu Tang Jue said.

'Small dad, stay away from dad,' Yue Ni warned. 'Dad is having that time of the month again.'

Yue Gu Zai put the dinner dishes on the dining table.

'Xiao Ni, if you don't want to be separated from your small dad then there is a simple solution,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'I'll marry you off to Xiao Li, and you can see your small dad every day.'

Yue Ni ran to Yue Gu Zai and she hugged Yue Gu Zai.

‘Dad, today you look handsome like a model,’ Yue Ni praised.

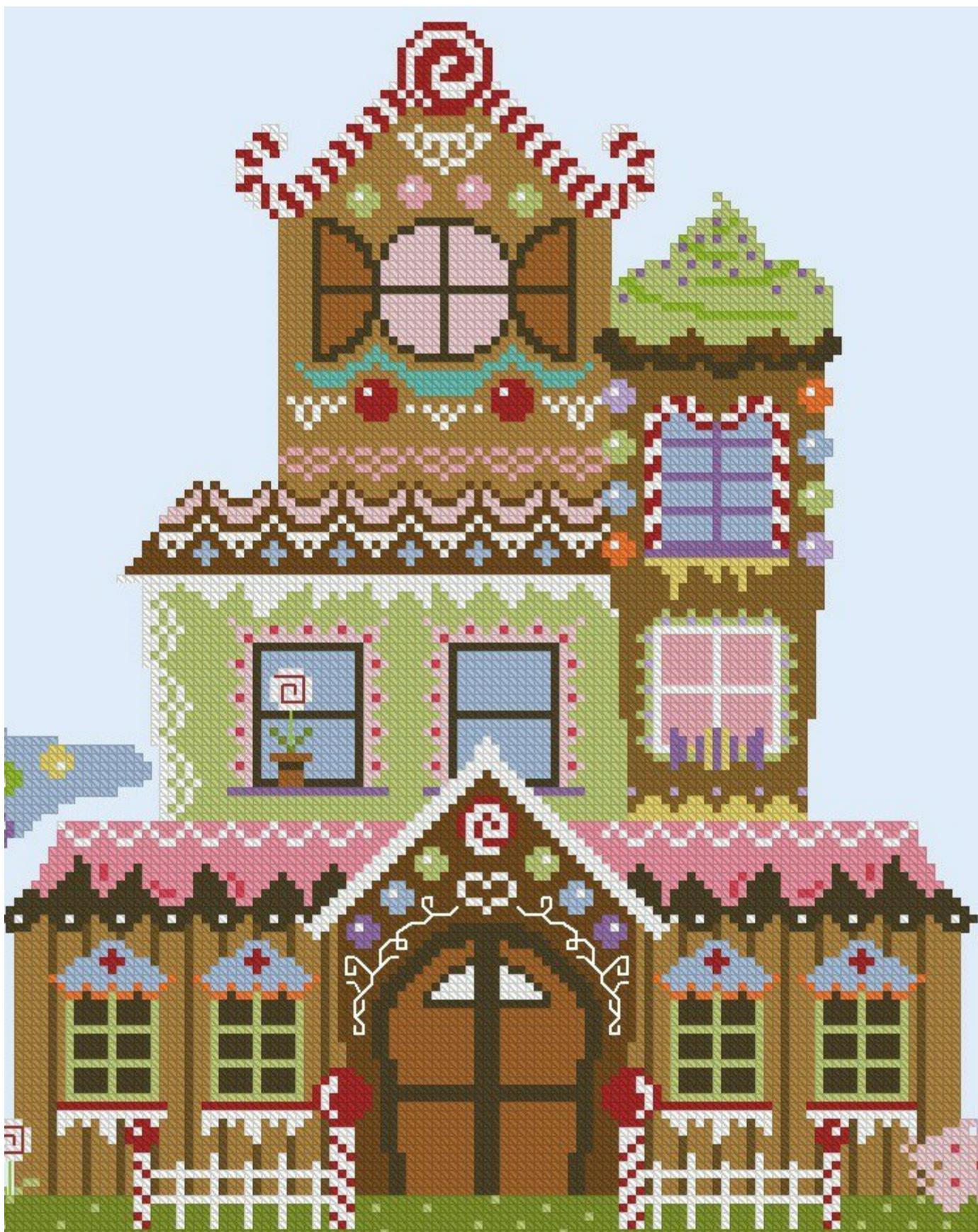
Yue Gu Zai looked smugly at Shu Tang Jue. Shu Tang Jue knew Yue Gu Zai wanted to brag that only a true father would understand a daughter’s heart.

Upstairs, Yue Di Yi woke up from a nap and his old nanny carried him downstairs to play with Zhen Zhen and Nan Ma.

A third knock on the front door was heard. The guests of honor Zhen Wu and Lucy arrived.

End of Chapter Seventy-Three

Related



Chapter Seventy-Four

Full house.

'I'm sorry we're late,' Lucy said.

'It's OK,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Dinner's just cooked.'

Zhen Zhen thought her daughter-in-law was a polite young lady. She would support Zhen Wu's decision to marry the person he loved.

'Hello aunty, hello uncle,' Lucy said. 'I'm Lucy Brenda.'

'Dawson Brenda's little granddaughter?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Zhen Zhen remembered the little girl Lucy who followed Zhen Wu around in Italy.

Zhen Wu hugged Lucy and he smiled at Zhen Zhen.

'Mum, Lucy's the same little girl I met in Italy,' Zhen Wu said. 'Let's talk over dinner.'

'Yes, come sit and eat,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Aunty, you remember me?' Lucy asked.

'Of course I remember you,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Because of you, Zhen Wu decided to...'

'Mum, eat dinner,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu put food into Zhen Zhen's bowl, and Zhen Zhen forgot what she wanted to say.

Shu Tang Jue ate a mouthful of Yue Gu Zai's delicious dinner, but he acted like he was eating dirt.

'Small rice grain, I know you're a picky eater,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'These dinner dishes don't taste as good as my dinner dishes. But you should eat a little here. When we're home, I'll cook delicious dinner dishes for you.'

Nan Ma knew Shu Tang Jue's insults were aimed at Yue Gu Zai. She ignored Shu Tang Jue and chatted with Zhen Zhen.

'I didn't invite you to dinner,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'It's your thick face that crawled here to eat dinner.'

'Small rice grain and I are Xiao Wu and Xiao Ni's godparents,' Shu Tang Jue said. 'It's normal for us to want to see our grandchildren.'

‘It’s your thick face that can’t see your own son,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘You have a son, but you want to raise my children.’

Everyone at the table except Lucy were used to Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Jue bickering every time they were in the same room with each other. Bai Yu Tian fed Chu Gian dinner. Cheng Yi played with Yue Di Yi while eating. Yue Ni and Shu Tang Li ate dinner quietly. Only Lucy gasped and worried Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Jue would kill each other at the dining table.

‘Zhen Wu, shouldn’t someone stop them from fighting?’ Lucy asked.

‘Lucy ignore them,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Taste the fish. It’s mum’s favorite so it’s dad’s most delicious dish.’

Zhen Wu passed the plate of fish to Lucy.

‘So what if I want to adopt Xiao Wu and Xiao Ni?’ Shu Tang Jue asked. ‘I love them like they’re my children. I don’t mind if you adopt Xiao Li and raise Xiao Li here.’

Yue Ni was worried Yue Gu Zai would fall into Shu Tang Jue’s trap, and the little boy Shu Tang Li would live under the same roof as her.

‘Dad, don’t fall for small dad’s trap,’ Yue Ni said.

‘Uncle Yue, I don’t mind calling you dad,’ Shu Tang Li said.

Shu Tang Li thought Yue Gu Zai’s cooking tasted more delicious that evening than usual.

Yue Gu Zai didn’t need Yue Ni to remind him of the devious Shu father and son. Yue Gu Zai wouldn’t fall for their traps, and give away his precious little daughter.

Shu Tang Li looked resentfully at Yue Ni. She ruined his rare opportunity to move in with her.

‘Dad, you’re the wisest,’ Yue Ni praised.

Dinner was peaceful after Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Jue called a temporary truce out of respect for Lucy’s first dinner with their families. Zhen Zhen happily chatted with Lucy, and she asked about Lucy’s interests.

After dinner Zhen Wu drove Lucy home. Then he returned home to shower and work.

Yue Ni knocked on Zhen Wu's study room door. She walked into his study room, sat on the sofa and she played with the big polar bear on the sofa.

'Big brother,' Yue Ni called.

'Xiao Ni, what's on your mind?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu dried his wet hair with a towel.

'Big brother, big sister Lucy loved you for years,' Yue Ni said. 'It's your handsome face big sister Lucy can't forget.'

'Xiao Ni, get to the point,' Zhen Wu said. 'I don't like looking at your face for too long.'

'Big brother, why did you accept big sister Lucy's ring?' Yue Ni asked.

'Because I want to marry Lucy so I accepted her proposal,' Zhen Wu said.

'Is it that simple?' Yue Ni asked.

'Xiao Ni, why would it be complicated?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Big sister Lucy is beautiful, rich, a good cook and she would be a good wife to big brother,' Yue Ni said. 'Did you agree to marry big sister Lucy because of her looks and family background?'

'What has that got to do with me?' Zhen Wu asked.

Zhen Wu didn't know why his smart little sister would run to him to ask simple questions that had simple answers.

'I want to marry Lucy because I love Lucy for who she is,' Zhen Wu said. 'I don't care about her looks, money or owning Dawson's company as a wedding dowry.'

Yue Ni didn't understand the concept of a person marrying someone because the person wanted to.

'Big brother, I heard you decided to train in Ni Sheng's secret headquarters in Africa because you wanted to become stronger to protect big sister Lucy,' Yue Ni said. 'Is it true?'

'Doesn't our little princess Xiao Ni know everything?' Zhen Wu asked.

'I heard when big sister Lucy was bullied by other people, big brother felt powerless to protect her,' Yue Ni said. 'Then big brother decided to train and become stronger to protect all the people you care about.'

Zhen Wu quietly worked on his laptop.

'Big sister Lucy transferred to big brother's college to be with big brother,' Yue Ni said. 'Big brother, when did you recognise big sister Lucy? Did you recognise her from the first day she arrived at your college? Was it when you gave her a lift to the student council building? Or was it when you and big sister Lucy reported Li Tu and Mei Jia for selling opium? Big brother don't tell me you recognised big sister Lucy from the start, but you didn't want to acknowledge you remembered big sister Lucy. Big brother! Why are you devious like the little boy Shu Tang Li?'

'Xiao Ni, take back your order to send Ni Sheng's members to secretly protect me,' Zhen Wu said.

'Big brother, I only want you to be safe,' Yue Ni said.

If Yue Ni didn't send guards to protect everyone she cared about then she wouldn't find out about their secrets.

'I want to have a private relationship with Lucy,' Zhen Wu said.

'Big brother, I promise I won't tell another soul about yours and big sister Lucy's relationship,' Yue Ni said.

Zhen Wu was happy to see Lucy called his phone.

'Xiao Ni, if you don't have anything else to say then go and sleep,' Zhen Wu said.

'Oh, big sister Lucy calling big brother,' Yue Ni teased.

Yue Ni ran outside the room, and Zhen Wu answered Lucy's call.

'Lucy, are you having trouble sleeping?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Zhen Wu, I miss you,' Lucy said.

'I know,' Zhen Wu said and smiled.

Zhen Wu put his phone on speaker and he continued to work on his laptop.

Yue Ni ran back into the room.

'Big sister Lucy, big brother loved you years ago,' Yue Ni said and ran to her bedroom.

Lucy was stunned speechless.

'Lucy, are you still there?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Zhen Wu... what little sister Xiao Ni said... is it true?' Lucy asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said.

'Zhen Wu... you promised after you win you would come see me,' Lucy said.
'Do you know how long I waited for you to come and how much I cried? You broke your promise.'

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Wu said.

'Forget it,' Lucy said. 'It's late. We have classes in the morning.'

'Sweet dreams,' Zhen Wu said.

'Sweet dreams,' Lucy said.

The next day, Zhen Wu felt depressed Lucy didn't come to their classes. He waited the whole day to receive a phone call from her.

'Zhen Wu, my grandpa's health worsened,' Lucy said. 'I'm taking some days leave from college. I'm flying to Italy to be with grandpa.'

'Lucy, do you want me to fly to Italy with you?' Zhen Wu asked.

'No,' Lucy said. 'I'm at the airport. I'll call you later. Bye.'

Zhen Wu stared at his phone for a long time before he packed his bag and rode his bicycle home.

When Lucy landed in Italy, she drove straight home to Dawson Brenda's bedside. He was in a coma. She cried next to his bed. Her parents died when she was a little girl. Her grandpa was her whole family, who raised and loved her.

'Lucy,' Quan Wen called.

Lucy wiped her tears, and she turned around to face Quan Wen.

Dawson Brenda adopted Quan Wen because he didn't want Lucy to grow up

lonely.

'Lucy, the doctors said that grandpa is in a lot of pain,' Quan Wen said. 'We should let grandpa go in peace.'

'Quan Wen, let me think it over,' Lucy said.

Lucy could see Dawson Brenda looked like he was in pain even in a coma.

'Lucy, grandpa is in pain,' Quan Wen said.

'I said let me think it over!' Lucy said. 'Do you think it's easy for me to end grandpa's life?'

'Lucy, can't you see the longer you delay making a decision, the longer you prolong grandpa's pain?' Quan Wen asked.

Quan Wen sat next to Lucy and he held her hand.

'Knowing is one thing but letting go is different,' Lucy said.

Quan Wen hugged Lucy.

'Lucy, cry and let it all out,' Quan Wen said.

Quan Wen loved Lucy. He didn't want to be Lucy's little brother. If Dawson Brenda died, there was no one who could stop him from marrying Lucy.

'Quan Wen, you're holding me too tight,' Lucy said.

End of Chapter Seventy-Four

Related



Chapter Seventy-Five

Rain.

'Lucy, I love you,' Quan Wen said.

'Quan Wen, you're crazy,' Lucy said. 'I'm your big sister.'

Quan Wen saw Lucy as his woman. He kissed her red lips.

'Quan Wen!' Lucy said. 'Wake up!'

Lucy pushed Quan Wen away. By the time she took two steps, he pulled her on the floor and he laid on top of her.

'I loved you for years,' Quan Wen said. 'Now grandpa's gone, there is no one to stop me from being with you.'

Quan Wen kissed Lucy's neck. She was repulsed by him. She couldn't escape from under his heavy body. When he was about to kiss her lips again, she slapped his cheek.

'Get off me!' Lucy said. 'Get out! I don't want to see your face again.'

Quan Wen hated seeing Lucy cry. He got off her, and stood.

'I don't regret what I did today,' Quan Wen said.

Lucy sat on the floor and cried. She didn't want to lose her grandpa, and she

didn't know why her little brother suddenly overstepped their sibling relationship. She grabbed her phone, and she called Zhen Wu.

'Zhen Wu...' Lucy called.

'Lucy, what happened?' Zhen Wu asked.

Lucy didn't want Zhen Wu to know what Quan Wen did because she knew Zhen Wu wouldn't forgive Quan Wen.

'Zhen Wu, grandpa only has a couple of days left,' Lucy said. 'I'm scared. Why does death want to take my grandpa away this soon?'

'Lucy, one day we'll be old too,' Zhen Wu said.

'Zhen Wu, you're not allowed to leave me first,' Lucy said.

'I'll do my best,' Zhen Wu said.

'We'll it kill you to say some comforting words to me?' Lucy asked.

'Lucy, go to sleep,' Zhen Wu said. 'You need energy to take care of grandpa.'

'Goodnight,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu couldn't sleep after he received Lucy's phone. He sensed she was hiding something from him, because she didn't want to worry him. He walked to Yue Ni's study room, knocked on the door and sat on the sofa. Yue Ni was holding a polar bear and looking at her laptop.

'I want to know what happened to Lucy,' Zhen Wu said.

'Big brother, now you know why I need to secretly protect everyone,' Yue Ni said.

Zhen Wu didn't fall for Yue Ni's trap like Huyen Di. He took out his phone and threatened to call Shu Tang Li.

'Xiao Ni, do you want to know how happy Xiao Li will be when I tell him where you'll be tomorrow?' Zhen Wu asked.

'I surrender,' Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni grabbed Zhen Wu's phone, and she showed him footage of what happened to Lucy in Italy. She knew Zhen Wu would sell her to Shu Tang Li in

order to protect Lucy.

Zhen Wu thumped the desk, and Yue Ni took several steps back. She knew people who made Zhen Wu lose his temper were unlucky people, Quan Wen was going to suffer.

On a rainy day in Italy, Lucy wore a black dress and she listened to the priest read the funeral rites for Dawson Brenda. She didn't know how long she cried that day. Her grandpa was gone. She had no one left to hold an umbrella for her, and protect her.

Lucy didn't know how she got home. She sat in Dawson Brenda's study room. She used to love sitting with her grandpa, reading a book while he worked. But the room was no longer warm, because her grandpa wasn't coming back.

Lucy heard a knock on the door. She wiped her tears and sat upright.

'Come in,' Lucy said.

'Young mistress Lucy,' a lawyer said. 'I'm Dawson Brenda's lawyer. I came here to read his will he left to his family.'

'Go ahead,' Lucy said.

Lucy's relatives and Quan Wen walked into the room. She no longer could treat Quan Wen like her little brother. Quan Wen had become a stranger to her after what he did to her.

'Hurry up and read the will,' Kelly said. 'I want to hear what I inherited so I can leave.'

'I'm sorry,' the lawyer said. 'I need to wait until all of Dawson Brenda's relatives are here before I can read the will.'

'Who are you waiting for?' Kelly asked.

Kelly didn't want to share her inheritance with more people.

A twenty-year-old man in a suit ran into the room and bowed.

'I'm sorry I'm late and made everyone wait,' Hua Xi Tong said.

'Everyone's here now,' the lawyer said.

'Wait,' Kelly said. 'What is this little boy doing here?'

‘According to Dawson Brenda’s will, Hua Xi Tong is Gal Brenda and Hua Xiang Xiang’s son,’ the lawyer said. ‘Hua Xi Tong is Dawson Brenda’s grandson, he has a right to be here.’

‘What?’ Kelly asked. ‘Gal Brenda has a bastard son? I want proof.’

‘Here’s the DNA results,’ the lawyer said. ‘Hua Xi Tong is Dawson Brenda’s grandson.’

‘Great-aunt Kelly, if this is grandpa’s will then we should respect grandpa’s decision,’ Lucy said.

Kelly knew her big brother Dawson Brenda loved Lucy the most, and Lucy would be the CEO of Dawson’s company. She didn’t argue with Lucy, because she would be living off Lucy in the future.

‘Dawson Brenda wants Kelly Brenda to inherit Dawson Brenda’s mansion in England,’ the lawyer said. ‘Sixty percent of Dawson’s company shares will be given to Lucy. If Lucy’s future husband agrees then twenty percent will be given to Hua Xi Tong, and Quan Wen will receive the remaining twenty percent.’

‘The will is a fake!’ Kelly said. ‘Why would he want to give forty percent of the shares to a bastard grandson and an adopted grandson?’

Kelly thought it was unfair. She was Dawson Brenda’s little sister, but she only received a puny mansion.

‘I’m sorry this is all written in Dawson Brenda’s will,’ the lawyer said.

‘Great-aunt Kelly, be reasonable,’ Lucy said. ‘The mansion in England is worth a couple of millions. Think about it. While grandpa was alive, you never once came here to visit me and grandpa. Grandpa is too generous to give you a mansion.’

‘Lucy,’ Quan Wen called.

‘Mr Quan, call all of Dawson’s company directors to attend a meeting tomorrow at Dawson’s company headquarters,’ Lucy said. ‘Mr Hua, follow me to my study room.’

Hua Xi Tong followed Lucy, and Kelly was happy to see Lucy put Quan Wen in his place.

‘Little boy, don’t dream about receiving a dollar from Dawson’s company,’

Kelly said. ‘You’re only an adopted grandson. Lucy is the rightful heir.’

In Lucy’s study room, she poured Hua Xi Tong a glass of water.

‘Are you Hua Xi Tong?’ Lucy asked.

‘Yes,’ Hua Xi Tong said.

‘Is your mother Mandarin?’ Lucy asked.

‘Yes,’ Hua Xi Tong said.

‘My mum is Mandarin too,’ Lucy said. ‘I’m not angry at you. I’m shocked my dad has a son with another woman. My grandpa told me my dad loved my mum.’

‘I understand,’ Hua Xi Tong said.

‘I won’t contest my grandpa’s will,’ Lucy said. ‘You’re my little brother. In the future come and see me if you need any help.’

Lucy was grateful to meet her little brother. It made her feel less alone since her grandpa died.

‘Thank you big sister,’ Hua Xi Tong said.

After Dawson Brenda died, the atmosphere at Dawson’s company was tensed. The directors’ support were divided between Lucy and Quan Wen. If Quan Wen was CEO, it would be easier for them to eliminate him than Lucy who was Dawson Brenda’s legitimate granddaughter.

During the meeting at Dawson’s company, some directors threatened to quit if Quan Wen wasn’t made CEO.

‘Young mistress Lucy, Quan Wen contributed a lot to Dawson’s company over the years,’ a director said. ‘He has a right to be CEO. If you don’t resign then we’ll resign.’

Lucy wasn’t surprised the greedy directors betrayed her. But she had to consider the livelihood of Dawson’s company’s employees. She couldn’t destroy everything Dawson Brenda built because her pride stopped her from resigning.

In the lowest moment of Lucy’s life, the meeting room door opened and Zhen Wu walked into the room.

'If everyone wants to resign then go ahead,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu wore a black suit, and he gave off an intimidating aura. He walked to Lucy, kissed her forehead and sat next to her.

'Lucy, I'm sorry I'm late,' Zhen Wu said.

'Zhen Wu, you're on time,' Lucy said.

'Lucy, I hate wearing suits,' Zhen Wu whispered in Lucy's ear. 'Later you have to compensate me.'

Quan Wen saw Lucy blushed, and he couldn't control his jealousy.

End of Chapter Seventy-Five

Related



Chapter Seventy-Six

Supergirl.

‘Who said they wanted to resign?’ Zhen Wu asked coldly.

The directors didn’t know who Zhen Wu was, and why Zhen Wu was affectionate with Lucy in front of them. They didn’t believe Lucy could do anything to them.

‘If young mistress Lucy doesn’t resign then I’ll resign,’ George Brown said.

‘George Brown, a forty-two-year old man,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘He worked for Dawson’s company since he graduated from college. He is the director of security. Since Dawson’s company bought a third party’s security software, it won’t make a difference if you resign. Who is the HR Director Wu?’

‘I am,’ Mr Wu said.

‘Director Wu, settle Mr Brown’s severance package,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘What right do you have to fire me?’ George Brown asked.

‘Mr Brown, don’t misunderstand,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I didn’t fire you, you resigned. Everyone here who isn’t deaf can testify you resigned. Lucy is my fiance, she contracted me to be the co-CEO of Dawson’s company.’

‘You’ll regret this,’ George Brown said.

George Brown stood to leave.

'Wait,' Zhen Wu said. 'Guards, escort Mr Brown outside. Give him a body search, and don't let him take any of Dawson's company's property. Mr Brown, you should understand this isn't personal. This is a common protocol to protect the interests of Dawson's company.'

'You!' George Brown said and stormed out of the meeting room.

The other directors were silent after George Brown left.

'Call Manager Robert here,' Zhen Wu said to the secretary.

The secretary went downstairs to escort Robert to the meeting room. Robert didn't know why the CEO wanted to see him, but he followed the secretary to the meeting room.

'Sit,' Zhen Wu said.

Robert sat in George Brown's vacant chair.

'If no one else wants to resign, I'll start the meeting,' Zhen Wu said.

The secretary gave out the reports to the directors.

'Here are Dawson's company's financial reports for the last three years,' Zhen Wu said. 'Dawson's company's biggest investment in the last three years is the four hundred million dollar development site. I've contracted Hei Fen to oversee the project. Are there any objections?'

No one objected. The directors knew Hei Fen was a director at Tan Lang. They didn't know how Zhen Wu was able to get Tan Lang to agree to collaborate with Dawson's company.

After the meeting ended the baffled directors left the meeting room.

'Big brother Zhen Wu, I'm Quan Wen,' Quan Wen said. 'I'm Lucy's little brother.'

Zhen Wu didn't shake Quan Wen's hand.

'Wait for me in the cafe downstairs,' Zhen Wu said. 'I have something I want to say to you in private.'

Lucy suspected Zhen Wu knew what Quan Wen did, because Zhen Wu was

usually polite to others, Zhen Wu wouldn't be angry for no reason.

Zhen Wu held Lucy's hand and they walked to Robert's office.

'Young mistress Lucy, CEO Zhen,' Robert greeted.

'Congratulations on your promotion,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu shook Robert's hand.

'CEO Zhen, I don't deserve this promotion,' Robert said. 'I've only been here for a short time.'

'You're the most suitable candidate to take over Mr Brown's position,' Zhen Wu said. 'Talent has nothing to do with time. I've reviewed your business achievements. You're a talented man.'

Zhen Wu smiled at Robert, and he led Lucy outside.

'Robert, who was that little boy who visited your office with Lucy Brenda?' John asked.

'CEO Zhen,' Robert said.

'Do you mean Zhen Wu?' John asked. 'Robert, you have to save me. Put in a good word for me with him. I have a wife to support. In the past I offended him.'

'Don't worry,' Robert said. 'CEO Zhen only wants to deal with the directors who threatened Lucy.'

'Really?' John asked. 'What happened in the meeting?'

Robert explained to John what happened during the meeting.

'Robert, do you know who Zhen Wu is?' John asked. 'He's the CEO of Yue's company. His godmother is Shu Tang Jue's wife. No wonder Hei Fan from Tan Lang agreed to collaborate with Dawson's company. What's more shocking is Zhen Wu's alias is C.Y.'

Robert received another surprise that day.

In the cafe, Zhen Wu sat opposite Quan Wen.

'Lucy is my fiance,' Zhen Wu said. 'I don't want any man to dream of stealing Lucy from me. I want you to move out of Dawson's mansion tonight. According

to grandpa's will, I have the right to take back your twenty percent shares of Dawson's company. If you don't behave, I'll do more than take away your shares and position at Dawson's company.'

'You're an outsider,' Quan Wen said. 'You're not Lucy's husband. You can't make any decisions on behalf of Dawson's company.'

Quan Wen didn't know Zhen Wu's identity. Quan Wen thought Zhen Wu was a gold digger.

'Lucy, don't be fooled by him,' Quan Wen said. 'He only wants to use you to gain control of Dawson's company. After you hand over your shares to him, he'll break up with you.'

'Quan Wen, you're not allowed to insult Zhen Wu,' Lucy said.

'Lucy, you don't have to be angry,' Zhen Wu said. 'Quan Wen, don't make me use force. Make sure you move out of Dawson's mansion tonight.'

Zhen Wu and Lucy stood and they left the cafe together.

Quan Wen smashed a glass onto the floor.

'MF, who do you think you are?' Quan Wen asked.

Yue Ni sat on Zhen Wu's vacant seat.

'Big brother Zhen Wu is the CEO of Yue's company,' Yue Ni said. 'His godmother is the wife of Tan Lang's leader and he has a loveable little sister, me.'

Quan Wen looked confusedly at Yue Ni.

'I forgot to introduce myself,' Yue Ni said. She gave him a business card. 'If you want to contest Dawson Brenda's will, you can contact me at Yue's law firm. I'll help you keep your twenty percent of Dawson's company shares.'

'Who let you in the building?' Quan Wen said.

'Big sister Lucy is my big brother's fiance,' Yue Ni said. 'I can come here anytime.'

Yue Ni opened her laptop and she showed Quan Wen footage of when he attempted to assault Lucy.

'Take a look,' Yue Ni said.

'Impossible,' Quan Wen said. 'I erased this footage. How did you get this?'

'I have a hundred backups of this footage,' Yue Ni said. She waved the CD in front of Quan Wen. 'If you don't behave, this footage will be sent to everyone at Dawson's company and you'll be disgraced.'

'You little bitch,' Quan Wen cursed.

Quan Wen tried to snatch the CD from Yue Ni's hand, but she twisted his arm.

'Who are you to dare touch me?' Yue Ni asked. 'Don't think because my big brother went easy on you, I'll let you get away with hurting my big sister Lucy. Don't you dare touch big sister Lucy again. If you do, I'll make sure you'll never walk again.'

Yue Ni kicked Quan Wen to the floor. She didn't want to waste her time on a scum like Quan Wen. She walked to the counter and bought an ice-cream cone to get rid of the bad taste of wasting her breath talking to Quan Wen ***

End of Chapter Seventy-Six

Related



Chapter Seventy-Seven

Apple tea.

Zhen Wu drove Lucy home.

'Zhen Wu, are you angry?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu held Lucy's hand and he pulled her to her bedroom. He slammed the door shut, held her waist and pressed her back against the wall. He leaned his forehead on her forehead.

'I'm angry,' Zhen Wu said. 'I've never been this angry.'

Lucy was the only woman who Zhen Wu was attracted to.

'Lucy, you have to take responsibility,' Zhen Wu whispered.

In that moment Lucy thought Zhen Wu looked like the devil who wanted to seduce her.

'How do I take responsibility?' Lucy asked.

Zhen Wu stroked Lucy's cheeks, and he slowly kissed her soft lips. She held his shoulders, he unbuttoned her shirt and stroked her back.

'Zhen Wu...' Lucy called.

Lucy's voice made Zhen Wu realised what he was doing. He hugged her and propped his chin and her head. He waited for his heart to stop racing.

'Zhen Wu...' Lucy called.

'Lucy, don't move,' Zhen Wu said. 'If you move, I won't wait until our wedding night.'

In the past Zhen Wu heard many people say he was born to have everything, because he was Yue Gu Zai's son. Zhen Wu didn't deny the truth, Yue Gu Zai gave him everything he wanted. So he lived for more than twenty years without experiencing jealousy. Lucy was an exception. Seeing another man touch his Lucy made him crazy with jealousy.

Yue Ni had the Dawson Mansion garden to herself. She sat on a bench, turned on her laptop and she watched live footage of the people she cared about. Zhen Wu was making out with Lucy in Lucy's bedroom. Bai Yu Tian and Chu Gian were kissing in Chu Gian's car when they were supposed to be on a mission. Shu Tang Jue and Nan Ma were on the verge of kissing. Cheng Yi and Qua Qua were bantering and denying their attraction to each other. Yue Ni thought Cheng Yi wasn't suave like Yue Gu Zai, Yue Gu Zai won even if he lost a fight with Zhen Zhen because Yue Gu Zai always found a way to kiss and makeup after a fight with Zhen Zhen.

Yue Ni turned off her laptop. She thought the adults were setting a bad example for her innocent eyes. She regretted she didn't stay at the cafe longer to kill time by taunting the Quan Wen scum.

Yue Ni walked around the spacious garden. She walked into a maze and accidentally found a young man who looked like a twenty-year-old man sleeping on a bench. He wore a white collar shirt and his skin was paler than his cream pants. She didn't know why she thought he looked lonely.

Hua Xi Tong opened his eyes, and he smiled at Yue Ni.

'Hello,' Hua Xi Tong greeted.

Yue Ni felt like a giddy girl who met her first love.

'Hello, I'm Yue Ni,' Yue Ni said. 'I didn't know you're... sleeping... here.'

Yue Ni would jump out a window if someone found out the genius Zhen Zhen's daughter was stammering in front of a man.

'It's OK,' Hua Xi Tong said. 'I was only closing my eyes for a minute.'

'Hua Xi Tong?' Yue Ni asked.

Yue Ni had investigated Hua Xi Tong. He claimed to be Lucy's little brother from a different mother.

'You know who I am?' Hua Xi Tong asked.

'No... my big brother's fiance is big sister Lucy,' Yue Ni said. 'Big sister Lucy told me that you're her little brother.'

'Oh, big sister told you about me,' Hua Xi Tong said. 'Do you want to drink apple tea?'

'Yes,' Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni was happy to listen to Hua Xi Tong's soothing voice.

Hua Xi Tong poured Yue Ni a cup of apple tea. She accepted the cup and drank a sip.

'It tastes delicious,' Yue Ni said.

'It's good you like it,' Hua Xi Tong said.

'You look pale,' Yue Ni said. 'Do you want me to take you to the hospital?'

'No,' Hua Xi Tong said. 'It's a hereditary illness.'

While Yue Ni drank tea, Quan Wen packed his bags and left the Dawson Mansion.

The next day, Hei Fen managed the Dawson's company's development site while Zhen Wu, Lucy, Yue Ni and Hua Xi Tong flew home. Hua Xia Tong accepted Zhen Wu and Yue Ni's invitation to stay at the Yue Mansion.

Yue Ni spent time spying on Hua Xi Tong. Yue Ni was entranced by Hua Xi Tong that she didn't know Yue Di Yi was missing.

At the Yue Household, since Yue Di Yi learnt how to crawl, he would make a mess around the mansion. He was mischievous like Yue Ni. Whenever his old

nanny was preoccupied, he would run out of the nursery. No one knew how he often managed to run past the guards and out to the garden. Lucky Zhen Zhen engraved his name and the emergency phone numbers on his necklace pendant. Neighbours would ring one of the phone numbers if they found him playing in their gardens.

That day, Yue Di Yi was kidnapped.

The kidnapper called Zhen Zhen's phone first. Zhen Zhen was experimenting in the lab, and she ignored the phone call. When the kidnapper rang again, she switched off her phone.

Yue Gu Zai was the second person the kidnapper called. Yue Gu Zai blocked the strange number.

Huyen Di was the third person the kidnapper called. After Huyen Di heard the kidnapper demanded a ransom, he hung up his phone.

Bai Yu Tian was the fourth person the kidnapper called. Bai Yu Tian was in the middle of undressing Chu Gian. Bai Yu Tian pressed a button to trace the call then he hung up. Bai Yu Tian wouldn't let anyone interrupt him sleeping with his wife.

Cheng Yi was the fifth person the kidnapper called. Cheng Yi was bantering with Qua Qua. After he hung up his phone, Qua Qua broke his phone. It was the fifth phone Qua Qua broke that month. Buying new phones became one of Cheng Yi's habits.

Zhen Wu was the sixth person the kidnapper called. Zhen Wu politely told the kidnapper to call Yue Ni, and he thanked the kidnapper for calling.

The kidnapper was angry he kidnapped an unwanted baby boy. He smashed his phone, and vowed to kill Yue Di Yi if the next person he called didn't pay the ransom.

Yue Di Yi played with a toy in a room. Yue Di Yi didn't know why the strange uncle was muttering to himself.

Yue Ni was the seventh person the kidnapper called. Yue Ni was busy watching Hua Xi Tong balance a stack of books.

'I'm a busy woman,' Yue Ni said. 'Let me hear my little brother's voice.'

'Little boy, laugh,' the kidnapper ordered.

'Xiao Di Yi, it's big sister,' Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni ran to Hua Xi Tong and caught a book before it hit Hua Xi Tong's foot. Hua Xi Tong smiled at Yue Ni, because he was used to Yue Ni spying on him.

Yue Di Yi laughed and clapped his hands. He was happy to hear Yue Ni's voice.

'Xiao Di Yi, you're not a duck,' Yue Ni said. 'You're this big yet you don't know how to say big sister. Big sister is busy. Have fun playing, and the uncle with you will take you home for dinner.'

The kidnapper deliberated whether to call the last emergency number or kill Yue Di Yi. He looked at Yue Di Yi's designer clothes, and reasoned that at least one of Yue Di Yi's family members would care about Yue Di Yi's life. He called the last number.

Shu Tang Li was the eighth person the kidnapper called.

'Who is it?' Shu Tang Li asked. 'You better have a good reason for waking me up. If you don't, I'll kill you faster than a bee sting.'

'I'm holding your relative hostage,' the kidnapper said. 'If you don't want the little boy to die, prepare ten thousand dollars.'

'What relative?' Shu Tang Li asked.

Shu Tang Li got out of bed and he poured a glass of water.

'Little boy, laugh,' the kidnapper ordered.

Yue Di Yi heard Shu Tang Li's voice and he laughed.

'Xiao Di Yi?' Shu Tang Li asked.

'You heard the little boy,' the kidnapper said. 'I'll kill the little boy if you try any tricks.'

Shu Tang Li was happy he had a reason to see Yue Ni.

'I won't try any tricks,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I'll meet you at the location of your choice. Return Xiao Di Yi to me, and I'll give you one hundred thousand dollars.'

The kidnapper couldn't believe Yue Di Yi was worth one hundred thousand dollars.

'Don't worry,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I know you're a Good Samaritan. You only want to return my little brother Xiao Di Yi safely.'

'Yes, yes,' the kidnapper said. 'I'm a Good Samaritan. I'll return your little brother immediately.'

A while later, Shu Tang Li happily exchanged one hundred thousand dollars for Yue Di Yi's life. If the kidnapper knew Yue Di Yi's worth, the kidnapper would have been a millionaire.

Shu Tang Li carried Yue Di Yi to the Shu Mansion. Yue Di Yi cried in Shu Tang Li's arms, because he only got to play outside for a couple of hours.

'Xiao Ni, Xiao Di Yi is at my home,' Shu Tang Li said. 'Do you want me to come over?'

Yue Ni bought an umbrella for Hua Xi Tong because she didn't want him to get sunburnt while planting flowers in the garden.

'Little boy Shu Tang Li, don't you have anything else to do besides kidnapping my little brother?' Yue Ni asked.

'Xiao Ni, how can you be this cold toward me?' Shu Tang Li asked. 'I picked up Xiao Di Yi because no one cared enough to pick him up.'

'I can hear Xiao Di Yi talking gibberish,' Yue Ni said. 'It means he wants to go outside and play. You should take him out, and bring him home for dinner.'

Shu Tang Li covered Yue Di Yi's mouth.

'Xiao Di Yi wants me to take him home,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I'll bring him home now.'

Yue Ni hung up her phone.

'Xiao Hua, do you want to take a trip with me?' Yue Ni asked.

'No,' Hua Xi Tong said.

'Oh... if later a strange little boy carries my little brother here, tell him that you didn't see me,' Yue Ni said. 'If he gives you my little brother, give my little

brother to my big brother to look after. Bye.'

Yue Ni disappeared, and Hua Xi Tong continued to plant flowers in the garden.

Later, Hua Xi Tong met the strange little boy.

'Have you seen Xiao Ni?' Shu Tang Li asked.

'No,' Hua Xi Tong said.

'Who are you?' Shu Tang Li asked.

'Hua Xi Tong,' Hua Xi Tong said.

'It's pleasure to meet you,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I'll let you get back to gardening. Give Xiao Di Yi to big brother Zhen Wu. Bye.'

Shu Tang Li left the Yue Mansion, and he ordered a Tan Lang gang member to investigate Hua Xi Tong.

At the Bai Mansion, Bai Yu Tian lost his patience.

'Chu Gian, don't you have something to tell me?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'No,' Chu Gian said.

'Chu Gian, are you pregnant?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'How did you find out?' Chu Gian asked.

'Your husband is a doctor,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'Of course I would notice when your body changes. Would you have told me the truth if I didn't ask you?'

'I've been busy working and I didn't get a chance to tell you,' Chu Gian said.

'What do you want to do?' Bai Yu Tian asked.

'Today I have another mission,' Chu Gian said.

Chu Gian waved bye to Bai Yu Tian and she left home.

Bai Yu Tian was in a bad mood until he received a phone call from Yue Ni.

'Uncle Bai, I've decided I want to become a doctor to save human lives,' Yue Ni said. 'You have the privilege to be a teacher of a brilliant and beautiful pupil like me.'

'My loveable pupil,' Bai Yu Tian said. 'If you want to make your teacher happy,

I want you to give my pregnant wife light missions.'

'Uncle Bai, why didn't you tell me aunty Chu's pregnant sooner?' Yue Ni asked.
'Congratulations. I hope you and aunty Chu will have a house full of children.
Bye.'

In the evening, Helen carried a suitcase and she knocked on the front door of the Yue Mansion. The guards let her inside, and she overheard Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen fighting over Zhen Zhen's lab.

End of Chapter Seventy-Seven

Related



Chapter Seventy-Eight

Cheating.

Summary of Side Story:

Yue Ni gave Su Xiao Ya a marketing company owned by Ni Sheng as an engagement gift.

A drunk Li Cheng went to see Su Xiao Ya, and he forced a kiss on Su Xiao Ya. Huyen Di picked up Su Xiao Ya from work, and stopped Li Cheng before Li Cheng assaulted Su Xiao Ya.

Chapter Seventy-Eight

Helen took Zhen Zhen and Nan Ma on a girls' night out.

'Helen, why did you run away from home?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'At a business function, William had a long cosy chat with a Mandarin guest,' Helen said. 'Zhen Zhen, married men are the same. Before William married me, he wouldn't even let me carry key. After he married me, I carry groceries by myself.'

Zhen Zhen didn't think Helen's problem was a problem, because Yue Gu Zai didn't hold anything for Zhen Zhen before they were married.

'Helen's right,' Nan Ma said. 'Before Shu Tang Jue married me, he told me I'm beautiful every day. After he married me, he loves looking at profits more than me. I bought new heels, and I asked him if he noticed anything different about me. He didn't even look at me. He nodded his head, and read financial reports.'

'I don't think that is a serious problem,' Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Gu Zai didn't praise Zhen Zhen was beautiful before they were married.

'It's a serious problem,' Helen and Nan Ma said together.

'Zhen Zhen, you should pay more attention to your husband,' Nan Ma said. 'You shouldn't spend half a month in your lab. It doesn't matter how beautiful you are, if you spend most of your time in your lab, your husband will have a mistress behind your back. You two have been married for many years, and have two children together. What if your husband is sick of you, and hates being with you? He'll run off with his mistress.'

'I thought they have three children,' Helen said.

'Xiao Di Yi is adopted,' Nan Ma explained.

'Xiao Di Yi is mine and Gu Zai's son,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Zhen Zhen, the point is don't you want your husband to look at you twenty-four hours a day?' Nan Ma asked.

'It's impossible to look at a person twenty-four hours a day,' Zhen Zhen said.

'We need to show our husbands how attractive their wives are,' Helen said.

'It's not a good idea,' Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen felt that Yue Gu Zai loved her enough not to blow up her lab.

At seven in the evening, Zhen Zhen came out of the bathroom after having a shower. It was unusual Yue Gu Zai wasn't at home, because he handed over Yue's company and Ni Sheng to Zhen Wu and Yue Ni. So Yue Gu Zai usually came home early. Nan Ma and Helen's warnings made Zhen Zhen anxious.

Yue Gu Zai arrived home and he was surprised to see Zhen Zhen was in their bedroom.

'Zhen Zhen, why aren't you in your lab?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

Yue Gu Zai took off his clothes to shower. Zhen Zhen was depressed after she saw a lipstick mark on his shirt collar. Her husband came back from seeing his mistress.

'Today I went out with Nan Ma and Helen,' Zhen Zhen said calmly and stared

at the TV screen.

'Um, I'm going to shower,' Yue Gu Zai said.

When Yue Gu Zai came out of the shower, the TV was turned off and Zhen Zhen was reading a book.

'You don't want to watch TV anymore?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'The movie ended,' Zhen Zhen said. 'The movie was about a triad boss' mistress wanting to become his wife. The mistress left a lipstick mark on his shirt collar, because the mistress wanted his wife to find out and divorce him.'

Yue Gu Zai laid in bed next to Zhen Zhen.

'Why did you watch such a rubbish movie?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'Nan Ma said it's common for underworld men to have mistresses in different cities,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Oh, are you saying Shu Tang Jue has a mistress?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'No,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Helen agreed with Nan Ma that there will be a day married men will be sick of their wives and run off with their mistresses. Gu Zai are you sick of me and hate being with me?'

'Zhen Zhen if it's not necessary, in the future don't go out with Nan Ma and Helen,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai was angry Nan Ma and Helen was feeding Zhen Zhen rubbish.

The next evening, Zhen Zhen went out to a bar with Nan Ma and Helen. Zhen Zhen was depressed. Yue Gu Zai had a mistress. He was sick of her and hated her. He only married her because he wanted Zhen Wu to have a family. They've been married for years, but Yue Gu Zai didn't say he loved her once. She was a bad wife, she couldn't cook or do housework and she spent most days in her lab. Of course Yue Gu Zai would have a mistress.

'Zhen Zhen, what are you thinking about?' Nan Ma asked.

'Last night, Gu Zai came home late,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I found a lipstick mark on his shirt collar. Do you two think he has a mistress?'

'What?' Helen asked. 'Zhen Zhen, you have to confront your husband. Another

woman's lipstick on your husband's shirt collar is a serious problem. I'm grateful at least William doesn't come home with lipstick marks on his shirt collar.'

'Helen, what if it's a misunderstanding?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'What misunderstanding?' Nan Ma said. 'Zhen Zhen, how often does your husband sleep with you?'

'Some months once a week and other months he sleeps with me once a month,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Once a month?' Nan Ma asked. 'Your husband has a mistress.'

'Nan Ma, it's not like that,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Some months I only come out of the lab one day.'

'Zhen Zhen, you being in the lab most days gave your husband opportunities to go out and see his mistress,' Nan Ma said.

'Nan Ma, why are you angry at Shu Tang Jue?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Shu Tang Jue's been calling that Japanese vixen behind my back,' Nan Ma said.

'Nan Ma, it's a misunderstanding,' Zhen Zhen said. 'She lives in Japan.'

'So what?' Nan Ma asked. 'Zhen Zhen, if your husband who has been loyal to you for years suddenly has a mistress then it's possible for Shu Tang Jue to have a mistress too.'

'Nan Ma is right,' Helen said. 'It's common for cheaters to be from the same circle.'

'Call the owner here,' Nan Ma said to a hostess.

The owner ran into the VIP room.

'Mrs Shu,' the owner greeted.

'I want all your men here to serve us wine,' Nan Ma said.

'All the men?' the owner asked.

'Yes,' Nan Ma said. 'Don't worry, I can afford to pay for all of them and I'll give you a generous tip too.'

End of Chapter Seventy-Eight

Related



Chapter Seventy-Nine

Not cheating.

Summary of Side Story:

Huyen Di explained to Su Xiao Ya how at first he thought their meeting was a coincidence and he pitied her. Then over time he had feelings for her.

Su Xiao Ya wanted to call off the engagement, because she thought it wasn't fair for Huyen Di to raise another man's baby. Huyen Di told Su Xiao Ya that the baby was their baby, and part of the Huyen Household.

Chapter Seventy-Nine

Yue Gu Zai and Su Tang Jue went to the bar to pick up Zhen Zhen and Nan Ma. They didn't expect to see their wives drunk in a VIP room full of men serving their wives wine. They kicked the men out of the room.

'In the future, keep a close eye on your wife,' Yue Gu Zai warned.

'If you have a good wife then she wouldn't come here,' Shu Tang Jue said.

Yue Gu Zai and Shu Tang Jue scoffed and they took their wives home. But they forgot to call William Hill to pick up Helen.

Later at the Yue Mansion, Zhen Wu was surprised to see Yue Gu Zai carry a drunk Zhen Zhen home.

'Dad, is mum drunk?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Where's your little sister?' Yue Gu Zai asked.

'I don't know,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu had a feeling Yue Ni did something to make Yue Gu Zai angry.

'Tell your little sister to come home,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'If your sister doesn't come home within two hours then she doesn't need to come home anymore.'

Zhen Wu called Yue Ni, and she came home immediately. Zhen Wu found out why Yue Gu Zai was angry at Yue Ni. Yue Ni purposely left a lipstick mark on Yue Gu Zai's shirt collar, and made Zhen Zhen misunderstand Yue Gu Zai had a mistress.

The following morning, Zhen Zhen woke up hungry. She didn't remember how she got home last night, but she remembered she had two glasses of wine. She walked downstairs and didn't see breakfast on the dining table. Usually Yue Gu Zai cooked breakfast for her. She walked into the living room, and saw Yue Gu Zai reading a newspaper.

'Gu Zai, I'm hungry,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Cook your own breakfast,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai was angry Zhen Zhen went to a bar to have men serve her wine.

'Fine,' Zhen Zhen said. 'I'll cook my own breakfast.'

Zhen Zhen boiled two eggs in the kitchen. It was the only thing she could cook that was edible. The eggs tasted bland, and she missed Yue Gu Zai's omelettes and pancakes.

Zhen Zhen heard the front door open, and she ran to the front door.

'Gu Zai, where are you going?' Zhen Zhen asked.

Yue Gu Zai ignored Zhen Zhen because he was still angry at her.

Zhen Zhen pulled Yue Gu Zai's shirt sleeve.

'Gu Zai, where are you going?' Zhen Zhen asked again.

'To see another woman,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Gu Zai, it's your fault I was drunk last night,' Zhen Zhen said and cried. 'You

came home with a lipstick mark on your collar... you're seeing your mistress behind my back... you're sick of me... you hate me.'

'Zhen Zhen, don't cry,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'That day I went to clean up Xiao Ni's mess at Ni Sheng. When I wasn't paying attention, she put her lipstick mark on my shirt collar. I don't hate you. I only wish you didn't spend all day in your lab so I can be with you.'

'Really?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'Yes,' Yue Gu Zai said and kissed Zhen Zhen's lips.

'If you're telling the truth, why are you going out?' Zhen Zhen asked.

'I want to go out and buy breakfast for you,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Eating boiled eggs isn't nutritious enough.'

'Gu Zai, I forgot about Helen,' Zhen Zhen said.

'Don't worry,' Yue Gu Zai said. 'William picked up Helen at the bar.'

Zhen Wu bottle fed Yue Di Yi because Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai were too busy fighting to feed Yue Di Yi. Afterward Zhen Wu went to college.

Zhen Wu had promised Lucy that he would help new college students enrol in their courses.

That day the enrolment queues were long.

Two of the new college students were Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei.

Yang Han An thought Zhen Wu was the most handsome man she met. She grabbed Zhen Yuan to jump the queue and talk to Zhen Wu.

'Line up in an orderly fashion,' Zhen Wu said.

'Big brother, I need your help,' Yang Han An said.

End of Chapter Seventy-Nine

Related



Chapter Eighty

Celery.

Lucy and Sun Ling Hui came back to the enrolment queues after giving a group of new college students a tour around the campus.

Sun Ling Hui was annoyed the queues were long except for Zhen Wu's queue. Zhen Wu was working on his laptop, and if students approached him, he would tell them to line up in the other queues.

'CEO Zhen, why are you slacking off while the rest of the student council members are helping the new students?' Sun Ling Hui asked.

Zhen Wu wouldn't have looked up if Lucy wasn't standing next to Sun Ling Hui.

'Which of your eyes can see I'm doing nothing?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Both my eyes,' Sun Ling Hui said.

'I'm the supervisor here,' Zhen Wu said. 'It's an important job.'

Lucy knew Zhen Wu was still angry at Sun Ling Hui for reporting false rumors about Zhen Wu in the college magazine.

'Xiao Hui, help enrol the new students then guide them to their dormitories,' Lucy said.

'Alright,' Sun Ling Hui said. 'It's my fault for being born with a servant's fate.'

Sun Ling Hui accepted Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei's registration forms. She helped them enrol in their courses, and took them to their dorm room but they kept looking behind their shoulders at Zhen Wu.

Sun Ling Hui noticed the infatuation looks in Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei's eyes and she shook her head.

'Zhen Wu is the handsome prince in the college,' Sun Ling Hui said. 'He's rich and powerful. See the beautiful girl next to him? She's Lucy, the president of the student council, his girlfriend. She's smart, beautiful, rich and has a good personality. You two can stop looking at Zhen Wu. There is no chance you two can break up Zhen Wu and Lucy.'

Wu Min Mei believed Sun Ling Hui. Although she thought Zhen Wu was handsome, he and Lucy made an attractive couple.

Yan Han An resented why Zhen Wu was indifferent to her and the other female students, but loving toward Lucy.

Sun Ling Hui looked at Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei's personal files.

'Yang Han An, you're a good violinist, why are you wasting your skills here when you could be accepted to the best Arts college?' Sun Ling Hui asked. 'And Wu Min Mei, your background is in music too, but why are you enrolled in commerce and economics courses like Yang Han An?'

'My mum grew up in this city,' Yang Han An said. 'And my dad wants to give his company to me, because I'm their only child.'

'It's your lives,' Sun Ling Hui said. 'You can enrol in any courses as long as you pay your fees. Here are free college year books for new students.'

Sun Ling Hui dropped off Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei at their dorm room and she walked back to the queues.

In the year book were unauthorized photos of Zhen Wu. Sun Ling Hui had secretly followed Zhen Wu and Lucy around campus and she snapped candid photos of Zhen Wu and Lucy.

'Xiao Mei, catch me before I faint,' Wu Min Mei said. 'Zhen Wu is the CEO of Yue's company. Look how photogenic he is. His alias is C.Y. Too bad he's taken by the president of the student council.'

'Yes, he is photogenic,' Yang Han An said.

It was love at first sight for Yang Han An.

'Let's tidy our dorm room and go eat,' Yang Han An said.

'OK,' Wu Min Mei said.

Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei unpacked their bags and they walked to the cafe on campus.

'Xiao An, look over there,' Wu Min Mei said. 'It's Zhen Wu and Lucy.'

'I see,' Yang Han An said. 'Let's go get our food and sit at their table.'

'Xiao An, I don't think that is a good idea,' Wu Min Mei said.

'There's no problem,' Yang Han An said. 'We can use the excuse of wanting to thank them for helping us enrol.'

Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei brought their food to Zhen Wu and Lucy's table.

'Hello president Lucy,' Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei greeted.

Lucy saw the way Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei had stars in their eyes while looking at Zhen Wu.

'Hello,' Lucy said. 'Take a seat.'

'Thank you,' Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei said together.

Wu Min Mei thought Sun Ling Hui was right, Lucy was had a good personality and wasn't a snob like other rich people.

'Big brother Zhen Wu, thank you for helping us today,' Yang Han An said.

'It's not a problem,' Zhen Wu said but his eyes were on Lucy.

Hang Mac heard Sun Ling Hui gossiped about Yang Han An and Wu Min Mei. Hang Mac thought they were beautiful girls.

Zhen Wu frowned when Lucy transferred all the celery from her plate to his plate.

'Zhen Wu, I don't like the taste of celery,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu put Lucy's celery in his mouth.

Hang Mac wanted to tease Zhen Wu. Hang Mac picked up celery to put into Zhen Wu's plate.

'What are you doing?' Zhen Wu asked Hang Mac.

'I don't like the taste of celery too,' Hang Mac said innocently.

'It has nothing to do with me,' Zhen Wu said. 'If you don't want to eat celery then throw it in the bin.'

'It'll be a waste to throw food in the bin,' Hang Mac said. 'Didn't you eat Lucy's celery?'

'I'm full,' Zhen Wu said.

'President Lucy, we should go prepare for the opening ceremony,' Lam Ting said.

Lam Ting was jealous Zhen Wu doted on Lucy.

'You're right,' Lucy said.

Lucy heard Yue Ni caused trouble for Zhen Wu, and he couldn't sleep last night.

'Zhen Wu, go sleep in the student council building,' Lucy said. 'I'll wake you up when I'm done preparing for the opening ceremony.'

'I want to go home,' Zhen Wu sulked.

Unlike everyone else at the table, Lucy wasn't surprised it was possible for Zhen Wu to sulk too, because they've been together long enough for her to see how childish Zhen Wu was.

'Zhen Wu, you're a member of the student council,' Lucy said. 'You need to stay for the opening ceremony to welcome the new students.'

'Then I quit,' Zhen Wu said.

'Zhen Wu, do you want to break your promise to me?' Lucy asked.

'Alright,' Zhen Wu said. 'I'll go sleep in the student council building and wait for you.'

Zhen Wu kissed Lucy's cheek and he walked to the student council building.

Lam Ting couldn't get used to Zhen Wu only seeing Lucy even when he was in a group setting.

In the afternoon, Zhen Wu pulled Lucy onto the sofa with him. He hugged her, and didn't want to open his eyes.

‘Lucy, what time is it?’ Zhen Wu asked. ‘Do I need to wake up for the opening ceremony?’

‘Yes,’ Lucy said. ‘Zhen Wu, look how tired you are. Why don’t you elect someone to replace Mei Jia? Then you can delegate most of your duties to them.’

Zhen Wu slowly stood. He pulled Lucy up and he let her adjust his clothes.

‘Why didn’t I think of it?’ Zhen Wu asked.

‘Because your IQ is declining by the day,’ Lucy teased.

‘I heard people who are in love have low IQ,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘It’s your fault I have low IQ.’

‘Yes, it’s my fault,’ Lucy said. ‘I wanted you to become a fool in love. That way with your low IQ, no one else would want to be with you.’

Zhen Wu hugged Lucy. He wanted to hold her to go back to sleep.

‘I only want to be with you,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘You can’t leave me.’

Lucy pulled Zhen Wu’s hands out of her shirt.

‘Zhen Wu, we should go,’ Lucy said. ‘I asked Lam Ting to do the speech on behalf of the student council, but we still need to make an appearance.’

‘OK,’ Zhen Wu said.

When Zhen Wu and Lucy arrived at the assembly hall, they overheard Wu Min Mei and Yang Han An gossip while Lam Ting was making a speech on stage.

‘I heard big brother Zhen Wu gave vice-president Lam Ting a love letter and got rejected,’ Wu Min Mei said. ‘Then president Lucy transferred here and pursued big brother Zhen Wu.’

‘Why would Lam Ting reject the CEO of Yue’s company?’ Yang Han An asked.

‘Many students witnessed Lam Ting reject Zhen Wu’s love letter,’ Wu Min Mei said.

The students applauded Lam Ting after her speech ended.

‘Lam Ting is a beautiful girl,’ Lucy said to Zhen Wu. ‘Most men find her

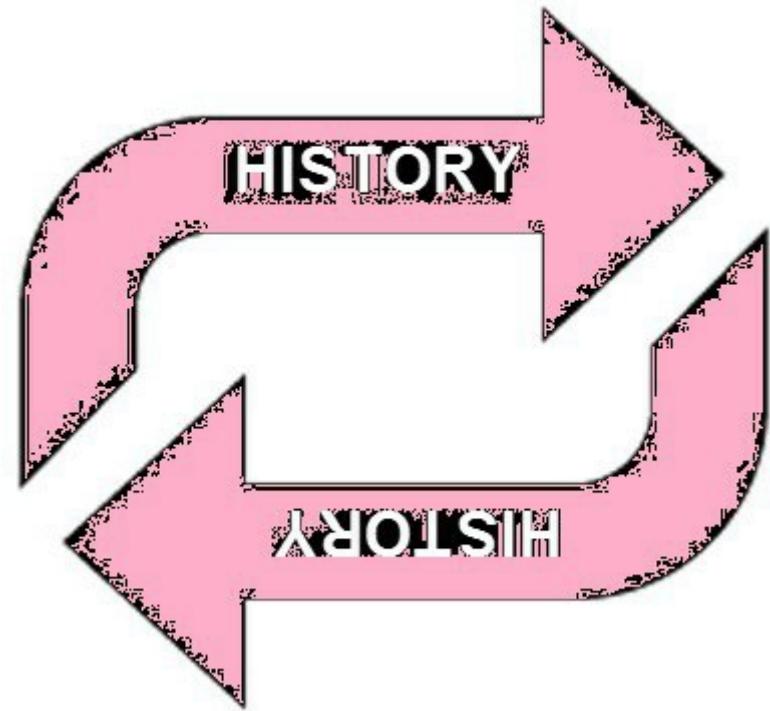
irresistible.'

'Lucy, I've explained to you the love letter incident was a misunderstanding,' Zhen Wu said.

'Of course I care if people spread lies about someone rejecting my loveable boyfriend,' Lucy said.

End of Chapter Eighty

Related



Chapter Eighty-One

History repeats itself.

'Mum, I'm home,' Yang Han An said.

Yang Han An ran into the kitchen. Tan Xu Er was cooking dinner.

'Xiao An, what do you think of the college?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'Good,' Yang Han An said. 'I met the most handsome man today.'

'Oh, who is this man who impressed my picky daughter?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'His name is Zhen Wu,' Yang Han An said.

Tan Yu Er dropped a plate.

'Mum, are you OK?' Yang Han An asked.

'I'm OK,' Tan Xu Er said. She gripped Yang Han An's hand. 'What did you say?'

'I said his name is Zhen Wu,' Yang Han An said. 'He's the CEO of Yue's company.'

'Xiao An, I don't care who you love,' Tan Xu Er said. 'But you can't love Zhen Wu.'

'Why?' Yang Han An asked.

'Listen to me,' Tan Xu Er said. 'Someone rich like him wouldn't be interested in someone from an ordinary family like us.'

'What happened?' Yang Hua asked. 'I heard something break.'

'It's nothing,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I accidentally broke a plate.'

Yang Han An thought Tan Xu Er was acting strange during dinner, because Tan Xu Er couldn't hear Yang Hua until he called Tan Xu Er's name several times.

Yang Han An dreamt of Zhen Wu that night.

The next day was the concert performance show casing the college band.

Hang Mac ran to the student council building, and Hang Mac woke up Zhen Wu.

'What's the problem?' Zhen Wu asked.

'A band member is injured,' Hang Mac said. 'There's only you who can substitute for them last minute.'

A while later at the assembly hall, Lucy saw Hang Mac dragged Zhen Wu on stage. Lucy heard from Sun Ling Hui most of the new female students were infatuated with Zhen Wu. Lucy knew Zhen Wu loved her, but she was still jealous.

The students were in awe when Yang Han An performed a duet with Zhen Wu. Yang Han An played the violin and Zhen Wu played the piano. Their duet was a moving performance.

Yang Han An didn't register the students' applause. She was disappointed the duet ended too soon, and Zhen Wu immediately walked off stage.

'Zhen Wu that was incredible,' Hang Mac said. 'I heard you could play the piano. But I didn't know you're a musical genius. Do you want to join the band?'

Zhen Wu gave Hang Mac a warning look, and Hang Mac coughed.

'Forget I asked,' Hang Mac said.

Zhen Wu walked to Lucy, he held her hand and they walked to his bicycle. On the ride to her dormitory, gentle breezes blew past their bodies.

'Zhen Wu, today you played the piano beautifully,' Lucy said.

Zhen Wu braked in front of Lucy's dormitory.

'Lucy, you look upset,' Zhen Wu said.

'Seeing you perform a duet with another girl made me jealous,' Lucy said.

Lucy wasn't unreasonable like Yue Ni and Nan Ma. Nan Ma made Shu Tang Jue sleep on the floor if Shu Tang Jue made her upset. Zhen Wu thought Lucy was like Zhen Zhen, it was rare for them to be upset.

Zhen Wu stroked Lucy's hair.

'I promise there won't be a next time,' Zhen Wu said.

'I love listening to you play the piano,' Lucy said. She hugged Zhen Wu. 'But in the future I want to be the only one who gets to listen to you play the piano.'

'I promise,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu wanted to do everything to make Lucy happy.

Lucy kissed Zhen Wu's cheek and waved bye to him.

'Go home safely,' Lucy said.

'OK,' Zhen Wu said.

The other female students were envious Lucy got to sit on the back seat of Zhen Wu's bicycle.

'President Lucy,' Yang Han An greeted.

'You played the violin well today,' Lucy said.

'Thank you,' Yang Han An said.

'Can I talk to you in private?' Lucy asked.

'Yes,' Yang Han An said. 'Xiao Mei, wait for me in our dorm room.'

Wu Min Mei walked into the dormitory building, and Yang Han An followed Lucy to a bench under a tree.

'I want you to stay away from Zhen Wu,' Lucy said.

'Don't you believe you're overthinking the situation?' Yang Han An asked.

'I'm a woman too,' Lucy said. 'I can see clearly how you look at Zhen Wu.'

'I admit I'm secretly in love with Zhen Wu,' Yang Han An said. 'You and Zhen Wu aren't married. I'm free to pursue Zhen Wu if I want to.'

'It's your choice,' Lucy said. 'I just don't want you to waste your time. Bye.'

Yang Han An watched Lucy leave. Yang Han An was confident she could make Zhen Wu love her and break up with Lucy.

At the Yue Mansion, Yue Ni was looking over Yang Han An's family background. Yue Ni thought Yue Gu Zai would be interested in dealing with Yang Han An. Then Yue Ni would have more time to find a cure for Hua Xi Tong's illness.

End of Chapter Eighty-One

Related



Chapter Eighty-Two

Shenzhen Nongke Orchid.

Yue Gu Zai was reading a newspaper in the living room. He didn't know why Yue Ni was spying on him for more than half an hour. He couldn't believe he and Zhen Zhen gave birth and raised Yue Ni, but Yue Ni was more like Ling Jia than him and Zhen Zhen combined. He wished Yue Ni was like Zhen Wu so he wouldn't have to worry about Yue Ni so much.

'Hurry up and say what's on your mind,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Ni sat on the sofa next to Yue Gu Zai.

'Dad, let's negotiate,' Yue Ni said. 'I want you to take back your order to send

me to train in Africa as a punishment.'

'No,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai was still angry at Yue Ni for making Zhen Zhen misunderstand him.

'Dad, it's embarrassing if other Ni Sheng members find out I'm being punished,' Zhen Zhen said.

'When you made your mum depressed and go to a bar for other men to serve her wine, you didn't consider it'll embarrass me,' Yue Gu Zai said.

'Dad, you forced me to do this,' Yue Ni said. She threw Yang Han An's family background report on the coffee table. 'Your former lover is back. I'm going to tell mum.'

Yue Gu Zai wasn't threatened by the report on the coffee table. Zhen Zhen knew he was innocent.

'Dad, I heard you lived with this girl's mother for a year,' Yue Ni said. 'Her mother has a good body. I don't believe you could live with her mother for a year and not sleep with her mother. Did you have a love child with her mother? Is this girl my half-sister?'

Ni Sheng's gang members were scared to investigate what happened during the year Yue Gu Zai was missing. Yue Ni could only gather news that Yue Gu Zai lived with Tan Xu Er during the year he was missing.

'Dad, that Tan woman lived in the U.S. for many years,' Yue Ni said. 'Why did she suddenly come back? Is she using Yang Han An to blackmail you? Yang Han An is pursuing big brother. If Yang Han An is your daughter with the Tan woman then Yang Han An is having incestuous thoughts about big brother.'

'Xiao Ni, if you're this free to say nonsense, why don't you focus on your studies?' Yue Gu Zai said. 'Your mum received a call from your teacher. You not attending classes made your mum angry.'

Yue Gu Zai thought at least Ling Jia valued family harmony. He was angry at Yue Ni for causing trouble for their family members. He suspected it was Shu Tang Jue's bad influence that Yue Ni wanted to cause misunderstandings between him and Zhen Zhen so Zhen Zhen would divorce him.

Yue Ni stood and followed Yue Gu Zai.

‘Dad, don’t leave,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Tell me the truth. Did you sleep with that Tan woman? Is Yang Han An my half-sister...’

Yue Ni bumped into Yue Gu Zai’s back, because he froze when he saw Zhen Zhen holding a whip and walking downstairs.

Zhen Zhen was angry Yue Ni skipped classes. Everyone said that Zhen Zhen was too strict on Zhen Wu so Zhen Zhen gave Yue Ni more freedom. In the end Zhen Wu didn’t skip grades, and attended all his classes from primary school to college. Yue Ni on the other hand, skipped grades and skipped her classes too.

Zhen Zhen pulled Yue Ni to the side. Zhen Zhen raised the whip in her hand, but Yue Gu Zai grabbed the whip from her before she could hit Yue Ni’s bottom.

‘Mum, don’t be angry at me,’ Yue Ni said.

Zhen Zhen held Yue Ni’s arm and she pulled Yue Ni to the car.

‘Xiao Ni, today you’re going to attend all your classes,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘If you dare escape, you’ll be spending the rest of your life training in Africa.’

‘Mum, I’m your daughter,’ Yue Ni said. She didn’t want to attend classes.
‘Mum, did you know dad has a love child with his mistress?’

Zhen Zhen turned around to look at Yue Ni.

‘When?’ Zhen Zhen asked.

‘Dad’s mistress is Tan Xu Er,’ Yue Ni said. ‘Mum, do you remember when dad lost his memories? He slept with Tan Xu Er, and he sent her to the U.S. because he didn’t want you to find out he has a love child with Tan Xu Er.’

‘Impossible,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Zhen Zhen heard Tan Xu Er’s name and she knew Yue Gu Zai was innocent.

Yue Gu Zai followed Zhen Zhen and Yue Ni to the car. He was in a good mood
Zhen Zhen didn’t believe Yue Ni’s nonsense.

Yue Ni was frustrated Zhen Zhen and Yue Gu Zai had a solid marriage after many years, and she didn’t have a bargaining chip to use with them.

‘Mum, why is it impossible?’ Yue Ni asked. ‘Dad’s a man. Dad lived with Tan Xu

Er for a year. Why is it impossible for dad to have a love child with Tan Xu Er?’

‘Your dad doesn’t like other people touching him,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘If he has to shake hands with someone, he’ll wipe his hands straight away. If he slept with Tan Xu Er, he would have peeled off his skin years ago. Besides, your uncle Bai showed me proof your dad had a vasectomy when I was pregnant with you. So your dad is not the father of Tan Xu Er’s child.’

‘Really?’ Yue Ni asked. ‘Dad, does that mean I was an accidental baby?’

‘Now you know,’ Yue Gu Zai said.

‘Mum...’ Yue Ni said.

‘Xiao Ni, you don’t get any benefits if I divorce your dad,’ Zhen Zhen said. ‘Stop causing trouble for your dad and me.’

‘Xiao Ni, if you’re into breaking up marriages then we can negotiate,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘If you can find a way to make your small mum divorce your small dad, you won’t need to train in Africa.’

Zhen Zhen hit Yue Gu Zai’s shoulder.

‘Gu Zai, don’t say nonsense,’ Zhen Zhen said.

Yue Ni was Yue Gu Zai’s daughter. Yue Gu Zai was lenient by punishing Yue Ni to train in Africa. If Yue Ni found a way to make Nan Ma divorce Shu Tang Jue, it wouldn’t matter how much Shu Tang Jue loved Yue Ni, Shu Tang Jue would kill Yue Ni without hesitation.

At Yue Ni’s teacher’s office, Yue Gu Zai read the newspaper and Yue Ni looked out the window while her teacher snitched on her to Zhen Zhen.

‘Mr and Mrs Yue,’ the teacher said. ‘I don’t know why you two enrolled your daughter to learn at this school. She skipped all her classes, never hands in her assignments or show up for exams.’

‘I’m sorry my husband and I raised a bad daughter,’ Zhen Zhen said.

‘Mr Yue, how can you sit here and read the newspaper after hearing about your daughter’s behavior?’ the teacher asked. ‘Don’t you care about your daughter’s education?’

'Dad, my teacher implied you're an irresponsible father,' Yue Ni said.

Yue Gu Zai was pretty like Ling Jia. He could curse and discipline Yue Ni at home, but he wouldn't allow anyone to insult his precious daughter. If Zhen Zhen wasn't in the office with them, he would have called someone to blow up the school at night.

'My husband is a busy businessman,' Zhen Zhen said. 'He doesn't have time to oversee our daughter's education.'

Yue Gu Zai acted like he couldn't see Zhen Zhen blinking at him to behave.

'Being busy is not a valid reason,' the teacher said. 'Young people should be disciplined while they're young. Look at your daughter's dyed hair, and the piercings on each of her ear. Who knows how many tattoos your daughter is hiding from you...'

Yue Ni's arm accidentally knocked over the pot plant off the teacher's desk.

'My Shenzhen Nongke orchid!' the teacher said.

The teacher grieved for his precious orchid.

'I'm sorry,' Zhen Zhen said. 'My husband and I will compensate for your orchid.'

'How can you compensate how long it took me to nurture my precious orchid?' the teacher asked. 'I don't know why the school let a trouble maker like your daughter enrol here.'

'It's only an orchid,' Zhen Zhen said. 'Gu Zai, call our gardener to bring one of our orchids here.'

Yue Gu Zai called the Yue Mansion's gardener.

'Bring ten pots of Shenzhen Nongke orchids to young mistress' school,' Yue Gu Zai said and hung up.

Ten? The teacher couldn't believe he would receive ten orchids to replace his one orchid. Ten of his orchids were worth two million dollars.

'What's precious about one orchid?' Yue Ni asked. 'In my parents' garden there are hundreds of these orchids.'

'Xiao Ni,' Zhen Zhen warned.

The principal ran into the teacher's office.

'Mr and Mrs Yue, I'm sorry,' the principal said. 'I didn't know the teacher called you two here behind my back. I know how busy you two are. I'm sorry.'

'Principal, my husband and I are the ones who should say sorry for raising a bad daughter,' Zhen Zhen said.

'No, no,' the principal said. 'Xiao Ni is an exemplary student. All the teachers and students love her. Mr and Mrs Yue, you can leave first.'

'Then my wife and I will leave first,' Yue Gu Zai said.

Yue Gu Zai held Zhen Zhen's hand and led her to the car.

Yue Ni smiled, waved bye to the unlucky teacher who snatched on her and she followed her parents to the car.

'Do you want this school to close down?' the principal asked the teacher. 'Do you know who pays your salary? Mr Yue owns this school.'

'It doesn't matter if Mr Yue is Yue Ni's father,' the teacher said. 'It's still wrong for Yue Ni to skip classes.'

The principal shook his head helplessly, and left the teacher's office.

Minutes later, the Yue Mansion's gardener arrived with a tray of ten pots of Shenzhen Nongke Orchid.

'Mrs Yue asked me to give you her formula to grow these orchids in your garden,' the gardener said.

The teacher sat in his office and stared at two million dollars' worth of orchids.

End of Chapter Eighty-Two

Related



SURPRISE

Chapter Eighty-Three

Surprise.

For three days Yang Han An followed Zhen Wu around the campus. Zhen Wu thought she was annoying like Xiao Jiang.

'Stop following me,' Zhen Wu said.

'This is the first time you spoke to me in three days,' Yang Han An said.

'You're wasting your time,' Zhen Wu said.

'I don't mind,' Yang Han An said.

'I mind,' Zhen Wu said. 'You're being intrusive. I don't like you. Stop following me around.'

Yang Han An had prepared her heart for rejection.

'I don't think I'm wasting my time if I got you to speak to me,' Yang Han An said. 'I'm not intruding on your life by loving you.'

'You're intruding on my life if you make Lucy unhappy,' Zhen Wu said.

'Did you break my heart to make her happy?' Yang Han An asked.

'Yes,' Zhen Wu said. 'I only care about Lucy's heart. Your heart has nothing to do with me. Stay away from me.'

Zhen Wu would ask Yue Ni to deal with Yang Han An if Yang Han An didn't listen to his warning.

'If you go, I'll jump off this floor,' Yang Han An said.

'Your choice,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu walked away from Yang Han An. Her heart felt cold. She stepped over the edge, but someone pulled her back.

'Who are you?' Yang Han An asked.

Yang Han An didn't know who the man was, but he didn't look like a student from the college.

The man answered a phone call and he gave Yang Han An the phone to talk to Yue Ni.

'Miss Yang, you're not scared of jumping off a building but you're scared of a living person,' Yue Ni said. 'Do you think my big brother will feel guilty you killed yourself because of him? Don't be naive. I'm not merciful like big brother. Big brother can shoot a person dead with one bullet. I prefer to make a person lose hope before I kill them. Big brother loved big sister Lucy for years, he wouldn't let anyone break up him and big sister Lucy. Even if you died today, tomorrow big brother would feed your dead body to sharks because you made big sister

Lucy unhappy.'

'You're lying,' Yang Han An said. 'Why should I believe you?'

Yang Han An hung up the phone and she stepped on the phone.

Lucy watched Yang Han An run away from her bedroom window. Lucy had loved Zhen Wu since she was a little girl. It took years for Lucy and Zhen Wu to be together. Lucy wouldn't let Yang Han An disrupt their relationship. Lucy made a deal with Yue Ni, Yue Ni would make Yang Han An lose hope and she would give her little brother Hua Ti Tong to Yue Ni.

Zhen Wu walked into Lucy's bedroom, and hugged her.

'Zhen Wu, you're here,' Lucy said.

'Let's go eat dinner,' Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu knew Lucy was the only woman he would love.

The next several days Wu Min Mei noticed Yang Han An was heartbroken after Zhen Wu's rejection.

Yang Han An didn't think she did anything wrong. All she did was love Zhen Wu who didn't love her.

Yang Han An went to visit Tan Xu Er, and she saw cops next door to her parent's home.

'Mum, what happened?' Yang Han An asked.

'I heard the neighbours were shot dead,' Tan Xu Er said. 'The baby in the family was only one month old. The cops don't know who killed them.'

Yang Han An remembered Yue Ni's warning, and her back turned cold.

'Xiao An, you received a letter,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I left it on the coffee table in the living room.'

Yang Han An walked to the living room. She opened the letter, stumbled back and broke a vase.

Tan Xu Er ran to the living room from the kitchen.

'Xiao An, what happened?' Tan Xu Er asked.

Yang Han An shook her head. Tan Xu Er grabbed the letter from Yang Han An's hands.

'Who wrote surprise on this letter?' Tan Xu Er asked. 'What does it mean?'

'I don't know,' Yang Han An said. 'Mum, I'm tired. I'm going to sleep.'

'Are you sick?' Tan Xu Er asked.

'No,' Yang Han An said. 'Just tired.'

'OK,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I'll wake you up for dinner.'

Yang Han An walked to her bedroom, and she received a phone call from Wu Min Mei.

'Xiao An, are you coming home tonight?' Wu Min Mei asked.

'No,' Tan Xu Er said. 'Xiao Mei, tomorrow let our tutors know I'm taking sick leave.'

'I will,' Wu Min Mei said. 'Get a good rest.'

Yang Han An hung up, and she received another call.

'Hello,' Yue Ni greeted.

'It's you!' Yang Han An said. 'Why did you kill them? Their baby is only one month old!'

'I didn't kill them,' Yue Ni said. 'You didn't believe me. It's your fault they're dead.'

'No!' Yang Han An said. 'I didn't kill anyone. I don't believe you.'

Yang Han An hung up the phone, and she cried on her bed.

End of Chapter Eighty-Three

Related



Chapter Eighty-Four

Take the fall.

Yue Ni defeated twenty men. Then she wiped her hands.

'Young mistress,' Tou Gian called.

'What happened?' Yue Ni asked.

Tou Gian was scared to say, because Yue Ni was in a bad mood since Hua Xi Tong's illness worsened.

'They're all dead,' Tou Gian said.

Yue Ni threw the knife into the wall. Even after a fight, she was still angry.

'Do you think I killed them too?' Yue Ni asked.

'Young mistress, it's not my place to question you,' Tou Gian said.

Yue Ni walked back into the training room.

'If you men can't defeat, I'll send everyone on a remote mission for a month,' Yue Ni said.

The men were scared of the fifteen-year-old Yue Ni. They didn't doubt she was Yue Gu Zai's daughter.

Shu Tang Li called Tou Gian's phone.

'Hello young master Shu,' Tou Gian greeted.

'Where's Xiao Ni?' Shu Tang Li asked.

'Young mistress is in the training room,' Tou Gian said.

Tou Gian passed the phone to Yue Ni.

'Little boy Shu Tang Li, I don't need you to get involved in my business,' Yue Ni said.

'Then why did you send the letter to Yang Han An?' Shu Tang Li asked.

'Since you killed them all, it was a good opportunity to take advantage of the situation,' Yue Ni said.

'Come over to eat dinner tonight,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I'm cooking. I'll send a driver to come pick you up.'

Although Yue Ni was in a bad mood, she knew Shu Tang Li was worried about her.

'I want to eat steamed fish, braised ribs, crumbed prawns, cheese and Dawson's gelato,' Yue Ni said.

Shu Tang Li was relieved Yue Ni still had an appetite.

'I'll have everything prepared for you,' Shu Tang Li said. 'I'll see you tonight. Bye.'

'Bye,' Yue Ni said.

Yue Ni remembered on her first mission, she was injured. Hua Xi Tong's mum Hua Xiang Xiang saved her. At that time Hua Xiang Xiang was married to Wang Jia Zai and pregnant with Wang Jia Zai's baby. Hua Xiang Xiang didn't know Yue Ni's identity before the alleged car accident. It wasn't a car accident. Wang Jia Zai's close friend Tian Geng Nian had sent someone to kill Wang Jia Zai's family so Tian Geng Nian could steal Wang Jia Zai's company.

Yue Ni was angry Ni Sheng's members took a long time to find news about Hua Xiang Xiang for her to thank Hua Xiang Xiang. If Yue Ni found Hua Xiang Xiang sooner then she would have killed Tian Geng Nian and saved Wang Jia Zai's family.

Yue Ni knew when Shu Tang Li investigated Hua Xi Tong's family background, Shu Tang Li found out about Tian Geng Nian and he sent someone to kill Tian Geng Nian's family. It was a coincidence Tian Geng Nian's family lived next door

to Yang Han An.

After the night Tian Geng Nian's family was killed, Yang Han An avoided Zhen Wu. At night Yang Han An heard a baby's cry. In the mornings Yang Han An went to see a counsellor.

Yang Han An returned to her parents' home after a counselling session. She was scared to see Zhen Wu visited her parents' home.

'What are you doing here?' Yang Han An asked.

Zhen Wu politely nodded his head at Tan Xu Er.

'Mrs Yang, I hope you'll keep your promise,' Zhen Wu said.

'What do you mean?' Yang Han An asked Zhen Wu.

Yang Han An looked at Tan Xu Er's face that looked like Zhen Wu said something to Tan Xu Er before to make Tan Xu Er cry.

'What did you say to my mum?' Yang Han An asked. 'I'm the one who loved you. It has nothing to do with my mum. I don't love you anymore. Leave my family out of this. Why did you and your family threaten my family?'

Yang Han An was wrong to love someone from a rich and powerful family. Zhen Wu and Yue Ni were cruel siblings.

'Xiao An, don't say anything,' Tan Xu Er said. 'This has nothing to do with you. It's all my fault.'

'Mum, it's my fault,' Yang Han An said. 'I should have listened to you. I'll make him and his family to leave you alone.'

'Xiao An, let's go back to the U.S.,' Tan Xu Er said.

Tan Xu Er held onto Yang Han An's hand to stop her from running after Zhen Wu.

'Why?' Yang Han An asked.

Yang Hua transferred companies because Tan Xu Er wanted to return to her city. Yang Han An didn't understand why Tan Xu Er suddenly wanted their family to go back to the U.S.

'Xiao An, don't ask,' Tan Xu Er said. 'This isn't a place we should stay.'

Tan Xu Er was wrong. She thought after many years, she could return to the city she grew up in.

‘No,’ Yang Han An said. ‘I’m staying here.’

Yang Han An ran to the front door, and she held onto Zhen Wu’s arm.

‘Did you threaten my mum to leave?’ Yang Han An asked. ‘I don’t love you. You can marry whoever you want. I won’t bother you. Why are you making my family leave? Why can’t I stay here?’

‘I’m sorry,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I can’t let a woman who hurt my mum deeply to stay here.’

Zhen Wu loved Zhen Zhen. Zhen Zhen didn’t mind, but he disagreed. He didn’t want anyone to make his mum remember painful memories. Tan Xu Er shouldn’t have returned if she left many years ago.

‘Your mum?’ Yang Han An asked. ‘What does your mum has to do with this?’

‘Mrs Yang, I’m sorry,’ Zhen Wu said.

Zhen Wu pulled his arm out of Yang Han An’s hand and he walked out the door.

Yang Han An turned around, Tan Xu Er was crying.

‘Mum, what is going on?’ Yang Han An asked.

Tan Xu Er confessed everything she did to separate Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen when Yue Gu Zai lost him memories.

‘Mum we didn’t do anything wrong,’ Yang Han An said. ‘What’s so wrong about you loving Yue Gu Zai? You saved Yue Gu Zai’s life, why do you have to leave? Why aren’t they the ones who have to leave? The Yue family are unreasonable people.’

‘Xiao An, they have ways to make me leave once so they can make me leave a second time,’ Tan Xu Er said. ‘Xiao An, I’m sorry. It’s all my fault. I shouldn’t have been naive to think I can come back here after many years like nothing happened.’

‘Mum, what are you saying?’ Yang Han An asked. ‘We don’t have to leave.

Zhen Wu's little sister killed our neighbors. We'll report her to the police.'

Tan Xu Er covered Yang Han An's mouth.

'Xiao An, don't say nonsense,' Tan Xu Er said.

Yang Han An pulled Tan Xu Er's hand away from her mouth.

'Mum, I'm not lying,' Yang Han An said. 'That night, Zhen Wu's little sister sent me the letter. We can give it to the police as evidence.'

'Xiao An, it's useless,' Tan Xu Er said. 'We can't win against them. In two days we'll fly back to the U.S.'

'What about dad?' Yang Han An asked. 'Dad transferred companies here for you. What are you going to say to dad...'

Yang Hua arrived home and he slammed the door shut.

'Yang Hua, you're home,' Tan Xu Er said. 'I haven't cooked dinner. I'll go cook dinner now.'

If Yang Hua didn't come home early then he wouldn't have heard Tan Xu Er's confession. He loved Tan Xu Er for many years, but Tan Xu Er loved another man. At work he received an anonymous phone call from a man who told him about Tan Xu Er's past. He didn't believe the man until he heard Tan Xu Er's confession. He doubted Yang Han An was his daughter. He wasted many years loving Tan Xu Er and Yang Han An.

Yang Hua turned around and left. Tan Xu Er sat on the floor.

'Mum...' Yang Han An called.

Yang Han An had never seen Yang Hua looked at her and Tan Xu Er like he wanted to kill them. Yang Han An hated Zhen Wu, she hated Yang Hua and she hated everyone who hurt her and Tan Xu Er.

Yang Han An called the police and she reported Yue Ni for killing Tian Geng Nian's family.

At the Shu Mansion, Shu Tang Li received a phone call from a Tan Lang's gang member while he was making gelato using Dawson's recipe. He licked his fingers, and smiled. He didn't understand how Yue Ni could love eating sweets.

‘Did she actually called the police?’ Shu Tang Li asked. ‘Go find someone to take the fall.’

Shu Tang Li ended the call. He put the gelato in the freezer, and continued to make Yue Ni’s favorite dishes.

At the Yue Mansion, Yue Gu Zai asked Zhen Wu to talk privately in the study room.

‘Zhen Wu, did you go see Tan Xu Er?’ Yue Gu Zai asked.

‘Dad, she hurt mum deeply,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I don’t want mum to remember painful memories. Xiao Ni was a baby, but I know what mum went through when we thought you were dead.’

‘Zhen Wu, I’m angrier at myself for forgetting your mum that year,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘I didn’t expect so many people to be involved in this.’

‘Dad, you know Xiao Li wouldn’t let anyone hurt little sister,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I don’t want mum to know what Xiao Li and little sister did. Dad, do you disagree?’

‘No,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Zhen Wu, I heard you want to marry Lucy soon.’

‘Dad, I want to marry Lucy soon,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘I want to be with her and keep her safe.’

‘Zhen Wu, you and Lucy have my blessing,’ Yue Gu Zai said. ‘Go talk to your mum.’

‘Thank you dad,’ Zhen Wu said.

End of Chapter Eighty-Four

Related



Chapter Eighty-Five

Wedding.

On Zhen Wu and Lucy's secret wedding day, Zhen Wu smiled and greeted all the students.

Zhen Wu planned a private wedding for him and Lucy at a small city church. He wanted for them to look back on their wedding, and remember how happy they were with just the two of them.

Lam Ting carried books to the front gate. It was her habit to look out for Zhen Wu. She thought he looked like he would smile at her if she greeted him that day.

When Lam Ting noticed Yang Han An held a knife, she automatically ran to protect Zhen Wu. Yang Han An's knife stabbed her stomach. Zhen Wu caught her before she fell. She looked at her bleeding stomach, and didn't know why she took a knife stab for Zhen Wu. She heard Yang Han An scream and cry.

The next moment Lam Ting woke up, it was night and she heard Zhen Wu's

usual cold voice spoke warmly on the phone.

‘Lucy, there’s been an incident,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Do you want us to change it to a different day... you want to wait... OK, wait for me, I promise I’ll come.’

Zhen Wu said bye to Lucy, and he saw Lam Ting wake up. Bai Yu Tian had a gifted surgeon’s hands. Lam Ting looked pale, but she was in a stable condition.

‘You’re awake,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Yes... ah...’ Lam Ting said.

‘Don’t sit up,’ Zhen Wu said.

‘Yang Han An...’ Lam Ting said.

‘A student called the police,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘The police arrested her.’

‘I didn’t expect she would do this,’ Lam Ting said.

Lam Ting thought Zhen Wu looked too handsome sitting in front of her hospital bed.

‘Is it worth sacrificing yourself for your father?’ Zhen Wu asked.

Lam Ting thought she was a foolish person. She loved Zhen Wu, but he only believed she had an ulterior motive to save his life. Her pride stopped herself from telling him how heartbroken she was.

‘It’s worth it,’ Lam Ting said.

Zhen Wu looked at the prideful Lam Ting. He didn’t understand why chose to sit on a pedestal.

‘I promise no one can touch your father’s position,’ Zhen Wu said.

Lam Ting closed her eyes and she spoke softly.

‘Thank you,’ Lam Ting said.

Lam Ting opened her eyes, and saw Zhen Wu stood up.

‘Where are you going?’ Lam Ting asked. ‘I heard you speaking on the phone with Lucy before. Are you dressed like this to go on a date with her?’

‘Yes,’ Zhen Wu said. ‘Today is mine and Lucy’s wedding day. She’s been waiting for me all night. I’ll come visit you another day.’

Zhen Wu opened the door. He didn't regret leaving Lam Ting crying silently on the hospital bed. Love couldn't be forced. He loved Lucy, and he knew in Lucy's heart he was her husband since they met as children.

At three in the morning the priest pitied the bride. Lucy had stood waiting at the door all night.

'Miss, it's late,' the priest said. 'Your fiance isn't here. I can marry you and your fiance another day.'

'I'm sorry father,' Lucy said. 'I'm sorry I made you wait this long. Can we wait for another half an hour? I believe he'll come because he promised.'

'Alright,' the priest said.

'Thank you father,' Lucy said.

Lucy looked up at the full moon. She was too anxious to feel the cold wind. She didn't wait in vain, the man she loved was running toward her and his tie flew back behind his shoulder.

'I'll deal with you later for being late,' Lucy teased.

'I'll listen to everything my wife says,' Zhen Wu said.

Lucy heard Zhen Wu called her wife and she blushed. She held his hand and led him to the altar.

'Father, this is my fiance Zhen Wu,' Lucy said.

The priest opened his eyes from a nap. He stood and smiled at Lucy and Zhen Wu.

'You're finally here,' the priest said. 'You let your beautiful bride wait a long time. She's a good girl. You should treasure her.'

'Yes father,' Zhen Wu said.

'Let's start,' the priest said. 'Do you two promise to be true to each other in good times and in bad, in sickness and in health?'

'Father, can you speed up the ceremony?' Zhen Wu asked.

'Young man, you need to learn to be patient,' the father chided. 'Do you two promise to love and honor each other all the days of your lives together?'

'I do,' Lucy said.

'I do,' Zhen Wu said.

'Lucy Brenda and Zhen Wu, exchange rings with each other,' the priest said.

Zhen Wu took out the ring he bought for Lucy from his jacket pocket and they exchanged rings.

'By the power vested in me,' the priest said. 'I now pronounce you husband and wife.'

'Father, I hope you can understand how happy I am to marry my wife,' Zhen Wu said. 'Can I kiss my wife yet?'

'You may now kiss your bride,' the priest said.

The priest thought young couples these days were always in a rush.

The moonlight shone through the stained glass windows. The priest smiled at the happy newlyweds who looked like they would be together forever.

In that moment at the hospital, Lam Ting was a smart insomniac. She laid in her bed, and knew it was best to let go of unrequited love.

In the city church, Zhen Wu vowed not to let go of Lucy. He kissed her soft lips. She was the reason why he wanted to stay in the world, and why he understood love and happiness.

Lucy had waited years to be married to Zhen Wu. Finally he held her in his arms as her husband. She surrendered herself to him, and kissed him with love in her heart.

Zhen Wu held Lucy's hands and smiled at her. She knew he would always be her man.

Every morning, everyone continued on with their lives. Yue Di Yi ran away from home like usual. Yue Ni continued to train like a demoness. Shu Tang Li slowly became accustomed to his life as the leader of Tan Lang. Yue Gu Zai and Zhen Zhen's love for each other still tasted sweet. Shu Tang Jue and Nan Ma still bantered affectionately. No matter how many days past, everyone aspired to make beautiful memories.

End of Chapter Eighty-Five

Related

Side Stories 1 2 3 END



Side Stories One to Three

One

Nan Ma got out of the car. A beautiful woman with long hair against white clothes was lying on the road. The woman looked like a fallen angel.

'Miss, I'm sorry I hit you with my car,' Nan Ma said. 'If you promise not to haunt me, I'll burn incense sticks for you every day for three years.'

Shu Tang Jue laughed.

'Miss, which one of your eyes see me as a woman?' Shu Tang Jue teased.

Nan Ma thought she heard a spirit's voice. She looked up at the sky and prayed for forgiveness.

'Miss, I hope you'll rest in peace,' Nan Ma said.

When Shu Tang Jue opened his eyes and moved his body after lying still for a half a day, Nan Ma fainted on the road.

Two

Tan Tu Hang saw a beautiful man cooking in Nan Ma's kitchen.

'Xiao Ma, who is the person in your kitchen?' Tan Tu Hang asked.

'She's the new housekeeper I hired,' Nan Ma said.

'He's a woman?' Tan Tu Hang asked. 'How can a woman have an Adam's apple? Xiao Ma, who is he?'

Nan Ma looked at Shu Tang Jue and she smiled.

'He's my little rabbit,' Nan Ma said.

Shu Tang Jue thought Nan Ma didn't need to be that honest.

Three

Since the day Nan Man's neighbors found out Nan Ma was supporting the little rabbit Shu Tang Jue, her little rabbit drove her to work and followed her everywhere. Nan Ma's neighbors were envious Nan Ma had such a beautiful little rabbit. They wished they could carry Shu Tang Jue home to be their son-in-law.

'Xiao Ma, you're a blessed woman,' Mrs Wang said. 'If Xiao Jue's my son-in-law then I'll die happy.'

'Aunty Wang, you can take my little rabbit home to use if you like him,' Nan Ma said.

Mrs Wang thought Nan Ma and Shu Tang Jue were like newlyweds having a lover's tiff. She smiled, and went home without a son-in-law.

In the middle of the night, Nan Ma's body was finally free from the little rabbit's body pressure.

'Use him if you like?' Shu Tang Jue asked. 'Xiao Ma, if you're not satisfied with me then I'll need to love you more every day.'

Nan Ma looked out the window at the dark sky, and her numb lips mumbled she was wrong, her little rabbit wasn't for hire.

End of Side Stories One to Three

The End of Beautiful Wife and Genius Son

Related